







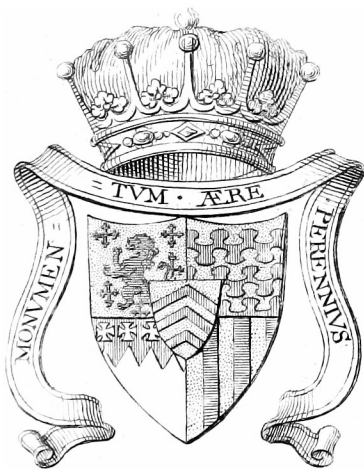




A  
Genealogical History  
OF THE  
HOUSE of YVERY;

In its Different BRANCHES of  
YVERY, LUVEL, PERCEVAL,  
and GOURNAY.

V O L. II.



*Hinc enim orti stirpe antiquissimâ: hic sacra, hic genus,  
hic majorum multa Vestigia.*

CICERO de Legibus, 2. 1. 2.

L O N D O N :

Printed by H. WOODFALL, jun. M.DCC.XLII.



---

---

T O T H E

R E A D E R.

**T**HE Reader having seen in the former Volume a Deduction of the first Branches of the House of *Yvery*, traced with great Exactitude, Industry, and Application, through the Mazes of a vast Antiquity, cleared with the greatest Certainty, from out of an immense Mass of Public Records, under the Disadvantages of covered Names, Accidents of Time, and Variety of Establishments in different Parts of *Europe*; is now brought to view in this Volume the History of the only remaining Branch of this great and extensive Family.—

But before he enters into this Descent, to give a clear Idea of that Chain, which would require either a more regular Examination of the whole Work, or a more close Attention to the Method observed in it, than the Generality of Men afford to Histories of a private Nature, and in which they may happen not to be themselves concerned, it will be proper to refer in such a



## To the *R E A D E R*.

manner to the precedent Parts, that he may readily trace the Descent of the present Line, without confounding this Branch with any collateral or different Family of the general Stock.

It must be observed, therefore, that the Descent of the present Earl of *Egmont* is to be taken up in the first Chapter of the Second Book of this Work fol. 169 of the First Volume, beginning with *Robert* Lord of *Breberval* and *Yvery*, a younger Son, as it is strongly presumed, of *Eudes*, Sovereign Count of *Brittany* in *France*, the Founder of all the different Branches of this Family. — From thence the common Account proceeds to the End of the Fourth Chapter of the said Second Book, as far as folio 203. of the First Volume, which ends with *Richard de Perceval*. — After this, the Reader is desired to turn to the First Chapter of the Fifth Book, fol. 305, where the Line of the said *Richard de Perceval* is taken up again. — From thence to the End of the Sixteenth Chapter of the same Book, fol. 397. the Earl's Descent is continued to *Ralph Perceval*, (the youngest Son of Sir *Richard Perceval*, the third of that Name) immediate Founder of this Line, whose Descent takes up the greatest Part of this Second Volume, being followed, without Interruption, from the said *Ralph*, (who lived in the Reign of *Henry* the Sixth) to the present Time.

This contains a Space of about three hundred Years, and being of later Date, and consequently capable of more copious Information, abounds in Historical Facts, which will greatly tend not only to the Amusement, but the Information of the Reader, with regard to the public Affairs  
both

## To the READER.

both of *Ireland* and *England*, especially within the two last Centuries.

The Seventh Book, which is at the End of this Volume, relates to the Line of *Gournay*, which being descended from a younger Son of the House of *Yvery*, is marshalled in its Place. It is curious to see how the Traces of a common Parentage are lost, and how, after a Course of several Centuries, the same Families center, by Alliances, in themselves again. This was the Case of this House,—the Rights and Blood of the Line of *Gournay* being now transferred to the Line of the Earl of *Egmont*, by the Marriage of the Heiress of *Gournay* to *Delamore*, or *Bythemore*, and by the Marriage of the Heiress of *Bythemore* to *David Perceval*, the Earl's immediate Ancestor.

Mr. *Anderfon*, who chiefly composed the first Volume, and had loosely thrown together this latter Volume also, within a few Pages, dying before it was well digested, it was revised by Mr. *William Whiston*, (Son to the Reverend Dr. *Whiston*) who being one of the principal Clerks of the Records in the Exchequer, and Chapter-House of *Westminster*, and a very diligent and knowing Officer, made no inconsiderable Additions to it; but he likewise dying before it was entirely completed, the Work is not in Style so exact, nor perhaps so uniform in Language, as if it had wholly been the Work of a single Pen, or that the Press had been corrected by either of these industrious Gentlemen; but the same Plan was pursued, and with equal Fidelity: so that even as it now stands, it may probably be allowed, with Justice,

to

## *To the READER.*

to be the best Performance of this Kind that ever appeared in this Kingdom.

These two Volumes include the whole History of the House of *Yvery* to the present Time, but a third Volume will be shortly published, containing all the Records at length which are quoted in this Work, with many more, that may serve to illustrate the Descents here mentioned—This will be done for the Ease of the Curious, and to avoid all possibility of Cavil.—For though the References in the Body of the Work will sufficiently direct the Reader to the Records themselves, yet as Opportunities cannot offer for many to consult the Originals, the Copies at length will afford great Satisfaction, and may preserve these Authorities from the Accidents of Time, or Negligence of Office.

We have nothing to add, but that this extensive Descent has undergone the critical Examination of the whole College of Heralds, has passed the Seal of that Office, and is there completely entered in a Book called D. 14. by order of a Chapter, in the most solemn and authentic manner. — So that there is nothing wanting to this, which can possibly confirm the Truth of any Work of such a Nature.

A  
Genealogical History  
OF THE  
HOUSE of *YVERY*;  
In its Different BRANCHES of  
*YVERY, LUVEL, PERCEVAL,*  
*and GOURNAY.*

B O O K VI.

CONTAINING

The Descents of the Lords of *Tykenham, Rolleston, Sydenham, Moreland, Wely, Overwere, Nailsey, Batilborow, Burton, &c.* in *England*; Lords also of *Burton, Lisscarrol, Castlewarning, Oughterard, Kanturk, Temple-House, &c.* in *Ireland*: *Baronets, Barons Perceval, and Barons Perceval of Burton, Viscounts Perceval of Kanturk, and Earls of Eimont.*



*Regia Progenies, & ——— Sanguis ab alto.*

SILIUS ITALICUS.





TABLE to the Sixth Book, containing the Descent of the  
*Burton, Lisfcarrol, Kanturk, &c.*

Look Back to Book

RICHARD PERCEVAL, third of that Name, Lord of *Bodecombe, Wiston,*

<sup>1</sup> RALF PERCEVAL, second of that Name, furnamed *Ralf de Weston*, senior, Lord of *Bodecombe, Weston, &c.* from whom the *Percevals* of *Weston*, now extinct.

<sup>2</sup> RALF PERCEVAL, third in *Com. Somf.*

Alice, Daughter of <sup>\*\*</sup>*William*, and Sister and Heir of *John Cave*, Lord of *Sydenham, &c.* = THOMAS PERCEVAL, in *Com. Somf.*

Alice, Daughter of <sup>\*\*</sup>*Thomas*, Sister and Heir of *John Bithemore*, Lord of *Overwere, Nailjay, &c.* = DAVID PERCEVAL, Lord of *ob. 5 Decemb. 1534,*

CATHARINE, Daughter of ----- = THOMAS PERCEVAL, third Son.

JAMES PERCEVAL, eldest Son, *ob. 1548, born 30*

THOMAS PERCEVAL.

ELIZABETH PERCEVAL, Wife of *John Gilbert, Esq;*

<sup>3</sup> THOMAS PERCEVAL, third Son, *ob. f. p.*

Joan, Daughter of <sup>\*\*</sup>*Henry Younge*, second Brother to ----- *Younge*, of *Buckborn-Weston*, in *Com. Dorset*, first Wife.

RICHARD PERCEVAL, first and Secretary Remembrancer of the Court of Wards in *England*, *ob. 1620.*

N. N. <sup>\*\*</sup> Daughter and Heir of *Potts* of *Devon.*

<sup>1</sup> JAMES PERCEVAL, eldest Son, *ob. f. p.*

RICHARD, *ob. f. p.*

FRANCIS, *ob. f. p.*

ELIZABETH, Wife of *John Butler*, of *Lillesdon*, in *Com. Somf.* *f. p.*

MARY, Wife of ----- *Dorr*, *f. p.*

ALICE, *ob. f. p.*

<sup>5</sup> GEORGE PERCEVAL, third Son, from whom the Line of *Templeboufe*. Vide Book VI. Chap. 8.

<sup>4</sup> ARTHUR, *ob. f. p.*

<sup>2</sup> RICHARD, *ob. f. p.*

<sup>3</sup> WILLIAM, *ob. f. p.*

JUDITH, Wife of Col. *Daniel Randolph Clayton*, of *Mallo*, in *Ireland*.

CATHARINE, Wife of Sir *William Moore*, of *Rofs-Carbery*, in *Ireland*, Bart.

HELENA, Wife of Col. *Daniel Dering*, Son of Sir *Edward Dering*, Bart.

<sup>1</sup> Sir PHILIP PERCEVAL, Bart. second of that Name, eldest Son, *ob. f. p. Sept. 11, 1680.*

<sup>2</sup> ROBERT PERCEVAL, second Son, murdered 5 *Febr.* 1677, *ob. f. p.*

<sup>\*\*</sup> MARTHA USHER, Widow of Lord Ch. Justice *Donnellan*.

<sup>3</sup> PHILIP PERCEVAL, third Son, now living 1741.

MARY PERCEVAL, *ob. Inf. Decemb. 1686.*

CATHARINE PERCEVAL, *ob. Infans.*

<sup>1</sup> Sir EDWARD PERCEVAL, Bart. *ob. 1691 Infans* — *July 30, 1682.*

PHILIP PERCEVAL, only Son, *ob. Inf.*

CATHARINE, Wife of *Thomas Hanmer*, of the *Fenns*, Esq; now a Widow — now living 1741.

PHILIP, *ob. inf.*

GEORGE, *ob. inf.*

HELENA, now living, 1741.

MARY, *ob. inf.*

<sup>1</sup> JOHN-JAMES PERCEVAL, eleventh of that Name, born *January 29, 1737* — at Eight at Night, at *London*, now living 1741.

Lords of Tykenbam, Sydenbam, Overwere, Nailfay, Batilborow,  
c. now Earls of Egmont, &c.

ook the Fifth.

Wes-ton-in-Gordano, &c. = AGNEZ, Daughter of Sir Richard Artbur, Knight.

third of that Name, surnamed Ralf de Wes-ton, junior, Lord of Tykenbam, = N. N. Daughter of Richard Vincent, Lord of Rolleston.  
suff. — slain at the Battle of Bosworth-field 22 Aug. 1485.

PERCEVAL, Lord of Tykenbam and Rolleston. EDMUND PERCEVAL, eldest Son, ob. s. p.

of Tykenbam, Rolleston, &c.  
d. 25 Hen. VIII.

ALICE PERCEVAL,  
living.

DOROTHY PERCEVAL,  
living.

PERCEVAL, a Twin with  
of Batilborow, &c.  
suff. p. 29 March,  
Novemb. 1531.

GEORGE PERCEVAL, Heir to his  
Brother James, Lord of Tykenbam,  
Sydenbam, Overwere, Nailfay, Ba-  
tilborow, &c. ob. about 1600.

ELIZABETH, Daughter (and ac-  
cording to some, Coheir) of Ed-  
ward Bamfylde, of Polymore, in  
Com. Devon.

fourth of that Name, Lord of Tykenbam, Sydenbam,  
Bancr, and first Commissioner for Receiver General  
of England, and Register of the same Court in Ire-

ALICE, Daughter of John  
Sherman, of Ottery St. Ma-  
ry, in Com. Devon. second  
Wife.

BAMFYLD  
PERCEVAL,  
second Son, ob.  
s. p.

PERCEVAL, Wife of Ri-  
chard Fitzgerald, of  
Kedod, in Ireland,

NORRYS, Wife  
of - - - Mulys,  
of Halyngton, in  
Com. Devon.

WALTER  
PERCEVAL,  
eldest Son, ob.  
s. p. 1624.

Sir PHILIP PERCE-  
VAL, Knt. Register of  
the Court of Wards, ob.  
10 Nov. 1647.

CATHARINE, Daughter  
of Artbur, Son and Heir  
of Sir William Usher, Knt.  
ob. 2 Jan. 1681.

DORCAS, Wife of Jonas  
Wheeler, Son and Heir to  
the Bishop of Clonfert.

ANNE,  
ob. s. p.

CATHA-  
RINE,  
ob. s. p.

Sir JOHN PERCEVAL, se-  
venth of that Name, Baronet,  
Ld of Burton, Lifcarrol, Kan-  
turk, &c. ob. 1 Nov. 1665.

CATHARINE, only  
Daught. of Robert, and  
Sister of Sir Rob. South-  
well, of Kingsweston,  
in Com. Glouc. Knight.

PERCE-  
VAL, ob. s. p.

Sir JOHN PERCEVAL, eighth of  
that Name, Bart. Lord of Burton,  
Lifcarrol, and Kanturk, ob. s. p.  
29 April, 1686.

CATHARINE, Daughter of Sir Edward  
Dering, of Kent, Bart. and of Mary  
Harvey. — Her second Husband was Col.  
Butler, ob. illa 2 Feb. 1690-1.

PERCE-  
VAL, Born  
9 Nov.

JOHN, Lord Perceval, ninth of that Name, Baron  
Perceval, of Burton, Viscount Perceval, of Kan-  
turk, Earl of Egmont, &c. now living 1741, born  
12 July, 1683.

CATHARINE, eldest Daughter of  
Sir Philip Parker, of Arwarton, in  
Suffolk, Bart. now living 1741.

MARY,  
ob. inf.

JOHN, Lord Viscount Perceval, tenth  
of that Name, now living, 1741.  
Born 24 Feb. 1710-11, at  
London.

CATHARINE, second Daughter of James, late  
Earl of Salisbury, by Lady Anne Tufton, second  
Daughter and Coheir of Thomas Earl of Thanet,  
now living Off. 1741.

CECIL-PARKER PERCEVAL, born Offob. 19, 1739 — at half an Hour after Nine  
in the Morning, at London, now living 1741.





---

---

A

# Genealogical History

OF THE

## HOUSE of YVERY, &c.

---

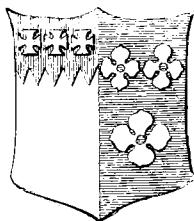
B O O K VI.

---

C H A P. I.

RALPH PERCEVAL, *the*  
*Third of that Name, surnamed* Ralph  
*de Weston the younger, Lord of Ty-*  
*kenham, &c. in Com. Somerset.*

PERCEVAL,



VINCENT.

**T**HERE are Consequences attendant upon Ancient and Noble Birth, which seem to have an Air of something preternatural. — It forces its way in every Age, and in every Country, in spite of Envy, Malice, and the Combination of the Majority of Men against it. — It

Vol. II. B advances

advances through all the Hazards of its own Grandeur, and the Vicissitude of all other sublunary things. — It resists almost all Misfortunes, and rises under the Weight of Evils, that should naturally seem to crush it. — Those Accidents which falling upon Families of no note, cast them down among the Dregs and Refuse of the People, and blend them together in one common and undistinguished Mass, become to these but Incidents to embellish and to adorn their Story; — but Subjects to be discoursed on with greater Attention, and Periods to pause and rest upon, in the Contemplation of their Dignity.

THEIR Possessions, their Dignities, and their Honours, must encrease by Age; they accumulate, they grow in Credit, they are advanced by Marriages, they are placed at the head of great Enterprizes; — nay, they often arrive, at length, by Revolutions, or Alliances, to Principalities, and Sovereign Power. — This is a natural, and would be a more frequent Consequence, — but that Fortune has, in particular, reserved one Method to prevent this their aspiring Growth, by putting a Period to the Male Issue of the leading Branches, at such Intervals, that the remaining Lines may be too far removed in their Descents, to claim the Dignities, or the Inheritance of those which fail.

THE Family of which we write, has suffered greatly by this Circumstance. — We need not recapitulate the great Houses of the same Lineage, each of which we have already traced to its respective Dissolution. — For it is fully apparent, that if the House of *Egmont*, now the only remaining Family of this Descent, were strengthened with all the Weight of Dignity and Fortune, to which it might be by Consanguinity entitled, it would equal the Lustre of any private House that has existed in these Kingdoms. — But the long Separation of each of these Branches from the other, having denied them this Advantage, the present must content itself with that Degree of Veneration, which still remains, upon a Family so anciently considerable, in so many different Lines, and with

with that degree of Consideration, which the Circumstances of the Fortune and the Rank they now enjoy, do still afford them, in a high Proportion.

WE have already shewn, that *Ralph*, the second of that Name, Lord of *Bodecombe, Weston-Gordein, &c.* dying in the Year 1477, the seventeenth of *Edward* the fourth, left three Sons, *Richard, John,* and *Ralph*; of which the eldest, *Richard*, (the fourth of that Name) succeeded his Father, but not surviving above four Years, left likewise three Sons, who dying all in their Minority, the Estate then fell to *John*, the second Son of the said *Ralph* the second, in whose Posterity it still continued, till the third of King *William* the Third, *A. D.* 1691, as we have already shewn at large, in the former Part of this Work.

NOTWITHSTANDING the numerous Progeny of *Edmund Perceval*, the Grandson of the said *John*, and the many Children which most of his Descendants left, there was so great a Mortality in that Line, that it does not appear that there is now remaining one single Person issuing from that House; so that the very Existence of this Family entirely depended upon *Ralph*, the younger Brother of *Ralph* the second, before-mentioned, and younger Son of *Richard*, the third of that Name, and of *Agnez* his Wife, from whom in a direct male Line of ten Descents, inclusive, proceeds the present Earl.

IN the thirty-fourth of King *Henry* the Sixth, *Anno Dom.* 1456\*, a Fine was levied at *Westminster*, between *Ralph* the elder, and his Wife *Joan*, and *Ralph* the younger, as they are stiled in the Record, bearing date upon the Morrow after the Purification of the blessed Virgin, before *John Pryot, Thomas Fultborp, Nicholas Aysbeton, Peter Ardern, Robert Danvers,* and *Walter Moille*, then Judges of the Realm, whereby *Ralph Perceval* the elder, and *Joan* his Wife, acknowledged *Tykenham*, with its Appurtenances, in the County of *Somerset*, to be the Right

---

\* Fin. Somers. 34 Hen. VI.

of *Ralph* the younger, as the Gift of *Ralph Perceval* the elder, and of his Wife *Joan*, who quitted Claim thereto, for themselves, and the Heirs of *Joan*, (whereby it appears to have been of her Inheritance) to the said *Ralph* the younger, and to his Heirs, with Warranty of the Premises, to him and his said Heirs for ever.—Whereupon, the said *Ralph* the younger, regranted the same Premises to the said *Ralph* the elder, and to *Joan* his Wife, before the same Court, to have and to hold, without Impeachment of Waste, of the said *Ralph Perceval* the younger, and his Heirs, during the natural Life of the said *Ralph* the elder, and the said *Joan*, upon the Acknowledgment of one Rose, to be annually paid at the Feast of the Nativity of St. *John Baptist*, in lieu of all Services, Custom and Exaction due to the said *Ralph* the younger, and his Heirs, for the said Estate, and upon Performance of all such Services as might be due from the said *Ralph* the younger, to the capital Lords of the Fee; on Condition, however, that after the Decease of the said *Ralph* the elder, and of the said *Joan*, the said Estate should revert to the said *Ralph* the younger, and his Heirs, to be held for ever, without Impediment from the Heirs of the said *Ralph* the elder, and of *Joan* his Wife, of the capital Lord of the Fee, by the Services which were legally due thereupon.

*TYKENHAM* is a little Village in the County of *Somerset*, not distant above a small Mile from *Weston-Gordwin*. It lies at the Bottom of a Hill, upon the Edge of a kind of Moor, by which it is separated from *Nailsay* (afterwards the Seat of this Line for some time, as we shall shew presently) in direct Measure, about as far as it is from the Place last named; though by the Road, which the Nature of that Soil obliges Travellers to take, it is at least five Miles. There were visible, not long since, the Remains of an old Seat, which was said to have been the Habitation of this *Ralph Perceval*. But they left it in the next Generation, the Situation being, in all probability, unhealthy,

healthy, and being tempted besides, by an Inheritance of much greater Consequence, devolved upon them.

*ROLLESTON* is another little Town, which came into this Line soon after, in the manner we shall shew hereafter, distant a few Miles from *Tykenham*, but a better Situation. Yet it does not appear that they ever resided there, though both these Places belonged to them for above two hundred Years, coming first into this House during the Time of this *Ralph*, about the Year 1456, and being sold in 1656, by his immediate Descendant Sir *John Perceval*, of *Burton*, Baronet, Grandfather to the present Earl of *Egmont*, with whom are still remaining the ancient Deeds and Writings of those Estates.

IT appears by an old Rent-Roll yet preserved, that these Lands produced five hundred and twenty Pounds *per Annum*, in the Reign of *Henry* the Eighth, which was no contemptible Inheritance in those Days, for a younger Son of any Family in *England*.

THIS *Ralph Perceval* assumed the *Crosses* in his Arms, *Gold\**, to distinguish himself from the elder Houses of his Name, as we have before observed; and so they continued to be borne by his Descendants, till, upon the Extinction of the House of *Weston-Gordein*, the present Earl of *Egmont* resumed the ancient Colour, as being now the Chief of this noble Family.

ABOUT this Time, the Historians mention one of this Name, who was singularly instrumental in that bloody Revolution, by which, soon after, the House of *York* became extinguished, through the wicked Practices of *Richard* Duke of *Gloucester*, who murdering his Nephews, the Sons of King *Edward* the Fourth, his Brother, advanced himself to the Throne. Some Accounts of this Family affirm this *Ralph Perceval* to have been that Person †; for in an ancient Pedigree of this Family, said to be made by Sir *William*

---

\* 3<sup>d</sup> D. 14. in Officio Armor.

† Genealog. de Perceval, per Le Neve, ex antiquâ Genealog. per Gul. Dethick, Milit.

*liam Detbick*, in the time of *Queen Elizabeth*, he is there said to have been a Retainer to *Henry Stafford*, the great Duke of *Buckingham*; which agreeing with the Time and Circumstances of a Story we shall presently relate, will not permit us to pass it over. But here we must observe, that though this Story should be true, so far that he was instrumental to the raising that Monster *Richard* to the Throne, it does not appear that he was in any degree privy to the wicked Design of the Murder of the young Princes; the contrary of which may be reasonably concluded, since even the Duke of *Buckingham* himself was utterly ignorant of that barbarous Intention. — We shall insert this Point of History, in the Words of the Historian.

“ \* Were it that the Duke of *Gloucester* had of old  
 “ fore practiced this Conclusion, or was before tyme  
 “ proved thereunto, or put in hope by the tender  
 “ Age of the young Princes his Nephews, as Op-  
 “ portunity and likely of Spede putteth a Man in  
 “ Courage of that that he never intended; certain it  
 “ is, that he being in the North Parties for the good  
 “ Governace of the Country, being advertised of his  
 “ Brother’s Death, contrived the Destruction of his  
 “ Nephews, with the Ufurpation of the Royal Dig-  
 “ nity and Crown; and forasmuch as he well belaste  
 “ and had hope to maintain a long continued Grudge  
 “ and Harte-burning between the Quene’s Kyndred  
 “ and the Kynge’s Bloud, either Parte envying others  
 “ Autorite, he now thought, as it was indeed, a fur-  
 “ therly beginnyng to the Pursute of his Entente,  
 “ and a sure Ground and Situation of hys unaturall  
 “ Buyldynge, that he might, under the Pretence of  
 “ revenggyng of olde Displeasures, abuse the Igno-  
 “ rance and Anger of the one Partie, to the De-  
 “ struction of the other, and then to wyn to his  
 “ Purpose as many as he coulde, and suche as  
 “ coulde not be wonne might be losse, or they  
 looked

---

\* Hall’s Chronicle.

“ looked therefore. But of one thyng he was certain,  
 “ that if his Entent were once perceived, he should  
 “ have made Peace betwene both Parties with his  
 “ owne Bloud. But all his Entent he kept secrete,  
 “ ’till he knew his Friendes, of the which *Henry*  
 “ [*Stafford*] the Duke of *Buckyngham* was the firste  
 “ that sente to him after hys Brother’s Death a trusty  
 “ Servante of his called *Perfvall*, to the Citie of  
 “ *Yorke*, where the Duke of *Gloucester* kepte the  
 “ Kyng his Brother’s Funerall. This *Perfvall*  
 “ came to *John Warde*, a secrete Chamberer to the  
 “ Duke of *Gloucester*, desiring that he, in clofe and  
 “ covert maner, mighte speake with the Duke his  
 “ Master; whereupon, in the Dede of the Nighte,  
 “ the Duke sente for *Perfvall*, (all other beeynge a-  
 “ voyded) which shewed unto the Duke of *Glouce-*  
 “ *ster*, that the Duke of *Buckyngham*, his Neeve,  
 “ woulde take suche Parte as he woulde, and woulde  
 “ further wayte upon him with a thousande godd fe-  
 “ lowes, yf nede were. The Duke sent backe the  
 “ Messanger with greate Thankes, and diverse privey  
 “ Instructions by Mouthe, which *Perfvall* dyd so  
 “ muche by his Travaille, that he came unto the  
 “ Duke of *Buckyngham* his Master, into the Marches  
 “ of *Wales*, and estfoones with new Instructions, met  
 “ with the Duke of *Gloucester* at *Notyngbam*, which  
 “ was come out of the North Countree, with many  
 “ Knightes and Gentlemen, of the number of five  
 “ hundred Horse, and more, in his Journey towarde  
 “ *London*, and after secrete Metyng and Communica-  
 “ cion had betwene him and the Duke of *Gloucester*,  
 “ he returned with such Spede, that he brought the  
 “ Duke of *Buckyngham* his Master to mete with the  
 “ Duke of *Glouster* not far from *Nottingham*, with  
 “ thre hundred Horses, and so they twoo came to  
 “ *Northampton*, where they first began their un-  
 “ happy Enterprice; and so the Duke of *Buckyngham*  
 “ contynued still wyth the Duke of *Glouster*, ’til he  
 “ was crowned King, as ye shall plainly perceive here-  
 “ after.”



IT is not at all improbable, from the Circumstances of the Fortune of which he was then possessed, though very considerable for that Time, that he should have entered himself under the Patronage of that great Duke, who being then by many degrees the greatest Subject of this Realm, had doubtless many Persons of the greatest Note dependant on him in the same way. For nothing was more common at this time than for Men, even of very eminent Rank and large Possessions, to adhere in this manner to some Person of more than ordinary Distinction, Pretensions, and Ability, by promoting whose Advancement, they ensured their own.

OF this Custom there are many Instances in ancient Times. In the eighteenth of *Henry the Sixth*, there is still extant \* the Record of an Indenture made at *Diveelyn*, (now *Dublyn*) on the eighteenth of *July* that Year, between *James Earl of Ormond*, and *Richard Duke of York*, wherein the said Earl, though then one of the greatest Subjects of these Realms, bound himself to the Duke for ever, both in War and in Peace, to be his Man, in all Things, and in all Places, saving only his Allegiance to the King and Queen. But for the Illustration of this Point, we will mention another Instance, which will fully prove sufficient to our Purpose, and of the very same Period of which we now speak, relating to a Subject no way so considerable as this great Duke. And this is that remarkable Indenture between *William Lord Hastings* †, another cotemporary Favourite of that bloody Tyrant King *Richard the Third*, and divers Noblemen, Knights, and Gentlemen of Note, who as it is said in the Record, by their own free Wills and meer Motions, covenanted Belafte, and faithfully promised to aid and assist the Right Honourable *William Lord Hastings*, and his Part to take against all Persons within this Realm of *England*, during their Lives, as well in Peace as Wars, (their Allegiance to the King's Majesty,

his

---

\* In Bibliothecâ Cottonianâ.

† Dugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Hastings.

his Heirs and Successors only reserved and excepted) with so many able Persons as every of them might well make, to be furnished and arrayed at the Coſts and Charges of the ſaid Lord; for which the ſaid Lord promiſed them to be their good and true Lord, in all things reaſonable, and them to aid and ſuccour in all their rightful Cauſes, ſo far forth as Law, Equity, and Conſcience required, *A° Edw. IV. 14.*

To this Indenture were Parties, *John Blount*, Lord *Mountjoye* \*, and *Henry Lord Grey*, of *Codnor*, *Sir William Truſſel*, *Sir Bryan Stapleton*, *Sir Walter Gryfith*, *Sir Robert Tailbois*, *Sir John Gryſelye*, *Sir Simon Mountford*, *Sir Thomas Statbam*, *Sir Nicholas Longford*, and *Sir Robert Harecourt*, together with eight and fifty Eſquires, and twenty Gentlemen of the beſt Eſtates and Families in *England*.

AND in the next place, as to the Appellation of Servant †, which at this Time may appear to imply a Character of Inſignificance and mean Station, it muſt be known, that the beſt and moſt conſiderable Families of *England* diſdained not to be deſcribed, nor even to deſcribe themſelves by that Title, for which it was ſufficient that they held any Office, or even Lands, under the greater Nobility of the elder Ages; of which innumerable Inſtances may be given.——But among others, we ſhall only offer one, of a Family then as conſiderable and as ancient, as moſt others in this Kingdom, of the Degree of a Commoner, which may be the more pertinent, as it relates likewiſe to the ſame Duke of *Buckingham*, of whom we here treat.——The Perſon was *Sir Ralph Shirley*, Knight, Anceſtor to the preſent Earl of *Ferrers*; and the Matter is evinced in his Petition to the ſaid Duke, in the Time of King *Edward* the Fourth, which is in theſe Words.

“ Befeacheth humbly *Ralfe Sberley*, Knight, your  
 “ *poore Servante*, that whilſe he by many Years paſt  
 “ hath

\* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Haſtings.

† Ex Libro MSS. Ric. St. Georgii, notat. C. 11. penes Com. Egmont.

“ hath peaceably been seized of the Manor of *Colston-Basset*, in the Countie of *Nottingham*, and of the Mannor of *Sbeldon*, in the Countie of *Warwick*, with their Appurtenances, in his Demeane, as in Fee-tail, till the Feast of *St. Michael* last past, he was of them put out and disseized, by the Right Worshipful Lord *Humphrey*, the Earle of *Stafford*, by the Procurement and Instance of *Thomas Chaworth*, Knighte, &c.”

AND in a like, or indeed a more particular Manner, *Cavendish* (of the noble Family of *Gernon*) Ancestor to the present Duke of *Devonshire*, is recorded to have borne the same Appellation, with respect to Cardinal *Wolsey*, his Patron.

BUT we have said enough to illustrate the Matter, which, to all Persons acquainted with those Ages, was sufficiently clear before. We shall only add, that whatever Hopes this *Ralph* might have had, from his Dependence on this Duke, he was utterly disappointed in them, the said Duke being very soon after, *viz.* in the second Year of the Reign of the Prince he had raised himself, 1483, beheaded at *Salisbury*, for having taken up Arms, with Endeavour to dethrone him, and to bring in the Earl of *Richmond*; who soon after, by a more successful Insurrection, obtained the Crown, which he wore by the Name of *Henry* the Seventh.

IN the third of *Edward* the Fourth, 1463, this *Ralph Perceval* was Witness to a Charter of *Leonard Tilly* \*, made at *Chedde*, in the County of *Somerset*, upon the Feast of *St. Laurence* the Martyr, whereby the said *Leonard* vested in the Lady *Isabella Chedde*, *John Gyffard*, and *John Specote*, certain Lands in *Pederdham* and *Wildemore*, in the Parish of *Canington*, and County of *Somerset*, which came to him by the Death of *John Steyning*, in right of *Richard*, Son of the said *John*, his Ward; which Lady *Isabella*, *John Gyffard*, and *John Specote*, were thereby appointed Trustees for the Application of the Profits of the said Wardship, to the Use and Disposal in Marriage of  
*Isabel*

---

\* Rot. Claus. A<sup>o</sup> 3 Edw. IV. m. 8. dorso.

of the House of YVERY, &c. II

*Isabel and Elizabeth*, Daughters of the said *Leonard Tilly*.

AND again \*, in the Year following, the same *Ralph Perceval*, was Witness likewise to another Charter of the same *Leonard Tilly*, dated also at *Cbeddre* aforesaid, upon the *Thursday* next ensuing after the Feast of *St. Laurence* the Martyr, whereby he vested a large Estate in *Canington, Orchard, Wemmedon, Thyneche, Salta, Stert, Pederdeham, Hunspylle, Otterhampton, Stoke-Londe, Gaunte, Padevaller, Smallcombe, Perbystake, Weycombe, Wybbehill, Samfordbritt, West-Copeland, Moreland, North-Pederton, and Le More*, together with the Advowson of the Church of *Cbedelynche*, in the same County of *Somerset*, in *Joan*, the Wife of the Lord *Lisse*, the Lady *Isabella Cbeddre, John Speccote*, and *William Lyttercote*, for his own use, during his Life, and after his Decease for a Jointure for his Wife *Joan*, and then for the finding of his Daughters *Isabel and Elizabeth*, at the Discretion of his Trustees, and by the Advice of the said *Joan* their Mother, and then to the Issue Male of his Body, with Reversion to *Thomas Blanchard*, his (half) Brother, and his lawful Issue, Remainder to *Catherine Cave*, (his Sister) and *William Cave*, the Son of the said *Catherine*, and their Issue; Remainder to *Avice Michell*, Sister of the said *William Cave*, and her Issue; Remainder to *Hugh Mallet*, and his Issue. And in case of Failure of the Issue of all these, with Remainder to his own right Heirs for ever. Furthermore, he settled by the said Deed, all his Estates in *Hybeaunton, Staplesford, and Langtree*, in the County of *Devon*, together with the Advowson of the Church of *Hybeaunton*, to which he had a Right to present every third Turn, upon his second Son, who should be living at the time of his Decease, for the Term of his Life, with Remainder to his own Male Heir of his Body lawfully begotten, and to his Heirs for ever; Remainder to the Heirs of his Body, and thence to

---

\* Rot. Claus. A<sup>o</sup> 4<sup>o</sup> Edw. IV. m. 13 verso.

the said *Thomas Blanchard*, *Catherine Cave*, &c. in the Manner and Form aforesaid. Which Records we have cited with more Particularity, as great part of the Estates therein mentioned fell, not long after, by virtue of this Settlement, through the Family of *Cave*, to that of which we here principally treat.

By the same Authority before-mentioned we learn \*, that this *Rolf Perceval* was slain at the Battle of *Bosworth-Field*, upon the twenty-second of *August*, 1485, in which the famous Quarrel of the two Houses of *York* and *Lancaster* was finally decided; but whether he was there concerned on the Side of *Richard* the Third, on which he first engaged, or whether he quitted that Party upon the Defection of the Duke of *Buckingham*, and from that Time adhered to the Interests of the Earl of *Richmond*, afterwards King of *England* by the Name of *Henry* the Seventh, we have no positive Grounds to assert. — Though it is most probable that he did the latter, because his Estate does not appear to have suffered Confiscation, or his Posterity to have been involved in any Misfortune from the Transactions of that Time.

WE are farther informed by the same Collection †, that he married the Daughter of that *Richard Vincent*, who, as we have before observed, made over to *Thomas Perceval*, in the thirty-fourth of *Henry* the Sixth, the Lands of *Rolleston*, which afterwards became a Part of the Patrimony of this Line.

WE have only to add, with relation to this Person, that he has been placed in some Pedigrees of this House, as Son to *Ralph*, the Second of that Name, instead of Brother, which he truly was. — And this Mistake is natural enough from two Circumstances, one, that he bore the same Name, which is not very common for two Brothers at the same Time to do. — The other, that the Lands settled upon him were of the Inheritance of his Brother's Wife, and therefore it

\* *Ex Genealog. Perceval*, per *Guil. Dethick*.

† *Ibid.*

it appeared more likely that that Lady, his Sister-in-law, was his Mother, and consequently, her Husband his Father.

BUT as to the first Objection, there is little in it; for we have already shewn that it was not very rare in ancient Time, to give the same Name in Baptism to two Children.—*Robert de Bruce*, Earl of *Carreſt*, and after King of *Scotland*, had an elder Brother of the same Name, who lived at the same Time\*: they were distinguished by the same Appellation of *Robert de Bruce* senior, and *Robert* junior. — Many Instances occur of the like nature, but among others, we have already mentioned two in the fourth Book of this Work, in treating upon that Line of this House of *Yvery*, which was known under the Title and Name of *Luwel of Tichmersb*; for not only *John* Lord *Luwel* of *Tichmersb*, the sixth of that Name, dying at the Age of twenty, was succeeded by *John* Lord *Luwel*, the seventh, his Brother, but the said *John* the seventh, had also two Grandsons living together of the Name of *William*, of which the eldest enjoyed the Honour of the Family, and the other seated himself in the County of *Oxford*, where he married one of the Daughters and Coheirs of *Thomas St. Clere*, of *Barton St. John*.

As to the second Objection, it is equally frivolous with the first, since it might well happen to be more convenient to make Provision by the means of this Estate, on account of Contiguity of Lands, or some such Circumstance, in which case it is not to be wondered, why this Settlement should be made upon this *Ralph*, though the Lands were not of the Inheritance of his Father.—And this is a very frequent Practice at this Day.—However this might be, it is impossible that this *Ralph Perceval* the younger, could have been the Son of the said *Ralph Perceval* the elder, because it appears, that at the Time of this Settlement, which was made in 1455, he was then of Age, or otherwise

---

\* Dugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Bruce.

therwise he could not have been a Party to this Fine, so as to have resettled the Lands again upon *Ralph* the elder, and his Wife, which it appears he did. — Now it is evident, by many Records which we have quoted in the former Part of this Work, that the eldest Son of *Ralph* the elder was but eight Years old in the same Year 1455, and that his second Son *John* (who succeeded to the Estate) was but seven. at the same Time. From all which it appears, that this *Ralph Perceval* the younger, if he had been the Son of *Ralph* the elder, must have been younger than these, and could have only been an Infant at the Time of the Settlement we have here mentioned, which the Course of the Laws of this Land, both at that Period and at this, forbid us to believe.—To which we may likewise add, that *Ralph Perceval* the younger had then living in the same Year 1455, a Son named *Thomas*, as we shall shew in the next Chapter; which proves him to have been at that Time a Man: and doubtless he had then been married a considerable time, for that *Thomas* of whom we have spoken, was his second Son.

WE have thought it necessary to say thus much, to refute an Error which has prevailed in the Pedigree of *Perceval*, by *Hawkins*, *Ulster* King of Arms in *Ireland*; because, in time, these Differences might otherwise bring in question the Truth of a Descent. — But having proved sufficiently the Impossibility of what is there advanced, we shall only add, what will indubitably settle this Matter, which is, that the original Visitation by *St. George* and *Leonard* \*, in 1603, positively affirms this *Ralph* the younger, to be Brother to *Ralph* the elder.

AND the Visitation of *Robert Coke*, in 1573, in the Earl of *Oxford's* Library, confirms it farther, where the two *Ralphs* are likewise placed as Brothers, by the Names of *Ralph de Weston*, junior, from the Lordship of *Weston-in-Gordano*, which was at that Time the usual Place of Residence of this Family.

CHIL-

---

\* Penes Ducem de Kingston.

CHILDREN of *RALPH PERCEVAL*,  
the fourth of that Name, Lord of *Tykenham*,  
and of ——— *Vincent*, his Wife.

I. \* *EDMUND PERCEVAL*, who is mentioned in an Entry of this Family in the Herald's-Office in *Ireland*; but he died without Issue.

II. † *THOMAS PERCEVAL*, who continued the Descent; and of whom we shall treat in the next Chapter.

---

\* In Officio Armor. Hiberniæ.

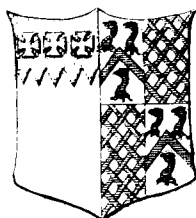
† In Visitat. Dorf. & Somf. by Leonard & St. George, penes Ducem de Kingston. apud Thoresby —Et in Visitat. Roberti Coke, penes Com. Oxon.



## C H A P. II.

THOMAS PERCEVAL, *Lord of Tykenham, Rolleston, Sydenham, &c.*

PERCEVAL,



CAVE.

**T**HOMAS PERCEVAL\*, second Son, (but by the Death of his elder Brother, *Edmund*, an Infant, without Issue) Heir of *Ralf Perceval*, furnamed *Ralph de Weston*, junior, being then very young, and his Father still living, obtained a Grant of Lands in *Rolleston*, in the County of *Somerset*, of *Richard Vincent*, who is said to have been his Mother's Father.

FOR by a Deed † dated at *Rolleston* aforesaid, upon the eighth Day of *April*, in the thirty-fourth Year of the Reign of King *Henry* the Sixth, 1456, the said *Richard*, (as he calls himself) the Son and Heir of *John Vincent*, gave, granted, and confirmed to *John Fitz-*

\* Ex Visitatione Dorf. & Somersf. penes Ducem de Kingston, apud Thoresby, per St George & Leonard; & in alia Visitatione, per Robertum Coke, penes Com. Oxon. etiam in Officio Armor. Hiberniæ.

† Ex Autograph. penes Comitem de Egmont.

*Fitzjames*, this *Thomas Perceval*, *Richard Kyngston*, and *Richard Peytevin*, all those Lands and Tenements which *John Vincent* his Father lately had, of the Gift and Feoffment of *John Warre*, in *Rolleston*, in the County of *Somerset*, together with *Robert Walter*, deceased, to have and to hold the aforesaid Lands and Tenements, to them and their Heirs for ever, performing all such Services as are due thereon to the capital Lord of the Fee: in witness whereof he affixed his Seal thereto, in presence of *Richard Andre*, *John Oldmyxon*, *John Bo - - -*, and many others.

AND upon the same Day\*, he appointed *John Peytevin* and *Richard Bekan*, his Attorneys, to enter into, and to take Seisin of the said Premises, and thence to deliver them over to the said *Thomas Perceval*, and the rest. ——— In which Record there is a Mistake in the Name of the Father of *Richard Vincent*, who is in one Part of the Deed called *John*, as he is in that first mentioned, and in another *Richard*.

ALL we have farther to add with respect to this Estate, which has been spoken of in the former Chapter, is, that not long after it became solely the Inheritance of this House of *Perceval*, whether by the Death of the Coparceners, or otherwise, we cannot say. — And in this House (which is still possessed of the Deeds relating to it) it remained till the Year 1656, when, by the Necessities of those confused Times, Sir *John Perceval*, Baronet, Grandfather to the present Earl of *Egmont*, was obliged to sell it, with much more of his paternal Fortune.

*THOMAS PERCEVAL* being thus Lord of *Tykenbam* and *Rolleston* †, greatly in the End added to the Patrimony of his Line, by his Marriage with *Alice*, the only Daughter of *William*, and Sister, and at length Heir of, *John Cave*, of *Sydenbam*, in the County of *Somerset*, Esquire.

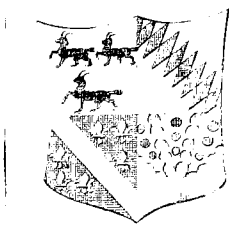
By

---

\* Ex Autograph. penes Comitem de Egmont.

† Ex Visitationibus prædictis.

By this Marriage, this House acquired the Rights of the several Families of *Sydenham, Kitsford, Pixton, Redmore, Tilly, and Cave*; as appears by the Table annexed to this Chapter.



IN the Time of King *John, Robert de Sydenham*, near *Bridgewater*, in the County of *Somerset* \*, dying, left a Son *John*, who is mentioned in certain authentic Evidences in the ninth of *Henry* the Third; which *John*, by the Daughter and Heir of *John de Kitsford*, near *Milworton*, in the said County, had two Sons, *William* and *John*, of which *William* was the eldest, and was also Lord of *Sydenham* and *Kiddesford*, in the twentieth of *Edward* the Third; which *William*, by the Daughter of *William de Gothayte*, left three Sons, *Roger, Simon* and *William*; of which, *Simon* marrying *Marsilla*, Daughter and Heir of *John Hillary*, of *Badyalton*, was Founder of the *Badyalton* Branch.——*Roger*, the eldest Son, was Lord of *Sydenham* and *Kitsford*, in the fifteenth of *Edward* the Third, and left two Sons, *Richard* his second, (who was a Judge, and Lord of *Combe*, now called *Combe-Sydenham*;) and *John* his eldest, who was Lord of *Sydenham*, and marrying *Mary*, Daughter and Heir of —— *Peekstone*, Lord of *Pixton*, near *Dulverton*, in Com. *Somf.* obtained that Lordship with her.——This *John de Sydenham* left two Sons, *John*, and *Hugh*, and a Daughter, who became the Wife of *John Carru*, and by him had Issue *Thomas Carru*, who is mentioned in his Grandfather's Will.——*Hugh de Sydenham*, the second Son, marrying *Jean*, the Daughter and Heir of *William Polleswell*, was Ancestor to the late Baronets of this Family, and to all the Branches of this House  
now

\* This Pedigree of Sydenham, which differs something from those in the Office of Arms, is extracted by Mr. Sydenham of the Temple, now the Male Heir of that Family, from his own Deeds and Evidence.



# Genealogy of Sydenham, Cave, Tilly, Kitsford, Peckstone, and Redmere

ROBERT DE SYDENHAM, Lord of <sup>\*\*\*</sup>Sydenham, near Bridgwater, in Com. Somf.

JOHN DE SYDENHAM, living 9 Hen. III.

THOMAS DE TILLY, 29 Edw. I. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> JOAN, Daughter of William Cav.

PETER TILLY, 20 Edw. III. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> N. N. PECKSTONE, Lord of <sup>\*\*\*</sup>Pixton, near Dulverton, in Com. Somf. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> ROGER DE SYDENHAM, eldest Son, Lord of Sydenham and Kitsford, 15 Edw. III.

WILLIAM TILLY, 36 Edw. III. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> THOMAS CAVE, 47 Edw. III. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> ALICE, Daughter of Wells, re-married to David Howell, 33 Hen. VI. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> N. N. REDMERE. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> MARY PECKSTONE, Daughter and Heir.

JOHN TILLY, temp. Hen. VI. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> ISOLDA, Daughter of Hugh de Marisco, or Mareis. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> THOMAS CAVE, Son of Thomas. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> JOHN, second Son. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> ALICE REDMERE, Daughter and Heir.

JOAN, Daughter of Boldbay, and Heir, Widow of Blanchard. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> WALTER TILLY, Lord of Moreland, Wely, &c. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> JOHN CAVE, second Son. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> RICHARD CAVE, Lord of Sydenham, ju. Ux. first Husband, 15 Rich. II. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> JOAN DE SYDENHAM, Heir and sole Heir, her husband was Robert.

KATHARINE TILLY, Daughter, and at length Heir. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> PHILIP CAVE, Lord of Sydenham, living 5 Hen. VI.

AVICIA CAVE, Wife of Michell. ANNE CAVE. WILLIAM CAVE, Lord of Sydenham, 36 Hen. VI.

THOMAS DE LA MORE, or By-the-More, Lord of Overwere, ob. f. p. 13 Septemb. 13 H. VIII. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> ELIZABETH, Daughter of <sup>\*\*\*</sup>John Marshall, of Teytborne, in Com. Somf. Widow of Thomas Bythemore, re-married to James Hadley, Esq; before 1533. <sup>\*\*\*</sup> JOHN CAVE, Lord of Sydenham, ob. f. p. between 21 H. VIII. and 22 H. VIII.

JOHN DE LA MORE, or Bythemore, Lord of Overwere, ob. f. p. 13 Sept. 31 H. VIII. 1539. ALICE DE LA MORE, or Bythemore, at length Heiress of her Family, ob. 25 Hen. VIII. A. D. 1534.

GEORGE PERCEVAL, Lord of Sydenham

RICHARD  
PHILIP  
JOHN  
JOHN

JOHN, now Esq; of Sydenham

re; from Heireffes of which proceeds the present Earl of *Egmont*.

N. N. de *Kitsford*, Lord of *Kitsford*,<sup>\*\*\*</sup> near *Dulverton*, in *Com. Somf.*

III. N. N. DE KITSFORD, Daughter and Heir.

Gotbayte. WILLIAM DE SYDENHAM. RICHARD.

ord of WILLIAM DE SYDENHAM, junior. SIMON DE SYDENHAM married *Marfilla*, Daughter and Heir of *John Hillary*, Lord of *Badyalton*, he was Founder of the *Badyalton* Branch.

PECK- JOHN DE SYDENHAM, eldest Son, Lord of *Sydenbam* and *Pixton*, ju. Uxor. RICHARD, Lord of *Combe*, and Judge of the Common Pleas.

D- JOHN DE SYDENHAM, Lord of *Sydenbam*, died in his Father's Life-time. N. N. DE SYDENHAM, Wife of *John Carru*. HUGH SYDENHAM, surnamed *de Sturt*, married the Daughter and Heir of *William Polleswell*, from whom descended the late Barons, and the present House of *Sydenbam*.

E SYDENHAM, Daughter Heir, her second Husband *Robert Bozun*. JOHN DE SYDENHAM, died without Issue. THOMAS CARRU.

Men. V. he died the first of *Aug. 11 Edw. IV.* RALPH BOZUN, 5 *H. V.* JOHN BOZUN, 5 *H. V.*

Years old at his Father's Death. ANNE - - - JOHN CAVE, alias *Broughton*, a natural Son,

Lord of *Sydenbam*, in the Years 1529, and 1533, the 25th. ALICE CAVE, Sister and sole Heir of *John*, married *Jones*, a second Husband. — She was a second time a Widow, 1533. THOMAS PERCEVAL, Lord of *Tykenbam* and *Rolleston*, Son of *Ralf* the Younger.

with sole DAVID PERCEVAL, Son and Heir, died 5th of *Decemb. 25 H. VIII.* ALICE PERCEVAL, living 1533. DOROTHY PERCEVAL, living 1533.

*Sydenbam, Moreland, Wely, &c.*

ARD.

LIP.

HN.

HN.

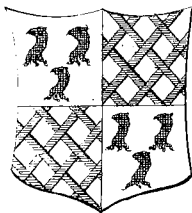
Earl of *Egmont*.



now subsisting in the Male Line.—But *John de Sydenham*, the eldest Brother of *Hugh*, married *Alice*, Daughter and Heir of *John Redmere*; and dying in his Father's Life-time, left a Son *John*, and a Daughter *Joan*; which *John* dying without Issue, *Joan* his Sister became Heirefs to the Estate †.

THIS *Joan* married two Husbands, *Richard Cave*, and *Robert Bozun*; but her Issue by the first inherited the Estate.—She had likewise Issue by her second Husband *Bozun*, viz. a Son named *Ralf*, and a Daughter *Joan*, upon whom, in the eighth of *Henry* the Sixth, by Fine levied in *Michaelmas* Term, she settled thirteen Messuages, a Toft, five hundred thirteen Acres of Land, sixteen of Meadow, three of Heath, and two hundred forty Heads of Garlick, in *Brumpton-Ralf*, *Otterhampton*, *East-Stoke*, *Cannington*, and *Stokeland-Gaunt*; limiting the said Estates, after her own Death, and that of her then Husband *Robert*, to her said Son and Daughter, *Ralf* and *Joan Bozun*, successively, in Tail-General; Remainder to *John Raule* for Life; Remainder to *Philip*, Son of *Richard Cave*, and the Heirs of his Body; Remainder to the right Heirs of the said *Joan*.

THE first (as it is said) of this Family of *Cave* who was seated in the County of *Somerset*, was this *Thomas Cave*\*, who was living the forty-seventh of *Edward* the Third, being a younger Son of the Family of *Cave*, in the County of *Northampton*. This *Thomas* ‡, by *Alice*, Daughter of



— *Wells*, (who afterwards became the Wife of *David Howell* ||) had two Sons, *Thomas* and *John*;

D 2

*Thomas*

† Fin. Somf. Mich. & Hill. 8 Hen. VI.

\* Ex Libro notat. 90 B. 10 (70.) — Visit. of Somerset, by R. Cooke, penes Comitum Oxon.

‡ Ibid.

|| Fin. Somf. Pasch. 22 Hen. VI.



*Thomas* †, the eldest, by *Ifold* †††; the Daughter of *Hugh de Marisco*, or *Marris*, had Issue also two Sons, *Richard* and *John* §§, who are likewise named in an Assize in *Com. Somf.* as Sons of *Thomas Cave*, in the fifteenth of *Richard* the Second.——*Richard*, the eldest, in right of his Wife *Joan*, the Daughter and Heir of *John Sydenham* before-mentioned, became Lord of *Sydenham*; to which *Richard* succeeded his Son *Philip*, who, by Marriage with the Heiress of the Family of *Tilly*, obtained at length the Manors of *Moreland* and *Wely*, in the County of *Somerset*, which Manors afterwards descended into the Family of *Perceval*, through this of *Cave*, as will appear hereafter.

THIS *Philip Cave* dying upon the first of *August*, in the eleventh of *Edward* the Fourth, 1471 \*, seized of the Manors of *Sydenham*, and other large Estates in *Wemedon*, *Bruggewalter*, *Baudripp*, *Northpederton*, *Moreland*, *Donewere*, *Northboure*, *Wolmerston*, and *Neiberhampne*; left a natural Son called *John Cave*, or *Broughton* †, Founder of a Family of that Name; but by his Wife (*Katherine*, Daughter, and at length Heir of *Walter Tilly*, Lord of *Moreland*, *Wely*, &c.) he left a Son *William* §, his Heir, then thirty-six Years old, and two Daughters, *Anne* and *Avicia*; of which the latter became the Wife of —— *Michell*, Esquire, in *Com. Somf.*

WHICH *William Cave*, being Lord of *Sydenham*, and divers other large Estates, in the said County of *Somerset* †, by *Anne* his Wife left a Son *John*, who was his Heir, (and married *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *John Marshall*, of *Ivythorne*, but had no Issue by her, as we shall shew presently) and also a Daughter *Alice*, who

† Ex Libro notat. 90. B. 10. (70.). —— Visit. Somerset, by R. Cooke, penes Comitum Oxon.

‡ Ibid.

†† Ibid.

\* Esch. post mort. Philippi Cass, sine Cave, 11 Edw. IV. in Turri Londini, n<sup>o</sup> 43.

† Ex Visitatione Dorf. & Somf. penes Com. de Oxford, ut supra.

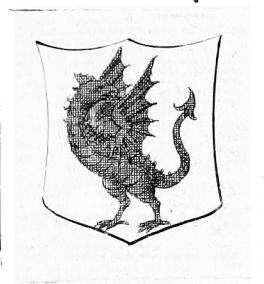
§ Ex Genealogia de Perceval, per Le Neve.

‡ Ibid.

who married *Thomas Perceval* †, of whom we here treat; and who brought at length the Rights of Blood, and the Lands of the Houses we have mentioned in this Chapter, to her Husband's Family.

BUT before we conclude our Discourse upon the Heireffes who thus were centered in this Branch of the House of *Perceval*, we must say something of the Family of *Tilly*, from which one of them proceeded, and which is of very great Antiquity, though the Descent cannot be linked, in every Line, with that positive Proof which we desire.

BUT it is certain, that this House held great Possessions, and is frequently mentioned in *Normandy* before the Conquest, and in the *Normanici Scriptores*, are shewn to have held several Knight's Fees in that Dutchy.— We find them afterwards in the Time of *Henry the First*, in *Yorkshire*, and other Counties, as well as in this of *Somerset*.



IN the twenty-ninth of *Edward the First*, *Thomas de Tilly*\* appears to be Lord of those Estates in *Affcote*, *Walton*, and *Grenton*, which his Descendants still enjoyed in the Reign of *Henry the Seventh* and Eighth.

UPON the Aid levied for making *Edward the Black Prince* a Knight, in the twentieth of *Edward the Third* †, *Peter Tilley*, and *Walter Capnoe*, were charged for Lands held by Knight-Service, in the County of *Somerset*, which their Ancestors held before them.

IN an Affise in the thirty-sixth of *Edward the Third* §, *William Tilly* impleaded *Joan*, the Widow of *Thomas de Gournay*, for Lands in *Ferenton*.

IN

† Esch. post mort. David Perceval, 26 Hen. VIII. unica pars in Capella Rotulor.

\* Trin. 29 Edw. I. rot. 83. de Banco, Somf.

† Lib. Rationab. Auxil. in Scaccar. endorsed Fanshaw, 20 Edw. III.

§ Kct. Affiz. Somf. 36 Edw. III.

IN the Book of Knights Fees made in the Reign of *Henry the Sixth* ||, *John Tilly* is there charged for the same Lands, in the Hundred of *Portbury*, held by Knight-Service, which *Peter Tilly* had been charged for formerly, in the twentieth of *Edward the Third*.

IN the seventeenth of *Henry the Sixth* †, *John de Lisle* granted to *William Doddesham*, his Pretensions to (the Superiority, as it seems, of) all those Lands in *Westchilton*, in the Parish of *Cannington*, which *John Boldbey* formerly held there, and which *William Clive*, Clerk, lately held for the Term of his Life, of the Inheritance of *Joan*, formerly the Wife of *Walter Tilly*.

AND in the twenty-first of *Henry the Sixth*, *Thomas Blanchard* \*, Son and Heir of *Joan*, formerly the Wife of *Walter Tilly*, remitted to the said *William Doddesham*, all his Right in the said Lands; from which two Records we judge, that the said *Joan Tilly* was the Daughter and Heir of the said *John Boldbey*.

THIS *Walter Tilly*, who died, as we see by these Records, before the seventeenth of *Henry the Sixth*, left a Son named *Leonard*, and two Daughters, *N. N.* the Wife of ——— *Mallet*, who had Issue *Hugh* and *Philippa Mallet*; and *Catherine Tilly*, who was the Wife of *Philip Cave*, of *Sydenham*, before-mentioned, from whom descends the present Earl of *Egmont*: which *Catherine Tilly*, after some Time, became the Heiress of this House. — But the Male Descendants of this *Walter Tilly* continued for some Generations:

FOR *Leonard Tilly*, Son of the said *Walter*, left by his Wife *Joan*, Daughter of ———, two Sons, *Thomas* and *John*, and two Daughters, *Isabell* and *Elizabeth*. — He was Lord of *Moreland*, *Wely*, and *Saltbay*, in *Com. Somf.* besides other very considerable Estates in the said County, and in that of *Devon*, part of which, together with his personal Estate, he vested in *Ralf Perceval*, of *Tykenham*, Esquire, *Thomas Bythemore*, and others, as Trustees, for the providing  
Por-

---

|| In Officio Ducat. Lancastr.

† Claus. 17 Hen. VI. Somf. pars unica.

\* Claus. 21 Hen. VI. pars unica.

of the House of YVERY, &c. 23

Portions for *Isabel* and *Elizabeth* his Daughters afore-said, which Deed † bears Date at *Chedder*, in *Com. Somf.* the third of *Edward* the Fourth, *A. D.* 1463, upon the Feast of *St. Laurence* the Martyr.

AGAIN, by another Deed §, made and dated at the same Place, upon that Day twelvemonths, in the fourth of the same Reign, he vested in the Lady *Joan de Lisse*, the Lady *Isabella Chedder*, and others, the Manors of *Wetbelle*, or *Wele*, *Saltbay*, and other Estates, in *Somf.* and *Devon*, in Trust for the Jointure of his Wife *Joan*, Remainder to the eldest Son of his Body for the Time being, and to the Heirs of the Body of the said Son, and after, to the Heirs of his own Body for ever; Remainder to *Thomas Blanchard*, his (half) Brother, and the Heirs of his Body.—Remainder to *Katherine Cave* (his Sister,) and *William Cave* her Son, and the Heirs of the Body of *William*; Remainder to *Avicia Michell*, Sister of the said *William Cave*, and the Heirs of her Body; Remainder to *Hugh Mallet*, (Son of another Sister of *Cave*) and his Heirs of his Body; Remainder to *Philippa Mallet*; Remainder to his own right Heirs for ever.

To this *Leonard* succeeded *Thomas Tilly*, in the Manors of *Wely* and *Moreland*, and the Advowson of the Church of *Chartent*, in *Com. Somersf.* *John Tilly* \*, another Son, obtaining the Manor of *Saltbay*. — Which *Thomas* died seised of those Manors, then held of the said *John*, as of his Manor of *Saltbay*, and also of divers other Lands, upon the twentieth of *November*, in the twenty-eighth of *Henry* the Eighth.

*WILLIAM TILLY*, eldest Son of the said *Thomas* †, being deceased before his Father *Thomas*, upon the seventh of *December*, the twenty-sixth of *Henry* the Eighth, left by his Wife *Joan*, a Son, *James Tilly*, then

† Rot. Clauf. 3 Edw. IV. m. 8. dorfo.

§ Rot. Clauf. 4 Edw. IV. m. 13. dorfo.

\* Book of Offices. C. of Wards, 29 Hen. VIII. fol. 579. dorfo Somersf.

† Ibid. Anno 27 Hen. VIII. fol. 374. dorfo.

then eighteen Years of Age, who was found the next Heir to his Grandfather *Thomas*, last mentioned.

BUT here the Male Line of this Family without doubt failed; for very soon after, the Manors of *Moreland*, and *Wely*, and other Lands of this Family, became the Estate of the House of *Perceval*; as will be seen in the ensuing Pages of this Work.

THIS *Thomas Perceval*, however, did not himself live to enjoy any considerable Part of this Inheritance, which being given by his Brother-in-law *John Cave*, upon his Death, to *Elizabeth (Marshall)* his Wife, to be enjoyed by her during her Life, who out-lived both him and his Son, descended to his Grandson *George Perceval*, as we shall come to shew presently. However, it is manifest, (his Arms and his Wife's carved in Stone still remaining, at the great Entrance of the Manor-House of *Sydenham*) that he obtained Possession of some Part thereof, and that he built the Mansion-House at that Place, which stands to this Day, and was one of the Seats of his Posterity for some Generations, till it was sold by *Richard Perceval*, Register of the Court of Wards in *Ireland*, upon his Transplantation into that Kingdom.

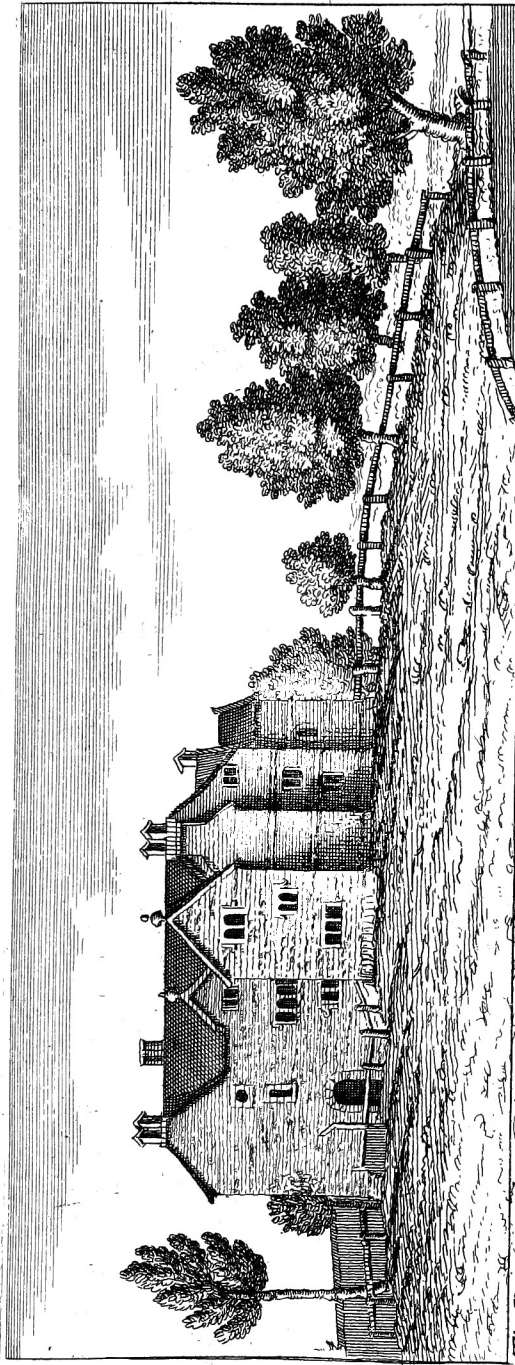
As to the Time of his Death, the Inquisition being lost, it is yet uncertain: but his Wife out-lived him many Years, being married afterwards to — *Jones*, of —, whom she also survived, being a Widow a second Time †, in the twenty-fifth of *Henry* the Eighth, *A. D.* 1534, as appears by a Deed of that Date, in which she was then concerned, and of which we shall speak hereafter.

CHIL-

---

\* Unica pars Claus. 25 Hen. VIII. in Capel. Rotulor.

† Esch. post mort. David Perceval, ut supra.



*The Manoir of Sydenham in Com. Som. the Ancient Seat of the Family of Sydenham in the time of King John, from whence they derived their Name. The Heirys of the Eldest Branch of this Houſe marrying Lawr, in 4<sup>th</sup> Reign of Henry 4<sup>th</sup> 1403, it continued with them till 4<sup>th</sup> Reign of Henry 8<sup>th</sup> 1520-The Heirys of Lawr then marrying to Thomas Percival, Son to Ralph, Brother to S<sup>r</sup> Raſſ Percival of Weſton-Gordain, this Manoir continued in his Deſcendants, till 1613 4<sup>th</sup> 10<sup>th</sup> of James 1<sup>st</sup> when it was ſold by Richard Percival Great-Grandſon of 4<sup>th</sup> (ſaid Thomas) Secretary of 4<sup>th</sup> Court of Wards in England, and Register of 4<sup>th</sup> ſame Court in Ireland.*



CHILDREN of *THOMAS PERCEVAL*,  
Lord of *Tykenham, Rolleston, &c.* and of *Alice*  
*Cave*, his Wife.

I. \* *DAVID PERCEVAL*, Son and Heir; of  
whom we shall treat in the next Chapter.

II. *ALICE*, a Daughter, living in 1533, upon  
whom, in case of Failure of her Brother's Issue †,  
the Estates were settled.

III. *DOROTHY PERCEVAL*, a Daughter,  
upon whom §, in case of Failure of her Brother,  
and his Issue, and her Sister *Alice*, and her Issue,  
the Estates before-mentioned were entailed.

---

\* Vifit. Dorf. & Somf. per Leonard. & St. George, penes Ducem  
de Kington.

† Efch. post mort. David Perceval, ut supra.

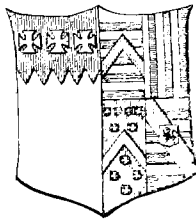
§ Efch. ut supra.



## C H A P. III.

DAVID PERCEVAL, *Lord of Tykenham, Rolleston, Sydenham, &c.*

PERCEVAL,

DE LA MORE,  
or,  
BYTHEMORE\*.

**D**AVID PERCEVAL†, the only Son and Heir of *Thomas* and of *Alice*, Daughter and Heiress of *William Cave*, Lord of *Sydenham*, his Wife, obtained *Sydenham*, and other large Estate, in right of his Mother, and was also Lord of *Tykenham*, *Rolleston*, &c. by Inheritance from his Father.

HE married *Alice*, the Daughter of *Thomas Bythemore*, of *Nailsay*, in the County of *Somerset*, Esquire; and Sister and Heir of *John Bythemore*, Lord of *Overwere*, *Netherwere*, *Basilborow*, and *Nailsay*, and divers other large Estates, in *Dunster*, *Hurcote*, *Littelton*, and *Kingsdowne*, all in the said County, which became afterwards the Estate of this House, by Virtue of that Marriage.

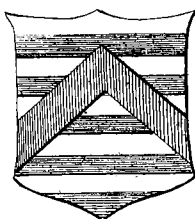
AMONG

\* Note, that the Arms of Berke'ey ought to be marshalled before thote of Gant, immediately after thote of Gournay.

† Ex Visitatione Dorf. & Somf. penes Ducem de Kingston, & penes Comitem de Oxford, ut supra.

AMONG those few Baronies by Tenure omitted by that excellent Antiquarian Sir *William Dugdale*, that of *De la More*, or *Bithemore*, is one; which, though we cannot say how long it remained in that Rank, yet the Descendants of that Family having been of eminent Note, as long as they continued, we shall give some Deduction of them here.

BITHEMORE,  
or,  
DE LA MORE.



THE first of this Family of whom we have found mention made, was *Ralph de Mora*\*, who was Witness to a Charter of Trust to *Painell*, Lord of *Babantune*, or *Bampton*, and *William* his Son, in the Time of King *Henry* the First.

To him succeeded *William de la More*†, who, together with *William Mallet*, in the second of King *John*, having some way or other incurred the Displeasure of the King, had Remission of that Offence.

WHICH *William*, in the Year following §, being then a Baron, answered upon the Scutage then levied two Marks, his Barony being held by the Service of one Knight's Fee,

To him succeeded *Stephen de la More*, who being Lord of *Yatton*, settled the same upon *Bartholomew de la More*, his younger Son ||, and *Alice* his Wife, and upon their Heirs, in Fee.

THIS *Stephen de la More* left three Sons, *Richard*, *James*, and *Bartholomew* before-mentioned.

SIR *Richard de la More* succeeded his Father †, and obtained a Grant of certain Estates in *Loxton*, of *Wil-*

E 2

liam

\* Ex Libro vocat. Chartæ Regum in Officio Ducatus Lancastræ.

† Rot. Pipæ, 2 Johan.

§ Rot. Pipæ, 3 Johan. de Finibus, & Scutagiis Baronum.

|| Affiz. in Com. Somf. coram J. Bouffer, 18, 19, & 20 Edw. II. rot. 7.

† Ibid. rot. 11.

## 28. *A Genealogical History*

*liam de Cantelupe*, and of *Hawisa* his Wife, to be held by them and their Heirs, by certain pecuniary Services therein mentioned.

¶¶ WHICH *Richard de la More*, animated by a pious Zeal, undertaking a Voyage to the Holy Land, in the Time of King *Henry* the Third, left certain Lands which he had in *Stanture*, in Custody with *James de la More*, his Brother.

AND living long after, upon the Marriage of *Gilbert de Clare*, Earl of *Gloucester* \*, with *Joan* of *Acres*, Daughter to King *Edward* the First, was returned to hold Lands by Knight-Service under the said Earl, as of his Honours of *Uske* and *Caerleon*.

To him succeeded *Bartholomew de la More* before-mentioned, his Brother †; who, upon the same Marriage of *Gilbert de Clare* just mentioned, was likewise found to hold Lands by the like Services, of the same Honours.

WE come next to another *Stephen*, Son and Heir of the said Sir *Bartholomew de la More*, who in the fourth of *Edward* the First §, being then called *Stephën Attimore*, performed his Service for half of one Knight's Fee, by the Person of *Adam de Brochole*, with one Horse armed at all Points.

IN the eleventh of *Edward* the Second, he levied a Fine ¶, and settled upon his Wife *Constantia*, and upon his own Heirs, certain Estates in *Tatton*, *Cungresbury*, and *Banwich*, in the County of *Somerset*.

IN the eighteenth of *Edward* the Second †, *William de Cantelupe*, or *Cauntelo*, Son to that *William* formerly spoken of, demanded that Estate of *Loxton*; whereupon the said *Stephen* pleaded the Grant of the said *William's* Father to *Richard de la More*, his Uncle; and that the said *Richard* having demised the

Pre-

¶¶ Placit. in Com. Somf. coram Ada de Greynville, A<sup>o</sup> 56 Hen. III. rot. 6. dorſ.

\* Dugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Gloucester.

† Ibid.

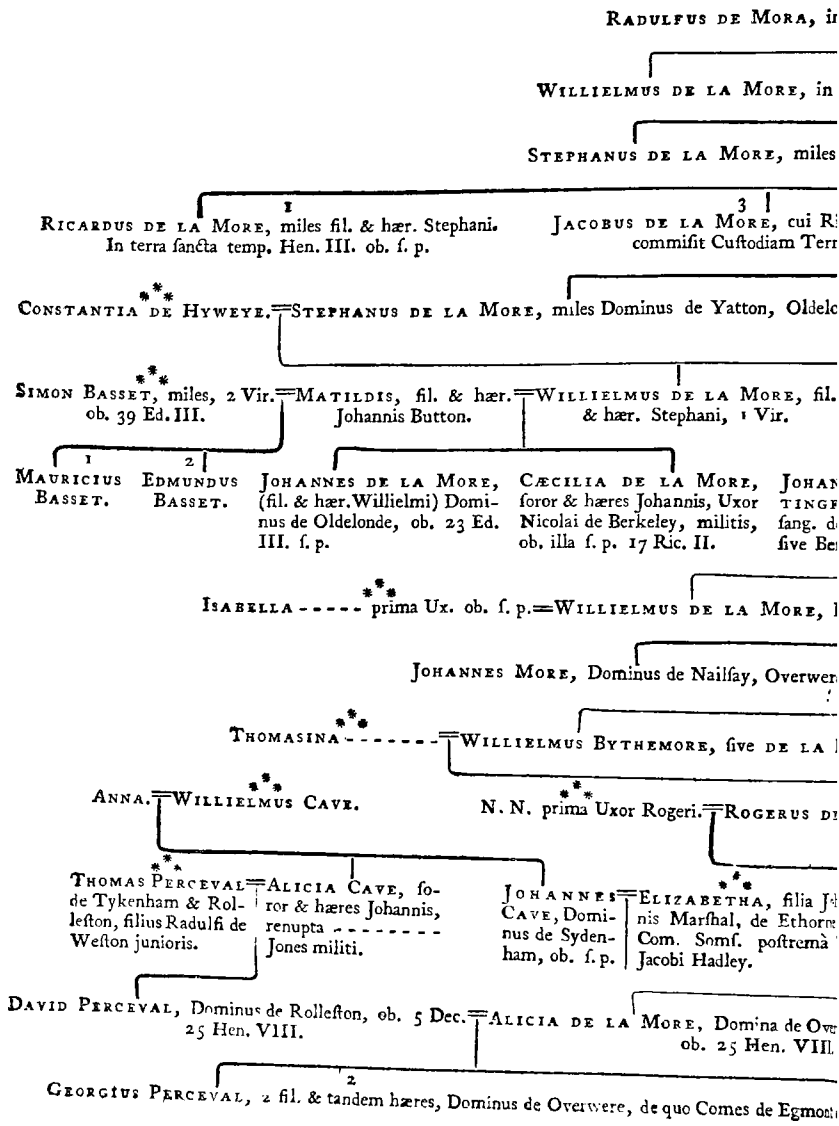
§ Madox Baronia Angliæ.

¶ Fin Somf. 11 Edw. II.

† Affiz. in Com. Somf. coram J. Bouffer, &c. An. 18, 19 & 20 Edw. II. rot. 11.



GENEALOGY of the House of DE LA MORE, or B  
present Ea



**BITHEMORE**, from the sole Female Heir of which proceeds the  
 Earl of *Egmont*.

in Com. Somf. tempt. Hen I.

in Com. Somf. Baro temp. Hen. Johann.

in Com. Somf. Dominus de Yatton, temp. Hen. III.

Ricardus frater ejus  
 et hæres sue.      **BARTHOLOMÆUS DE LA MORE**, miles Dominus de Yatton,  
 Congresbury, Wringe, &c.      = **ALICIA**.

de la More, &c. hæres & nepos Ricardi, ob. 2 Ed. III.      = **JOHANNA**, filia & hæres  
 & Agnetis      -----      Roberti

filia.      **ALICIA DE LA MORE**, Uxor  
 Botiller, de Com. Berks.      = **JOHANNES DE LA MORE**.

**JOHANNES BOTILLER DE SHEN-      GEORGIUS DE LA MORE**, = **JOHANNA**, filia & hæres Thomæ de  
 INGFIELD, in Com. Berks, Con-      Dominus de Nailfay & Domi-      Gournay Domini de Overwere, in Com.  
 jug. de hæres Cæcilie de la More,      nus de Alwarton & Overwere,      Somf. hæres etiam Avi sui Ricardi de  
 de Berkeley.      in Com. Somf. ju. Ux.      Counteville Domini de Alwarton.

de la More, Dominus de Nailfay, Overwere, & Alwarton. = **JOHANNA** ----- 2 Ux.

de la More, &c. ob. 20 Ed. IV. = **ALICIA**, filia Isabellæ Toky, alias Pedyll de Bridgwater, 36 Hen. IV.

de la More, Dom. de Nailfay, Overwere & Alwarton, æt. 38 ad mort. patris.

de la More, five BITHEMORE, Dom. de Nailfay & Overwere, = **JOHANNA**, secunda Uxor Rogeri  
 ob. 6 June, 16 Hen. VIII. 1524.      de la More.

filia Johanne = **THOMAS DE LA MORE**, five  
 et hæres, in      **BYTHEMORE**, Dominus de O-  
 Com. Somf. Ux.      verwere, ob. 14 Aug. 16 Hen.  
    VIII. ætat. 30, A. D. 1524.

I      II

**RICARDUS BY-      JOHANNES BYTHE-**  
**THEMORE**, Do-      **MORE**, Dominus de  
 minus de Nailfay,      Nailfay, ob. f. p. 8  
 ob. f. p.      Dec. 5 Edw. VI.

de Overwere, Nailfay, &c. hæres Johannis,      **JOHANNES DE LA MORE**, five BITHEMORE, ob. f. p.  
 VIII. A. D. 1533.      13 Sept. 31 Hen. VIII.

Egmont qui nunc.      3 |      I      **JACOBUS PERCEVAL**, Dominus de Nailfay & Overwere, ob. f. p.



of the House of YVERY, &c. 29

Premises to one *Agnéz de Cbeney*, for her Life, after the Death of the said *Richard* and *Agnéz*, he had entered upon the Premises, as Cousin and next Heir of the said *Richard*, viz. as Son and Heir of *Bartholomew*, the said *Richard*'s Brother; which Plea being found good, Judgment was given for him accordingly.

IN *Hillary* Term, the eighteenth of *Edward* the Second \*, by a Fine then levied, between this *Stephen de la More* and *Constantia* his Wife, Plaintiffs, and *William de Hyweye*, Defendant, the Manor of *Shawe*, in the County of *Wilts*, which *Ralph de Gros* and *Isabella* his Wife held, as the Dower of the said *Isabella*, is limited, after her Decease, to the said *Stephen de la More*, for the Term of his Life; and certain other Lands in *Horton*, in the same County, which the said *Ralph* and *Isabella* also held, as *Isabella*'s Dower, were limited to the said *Stephen* and *Constantia*, and the Heirs which *Stephen* should beget upon the Body of *Constantia*; with Remainder of all the Premises to the said *William de Hyweye*, and his Heirs, in Fee. From whence it is probable, that the said *Constantia* was the Daughter and Heir of the said *William de Hyweye*.

BUT he departed this Life not long after, in the second of *Edward* the Third †, seized of the Manors of *Oldelonde*, in *Com. Gloucester*, and of *Yatton* and *Ywater*, in the County of *Somerset*; leaving *William* his Son by his first Wife *Constantia*, his Heir, then fifteen Years old, at the Feast of *All-Saints* next ensuing after his Father's Death, and a Daughter *Alice*.

WHICH *William de la More* married *Maud* §, the Daughter and Heir of *John Button*, who became afterwards the Wife of *Simon Basset*, of *Ewley*.

BY

---

\* *Fin. Com. Wilts*, 18 *Edw. II.* n° 82.

† *Esch. in Com. Somf. & Com. Glouc.* 2 *Edw. III.* post mort. *Stephani de la More*.

§ *Ex Libro MSS. Richard. St. George, penes Comitem de Eg-*  
*mont, notat. A fol 56.*



30 *A Genealogical History*

By which Lady he left a Son *John*, and a Daughter *Cæcilia*.

WHICH *John de la More*, being then a Minor \*, deceased upon the twenty-third of *Edward* the Third, leaving *Cæcilia*, his Sister, then fourteen Years of Age, his Heir.

WHICH *Cæcilia de la More*, in the thirty-ninth of *Edward* III. †, being then the Wife of Sir *Nicholas de Berkeley*, together with her Husband, made a Conveyance, in Trust, to *Thomas Marmyon*, Chaplain, and *Nicholas de Wandestree*, of the Manor of *Shawe juxta Melkesham*, in Com. *Wilts*, and of the Manor of *Iwode (Ywater)*, and other great Estates in *Lokleston*, alias *Loxton*, *Facton*, alias *Yatton*, and *Congresbury*, in the County of *Somerset*, which Sir *Simon Basset*, Knight, and *Maud*, (the Mother of the said *Cæcilia*) his Wife, held for Term of the Life of *Maud*.

WHICH Conveyance was made, in order to a Fine, levied in the following Year §, by *Maud* aforesaid (her second Husband, Sir *Simon Basset*, having died in the intermediate Time) whereby the said Manors were limited to Sir *Nicholas de Berkeley*, and the said *Cæcilia de la More*, his Wife, for Life, and to the Heirs of their joint Bodies, with Remainder to *Maurice*, and *Edmund*, the Sons of the said *Simon Basset*, and *Maud*, one after the other, for Life, Remainder to the Heirs of the said *Cæcilia de la More*, or *Berkeley*, in Fee.

AND in the first of *Richard* the Second ||, another Fine was levied, though not recorded till the next Year, wherein Sir *John de Roches* being Plaintiff, and *Philippa*, Daughter of *Richard de Hyweye*, Defendant, the Manor of *Horton*, which Sir *Nicholas de Berkeley*, and *Cæcilia* his Wife, held for the Life of *Cæcilia*; and the Manor of *Shawe*, which *Maud*, formerly the  
Wife

\* Elich. 2; Edw. III. pars 2. n<sup>o</sup> 87. Glouc. post mort. Johannis de la More.

† Fin. divers. Comit. 30 Edw. III. n<sup>o</sup> 3.

§ Fin. Pasch. 40 Edw. III. n<sup>o</sup> 19.

|| Fin. 2 Ric. II. Com. Wilts, n<sup>o</sup> 12.

Wife of *William Attemore*, held for Term of her Life, with Remainder to the said *Cæcilia*, for her Life, were conveyed to the said Sir *John Roches*, and his Heirs, in Fee.

BUT more of the said *Cæcilia* we have not seen, till the seventeenth of *Richard* the Second, when (her Husband being dead before) she died also \*, leaving *John de Bottiler*, of *Sbentingfield*, in Com. *Berks*, her Cousin and next Heir, viz. Son and Heir of *Alice*, Sister of *William*, Father of the said *Cæcilia*. Of which Families, or their Posterity, if there were any after this Time, we can give no further Account.

WE come, in the next Place, to mention the Issue of Sir *Stephen de la More*, Grandfather of *Cæcilia* last mentioned, by *Joan* his second Wife.

By this Lady he left a Son *John de la More*, who in the fifth of *Edward* the Third †, brought a *Formedon* against *William*, and demanded thereby the Manor *F——*, which *Robert* had given to the said *Stephen*, after the Death of *Agnez*, *Robert's* Wife, with the said *Joan* his Daughter, in Frank-Marriage.

*GEORGE de la More* §, the Son of this *John*, having married *Joan*, sole Daughter and Heir of *Thomas de Gournay*, Lord of *Overwere*, the last of that great and noble Family, was, in the fourteenth of *Richard* the Second, Party to a Fine in the *Trinity* Term of that Year ||, together with the said *Joan* his Wife, in which the Reversion of the said Manor of *Overwere*, alias *Upwere*, was limited to him, and to the Heirs of himself, and his said Wife *Joan*, after the Death of *Alianor*, then the Wife of *Richard Power*, and Widow of the said *Thomas de Gournay*, who held the same in Jointure.

THE great Descent which accrued by this Marriage, and the Noble Houses to whose Rights the Family of *Perceval* became entitled thereby, ought regularly to be

\* Esch. 17 Ric. II. n<sup>o</sup> 5.

† Year Books, 5 Edw. III.

§ Ex Genealogia Perceval, per Le Neve, penes Com. Egmont.

|| Fin. 14 Ric. II. Somers.

be deduced in their Place; but to obviate the Inconvenience of interrupting the Thread of this Family, we defer to treat of them till we have finished our Account of this.

To proceed, therefore, with the House of *Bythmore*. In the succeeding Reign, the seventh of *Henry* the Fourth \*, by another Fine, in which *William Howys* (*Howeye*) and *Philip Cleffield*, were Plaintiffs, and *George de la More*, and *Joan* his Wife, Defendants, the Manor of *Alwarton* (containing eleven Hides and an half of Land, and held of the Barony of *Karry*, as appears by an original Indenture of *Richard* Lord *St. Maur*, dated upon the tenth of *May*, in the ninth of *Henry* the Fourth, now in the Custody of *John Anstis*, Garter King at Arms) with other large Estates in *Wroxhall* and *Batelbergh*, in the County of *Somerset*, with the Advowson of the Church of *Alwarton*, part of that large Inheritance which came in by the Heirefs of *Counteville*, or *Camville*, the Mother to the said *Joan*, together with the Reversion of the Manor of *Upwere*, otherwise *Overwere*, (which *Richard Power*, and *Alianore* his Wife, still held for the Life of *Alianore*) were limited to the said *George de la More*, and *Joan*, for the Term of their Lives, Remainder to *William* (Son of *George*) and *Isabel* his Wife, and the Heirs of their joint Bodies; Remainder, as to the Premises in *Wroxhall*, to the Heirs of *George*, in Fee, and as to the Residue, to those of *Joan* his Wife.

IN which same Term and Year also †, the said *George de la More*, and *Joan* his Wife, conveyed certain Lands in *West-Chynnock*, *Bodecley*, and *Charlton-Adam*, to *John Hugyn* (*Juin*) and his Heirs, in Fee, and others in *Weston*, *Kyngefdon*, *Hurcot*, *Somerton*, and *Littleton*, to *Elizabeth*, Daughter of the said *John*, and the Heirs of her Body, with Remainder to themselves, the said *George* and *Joan*, whose Daughter, as we presume, the said *John* had married formerly.

To

---

\* Fin. Somers. 7 Hen. IV.

† Fin. Somers. Pasch & Trin. 7 Hen. IV.

To this *George* (in different Records) stiled *Delamore*, *Bythemore*, *Attemore*, and *More*, *William* \* *Bythemore*, his Son and Heir, succeeded.

|| UPON that remarkable Order issued from the Crown, in the seventh of *Henry* the Sixth, 1428, to the Sheriffs and Justices of the different Counties, whereby a certain Number of Men at Arms were required to be chosen out of the most ancient Knights and Gentlemen of the respective Counties, whose Ancestors had borne Coats of Arms from Times of Antiquity, to appear before the King at *Westminster*, upon *Tuesday* in the first Week of *Easter* next ensuing, to serve him in their own Persons for the Defence of the Realm, this *William More*, or *Bythemore*, was one of those twenty Men of ancient Birth and Arms, returned in Consequence of that Summons, for the County of *Somerset*.

WHICH *William Bythemore* †, five Years after, viz. in *Michaelmas* Term, the twelfth of the same Reign (*Isabel* his first Wife being then dead, as it seems, without Issue, and he being then married a second time to *Joan*, the Daughter of ———, in whose Right he had obtained twenty-two Messuages, and a large Estate in *Nailsay*, *Wortheston*, *Ratilbury*, and *Tadenwort*, alias *Edinworth*, in the County of *Somerset*) vested the said Estates in the Hands of *Martin Jacob*, his Trustee, together with *Sir Theobald Gorges*, Knight, *Sir Richard Newton*, *Sir John Warr*, and others, for his Manor of *Overwere*; but neither of the Uses of this Trust appear in this Record.

IN *Hillary Term* §, in the fourteenth of the said Reign, the said *William* was one of the Trustees for an Estate in *Staunton-Drew* (part of the ancient Inheritance of this House) then, as it appears, the Inheritance of *Sir John Juin* (or *Hujyn*) one of the Justices of the Com-

---

\* Placit. coram Justiciar. de Banco, Term. Mich. Anno 3 Hen. VII.

|| Fol. MSS. St. George, penes Com. Egmont, Not. Aa,

† Fin. Somers. Mich. 12 Hen. VI. & Hill. 13.

§ Ibid. Hillary Term, 14 Hen. VI.

mon-Pleas, Son and Heir, as we presume, of that *John Hujyn*, mentioned before, in the seventh of *Henry* the Fourth, and of the Sister of this *William*, part of whose Portion we take it to have been,

Two Years after this, the said *William*, and *John Bythemore* \*, his Son and Heir, were Trustees also to an Estate belonging to *William Stantor*, Esquire, in *Bishop-Worth* and *Fylton juxta Keynsham*, in the same County of *Somerset*.

IN which Year this *William*, as we presume, deceased; for in the *Easter* following *Bartholomew de la More* (who was undoubtedly of this House, and, as it seems, Brother to the last *William*) together with *Mary* his Wife †, settled the Manor of *Bridcombe*, and other Lands of considerable Value, in *Nailsey*, *Wroxhall*, and *Portesherd*, upon *John More*, (Son and Heir of the last *William*) and *Alice* his Wife, and the Heirs of *John*; with Remainder to the Heirs of the said *Bartholomew*.

THIS *John Bythemore* §, the Son of *William*, is again mentioned, in a Fine of the twenty-second of *Henry* the Sixth, when the Reversion of thirty-one Messuages, and other Rents in *Bristol*, were conveyed by *Richard Janys*, Vicar of the Parish of the *Holy Cross of the Temple*, to *Philip More* ||, and other Trustees, after the Death of *Alice*, the Wife of the said *John*.—Which *Alice* \*\* was Daughter of *Isabel Tokey*, alias *Peddyl*, of *Bridgwater*, in the County of *Somerset*.

THIS *John More* (for so was the Name contracted towards the End of his Life †) died upon the *Friday* after the *Epiphany* of our Lord, in the twentieth of King *Edward* the Fourth, 1480, seized of the Manor of *Alwarton*, (held by the Service of one Knight's Fee, and a Rent of twenty Pence, of the Honour of *Castlecary*, then belonging to the Lord *Zouche*) and of the Advowson

\* Fin. Somf. Hillary Term, 16 Hen. VI.

† Ibid. Pasch. 16 Hen. VI.

§ Placit. coram Justiciar. de Banco, Term. Mich. 3 Hen. VII.

|| Fine Bristol. 22 Hen. VI.

\*\* In the Treasury of Records at Bridgwater, 36 Hen. VI.

† Esch. post mort. Johan. More; 20 Edw. IV. in turri Londini.

vowson of the Free-Chapel of *Alwarton*, as also of the Manor of *Overwere*, then held of the Heirs of *Richard Hampton*, by the Service of one Bird's Nest, to be paid annually in lieu of all Services; and likewise of the Manors of *Batelbergb* and *Nailsay*, with their Appurtenances; together with seven Messuages, three hundred Acres of Land, forty Acres of Meadow, one hundred Acres of Pasture, with their Appurtenances, in *Edyngeworth*, *Burnham*, *Hurtcote*, and *Littleton*: which Manor of *Batelbergb*, with *Edynworth*, alias *Edinston*, and *Burnebam*, were held of the Abbot of *Glastonbury*; the Manor of *Nailsay* of Sir *John Denebawde*, Knight; *Hurtcote*, of the Prior of *Burnham*, by the Service of one pair of gilt Spurs; and *Littleton*, of the Heirs of *John Hill*: *William More*, his Son and Heir, being then thirty-eight Years old, and upwards.

OF which *William*, the first Mention that we find is \*, upon the first of *November*, in the seventeenth of *Edward* the Fourth, three Years before his Father's Death; when, by his Deed, in which he calls himself *William Bythemore*, of *Alwerigton* [*Alwarton*] in the County of *Somerset*, he confirmed, under certain Conditions, for their Lives, to *John* and *William Attewode*, and their Wives, certain Lands in *Le Streme*, within his Lordship of *Overwere*; given at *Overwere*, the Day and Year before-mentioned.

HE is again mentioned in a Deed, the Year his Father died †, by the Name of *William*, Son of *John Bithemore*, for Lands in *Oldeparte*, and the Manors of *Overwere* and *Le Streme*.

IN the third of *Henry* the Seventh §, this *William Bythemore* in *Michaelmas* Term brought a *Formedon* (against his Trustees for that Manor) in the Court of Common-Pleas, in a Form of Law at that Time necessary, to defeat the Settlement of the Manor of *Al-*

F 2

*warton*,

\* Ex Autograph. penes Johan. Strachey, de Sutton-Court, in Com. Somersf.

† Penes eundem.

§ Placit. coram Justiciarij de Banco, 3 Hen. VII. Mich. ut supra, fol. 423.

*warton*, in order to his Sale thereof; in which *Formedon* he demands the Manor of *Alwarton*, and the Advowson of the Church; and also twenty Messuages, six Tofts, a Dovecote, and a Mill, six hundred Acres of Arable Land, two hundred Acres of Meadow, two hundred more of Pasture, and a Rent of twenty-four Shillings in the said Manor.—All which Premises, as it is there recited, were granted by *John le Riche*, (a Trustee) some Ages backward, to *Richard*, Son of *Baldwin de Counteville*, alias *Camville*, and to the Heirs of his Body; and which ought, therefore, after the Death of the said *Richard de Counteville*, and of his Daughter and Heir *Elizabeth*, (Wife of *Thomas de Gournay*) and *Joan*, Daughter and Heir of *Elizabeth*, Wife of *George Bythemore*, and of *William Bythemore*, Son and Heir of the said *Joan*, and of *John Bythemore*, Son and Heir of the said *William*; to descend to this *William*, as Son and Heir of the said *John*.

AND the said *William* having thus by this Process, (which is very curious, both from the Number of the Descents therein set down, and from the Practice of the Law therein discovered) enabled himself so to do, in the same Term \*, conveyed the same away from himself and his Heirs, to *Thomas Ustewayte* and *Richard Isbam*, Esquires; and thereupon, four Years after, in the seventh of that Reign, *Thomas Ustewayte*, having obtained a Licence for the Sale, he levied a Fine thereon.

BUT between this seventh, and the eleventh of *Henry the Seventh*, he died; for then, in *Easter Term*, *Thomasin Bithemore* †, his Widow, released any Claim that she might have, for Dower, or any other Account, thereto.

To this *William* succeeded his Son *Roger Bythemore* §; who marrying two Wives, by the first had *Thomas Bythemore*, his Son and Heir; and by his second

\* In eodem Term. Mich. 3 Hen. VII. rot 434.

† Pasch. 11 Hen. VII. de Banco, rot. Chartar. irrotulatarum dorso.

§ Ex Genealogia de Perceval, per Le Neve.

cond, (*Joan*, Daughter of ———) two Sons more, named *Richard* and *John*; of whom we shall have Occasion to speak hereafter.

*ROGER BYTHEMORE* dying upon the sixteenth of *June* \*, the thirteenth of *Henry* the Eighth, 1523, to him succeeded *Thomas*, his Son and Heir by his first Wife; besides whom he also left two Sons, named *Richard* and *John*, by a second Wife named *Joan*.

WHICH *Thomas* having married *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *John Marshall*, of *Ivyborne*, in the County of *Somerset*, Esquire, by ——— his Wife, Daughter of *Sir John Fitzjames*, Knight, Lord Chief-Justice, died upon the fourteenth of *August* †, in the same Year with his Father, leaving a Son *John*, and a Daughter *Alice*.

*JOHN BYTHEMORE* succeeded his Father §, but dying upon the thirteenth of *September*, in the thirty-first of *Henry* the Eighth, 1541 ||, this Estate descended to *James*, the Son of *David Perceval*, of whom we treat in this Chapter, in right of *Alice Bythemore*, his Mother, here mentioned; who brought the whole Rights of that Noble and Ancient Family into this House. What farther we have to say of it, will have Place in the ensuing Chapter, in that Order in which the Estates of the different Branches of that Family descended into this.

WE now come to fulfil our Promise, concerning the other Noble Families, whose Heireffes, through this last mentioned, conveyed their Blood, and the Rights of their respective Houses, into that of *Perceval*; all of which were the most illustrious of the Old Nobility of *England*, viz. *Gournay*, *Orescuilz*, *Fitzbarding*, alias *Berkeley*, *Gant*, *Montford*, *Bellofago*, *Yvery*, *Paganell*, *Doway*, *Meschines*, Earls of *Chester*, *Normandy*, the Earls of *Mercia*, *Romelli*, and *Counteville*.

And

---

\* Esch. post mort. Rogeri & Thomæ Bythemore, Aº 26 Hen. VIII. in Capell. Ret.

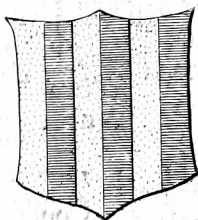
† Esch. ut supra.

§ Ibid.

|| Esch. post mort. Johan. Bythemore, 31 Hen. VIII.

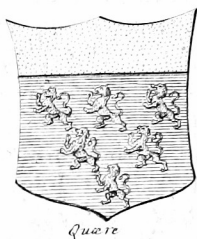


## GOURNAY.



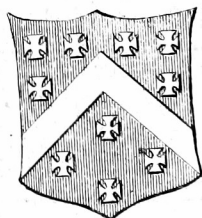
§ And of these we shall treat in order, as their Coats are marshalled by the Law of Arms, with those of the Earl of *Egmont*; with this Exception only, that that of *Gournay* being a Branch of the House of *Yvery*, we shall deliver our Accounts of it separately, in the Seventh Book of this Work, which is wholly dedicated to it.

## ORESUILZ.



|| As to that of *Orescuilz*, we only know, that it was a *Norman* Family, whose Eminence is judged from that considerable Estate which *Maud*, the Coheirefs of it, brought in Marriage to *William*, the Son of *John de Harpetre*, the Ancestor of the second House of *Gournay*; from whence, thro' that Line, the Descent is de-

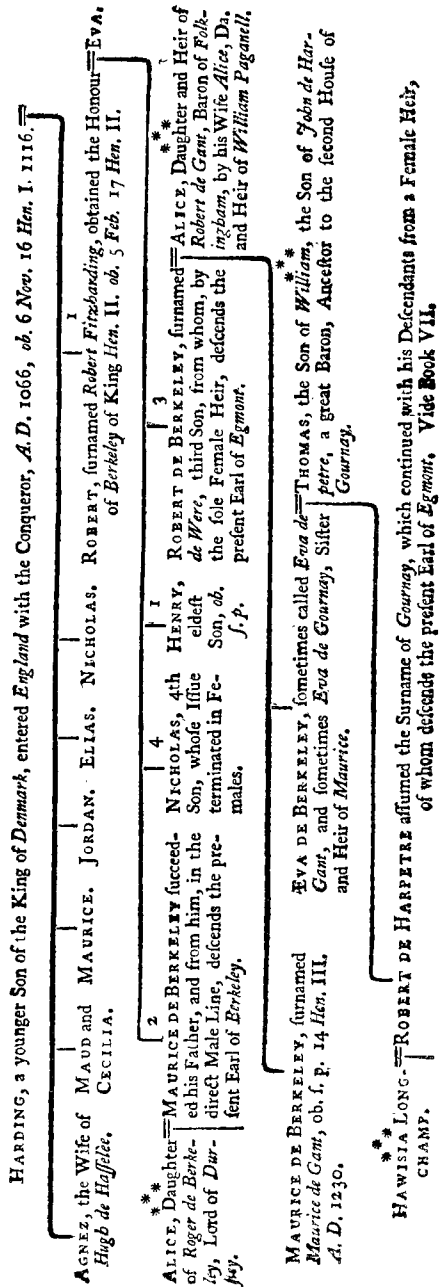
rived to the present House of *Perceval*.

BERKELEY,  
or,  
FITZHARDING.

To come then to that of *Fitzharding*, which next occurs, This House is that which afterwards assumed the Name of *Berkeley*, of which, one Branch is that which appertains particularly to our Enquiries here, whose sole Heir the Earl of *Egmont* is; the other Branch is still subsisting in the Male Line, of which the present Earl of *Berkeley* is the Chief.

THE

The GENEALOGY of the House of BERKELEY from a Female Heir, of which descends the present Earl of Egmont.



THE first of the Male Line of this House, which we can deduce with Certainty, is *Harding* \*, said to have been a younger Son to one of the Kings of *Denmark*, and by others described in these Words, which imply the same thing, *Ex Regia prosapia Regum Danie Ortus* †, descended from the Royal Line of those Princes; and the Arms of this House, with those of *Denmark*, are to be seen from great Antiquity, in some Churches in the County of *Gloucester*, where they were first seated, and where they still continue.

THIS *Harding* accompanying Duke *William* † of *Normandy*, in that signal Expedition which he made into *England*, was present in that memorable Battle with him against King *Harold*, by the Success of which he became King of this Realm.——What we have farther seen of this Man, is, that after the Conquest, he held *Wittinborst*, now called *Wbattenborst*, in Com. *Gloucester*, of Earl *Brietrick*, in Mortgage: and that he died the sixth of *November*, the sixteenth of *Henry* the First; leaving *Robert*, commonly called *Robert Fitzharding*, (his eldest Son) his Heir; *Nicholas*, who in the twelfth of *Henry* the Second, residing in *Somersetshire*, held there two Knight's Fees and an half, of the King; *Elias*, *Jordan*, and *Maurice*, and three Daughters, *Agnéz*, *Maud*, and *Cæcilia*; of which, *Agnéz*, became the Wife of *Hugh de Hazellee*.

ROBERT FITZHARDING †, the eldest Son, after that *Henry Plantagenet*, Earl of *Anjou*, by the Death of King *Stephen*, had acquired the Crown of *England*, obtained a Grant of the Castle and Honour of *Berkeley*, from that Prince, Son of *Maud* the Empress, and possessed himself thereof; whereupon his Descendants assumed that Surname, which, together with the Castle and Barony, continues to them, in the Male Line, to this Day.

THIS *Robert* † firmly adhering to *Maud* the Empress, and the said King her Son, had, in remuneration

---

\* Leland.

† Dugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Berkeley.

‡ Ibid.

|| Ibid.

‡ Ibid.

tion of his Fidelity and Services (done to them in their Contest with King *Stephen*) from the said Duke, not yet King, first, a Grant of the Manor of *Bethone*, and one hundred Pounds Lands in *Berkeley*, and all that Territory thereabouts, called *Berkeley-Herneys*, with the whole Lordship of *Berkeley*, of which Lordship and Territory *Roger de Berkeley*, Owner of *Dursley*, who held it of the Crown in Fee-Farm, was then divested, in regard that he had taken part with King *Stephen*; so likewise of *Dursley*, by reason of his Refusal to pay the Fee-Farm of *Berkeley* before-mentioned, but through the Mediation of divers Lords of the Realm, *Roger* obtaining *Dursley* again, ceased not to vex this *Robert Fitzbarding*, for *Berkeley* taken from him, as we have already observed; whereupon Complaint being made to Duke *Henry*, he wrought this following Agreement between them\*, viz. That *Roger* should give *Alice* his Daughter in Marriage to *Maurice*, the Son of this *Robert Fitzbarding*, together with the Town of *Slimbrig* as a Portion. Which Accord being made at *Bristol*, in the House of him the said *Robert Fitzbarding*, in the Presence of King *Stephen* and Duke *Henry*. It was then further covenanted, that she the said *Alice* should have twenty Pounds Land of the Fee of *Berkeley*, for her Dowry; and in case the said *Maurice* should die before the Accomplishment of that Agreement, the like Performance should hold for the next Son of the said *Robert Fitzbarding*: so likewise, in case *Alice* should depart this Life, the like Covenants to be observed for her next Sister.—Moreover, it was then farther concluded, that the eldest Son of that *Roger*, should take to Wife one of the Daughters of the said *Robert Fitzbarding*, and receiving ten Pounds ten Shillings Land in *Dursley*, by way of Portion, to make her a Dowry, of the Manor of *Siston*, near *Bristol*.

THIS

---

\* Dugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Berkeley.

† Ibid.

THIS *Robert Fitzharding* †, in the Reign of the same King *Henry* obtained a Confirmation of his former Grant of *Berkeley* and *Berkeley-Herneys*, to hold to himself and his Heirs, by the Services of five Knight's Fees.—And in the twelfth of that King's Reign, upon the Affessment of the Aid for marrying of *Maud*, the King's Daughter to *Henry* the Emperor, certified the Knight's Fees he then held to be five in number; but that *Roger de Berkeley* then held certain Lands belonging to the Honour of *Berkeley*, for which he performed to him no Service, viz. *Ofword*, and half *Nivetone*, with all the Fee of *Bernard* the Chaplain.—For these five Knights Fees, this *Robert* answered five Marks, in the fourteenth of *Henry* the Second.

THIS *Robert Fitzharding* died the fifth of *February*, 1170\*, (in the seventeenth of *Henry* the Second) and, with *Eva* his Wife, lies buried in the Choir of the Abby of *St. Augustine*, whereof he was the pious Founder.

By the said *Eva* his Wife †, Foundress also of a religious House called the *Magdalens*, near *Bristol*, and at length Priors there, he had Issue four Sons, *Henry*, *Maurice*, *Robert*, and *Nicholas*.

*HENRY*, the eldest, dying without Issue †, *Maurice*, the second, succeeded to the Estate; and, continuing the Line, is Ancestor to the Earls of *Berkeley* at this Day. *Nicholas*, the youngest, had Issue, which ended in Females some Generations after. — But *Robert*, the next to *Maurice*, left a sole Daughter, who became at length his Heir, from whom is descended the present Earl of *Egmont*.

WHICH *Robert*, commonly called *Robert de Were* †, being Lord of that great Manor, lying near *Axbridge*, in the County of *Somerset*; (which at length fell to the House of *Perceval*, by means of this Descent;) had also divers other Lordships in the same County.

He

† Dugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Perkeley.

\* Ibid.

† Ibid.

‡ Ibid.

† Ibid.

HE also obtained from his † Brother *Maurice de Berkeley*, a Ratification of those Grants which his Father *Robert Fitzbarding* had made to him, of the Manor of *Beverstane* and *King's-Weston* \*: and having married *Alice*, the Daughter of *Robert de Gant*, Lord of *Folkingham* §, by *Alice* his first Wife, (the Daughter and Heir of *William Paganell* || and *Avice de Romelli*, (the Widow of ——— *Curci*, Daughter and Coheirefs of *William Meschines* ‡, his second Wife) in the fourth of *Richard* the First gave sixty Marks for Livery of the Inheritance of the said *Alice Paganell*; whereupon he obtained the said Inheritance, in favour of the Children he had by her, which were, a Son named *Maurice*, and a Daughter *Eva*.

WHICH *Maurice de Berkeley*, furnished *de Gant* from his Mother \*\*, by reason of her great Inheritance, in the thirteenth of King *John*, upon levying the Scutage of *Scotland*, answered for twelve Knights Fees and an half; and in the fifteenth of King *John*, covenanted to serve the King at his own Charge, with twenty Knights, himself accounted one, in Consideration that he might marry the Daughter of *Henry de Oilly*; which Marriage, whether ever it was consummated or not, we cannot say; but this is sure, that at the Time of his Decease he left another Lady, whose Name was *Margaret de Somerie*. But he had Issue by neither of these, his Sister *Eva* being found by Record to be his next Heir.

THE next Mention we find made of him is in the seventeenth of King *John* ††, when he paid sixty Marks to the Crown, on behalf of *Eva* his Sister, for the Inheritance of *Thomas*, the Son of *William* her Husband, at that Time, as we presume, deceased.

G 2

THE

† Dugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Berkeley.

\* Rot. Pip. 4 Ric. I. de novis obtatis.

§ Placit. Term. Mich. Anno 2 Johan. rot. 4.

|| Monast. Anglic. Vol. II. fol. 97.

‡ Certificat. Feod. Mil. in Com. Somf. Willielmi de Curcy dapiferi.

\*\* Dugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Gant.

†† Rot. Fin. 17 Johan.

THE same Year †, taking part with the rebellious Barons, his Lands were seized on, and given to *Philip de Albini*, excepting *Weston* and *Beverton*, (in *Gloucestershire*;) whereupon he addressed himself to the King, to make his Peace.

IN the seventh of *Henry* the Third \*, upon levying the Scutage for the *Welch* Expedition (commonly called the *Scuagium Montgomerie*) it appeareth, that this *Maurice de Gant* had Lands in the Counties of *York*, *Berks*, *Lincoln*, *Oxford*, *Surry*, *Gloucester*, and *Leicester*.

IN the ninth of *Henry* the Third, he was sent into *Wales*, with *William Marshall*, Earl of *Pembroke*, for the building a Castle there. And in the eleventh of *Henry* the Third, fortified his Castle at *Beverston* without Licence §; whereupon he went to the King, to make his Apology for so doing, and obtained a Confirmation thereof. But in the fourteenth of *Henry* the Third, having no Issue of his Body, by his Deed, bearing date at *Portsmouth*, he gave unto the King (then passing into *Brittany*) his Lordships of *Weston*, *Beverston*, and *Albriston*; and the same Year departed this Life.

UPON whose Death, *Andrew Lutterell* came to the King, and claimed, as his Inheritance, divers Lordships, whereof this *Maurice* died seized, *viz.* the Manors of *Cantokesbeved*, *Stockeland*, *Hywys*, *Poellet*, and *Wyre*, in the County of *Somerset* \*\*, as also *Irneham* in *Lincolnshire*, and offered him an hundred Marks to have Inquisition made of his Title thereto, and that he might have Livery of them, in case they should appear to be his Right.

AFTER which, by succeeding Records it doth appear, that the said *Lutterell* did obtain some of the said Lands; though in what Degree of Relation he stood to this House, has never yet been made appear.

BUT for the Bulk of that Inheritance, it came to the

† Digdale's Baronage, sub tit. Gant.

\* Ibid.

§ Ibid.

\*\* Ibid.

the Issue of *Eva*, (the Sister of the said *Maurice de Gaunt*) whose Son *Robert*, by her Husband *Thomas*, the Son of *William* before-mentioned, some Time afterwards, in the same Year, viz. the fifteenth of *Henry* the Third, doing his Homage, had Livery of the Manor of *Poellet*, claimed by *Lutterell*, as we before have observed; as also divers other Lands, Part of the Possessions of *Maurice de Gaunt*\*, his Uncle, whose Heir (as the Record affirms) he was; and likewise of all his Lands in *Gloucestershire*, excepting *Beverston*, *Weston*, *Radewic*, *Oure*, and *Albrieton*†, which he, however, not long after obtained of the King.

*EVA de Berkeley*, (sometimes called *Eva de Gaunt*, and *Eva de Gournay*) the Mother of this *Robert*, appears to have likewise been the Heiress of *Hawisia de Gurnay*; but the Descent from the said *Hawisia* cannot be regularly deduced.—— || However, it is certain, that the Inheritance of *Hawisia* was very great, and that the Manor of *Barew-Gurnay* was a Part thereof; and that the Son of the said *Eva de Berkeley*, upon that Account, is ever mentioned by the Name of *Robert de Gournay*, and was the Founder of that great Family, by whose Issue great Part of this great Estate, in process of Time, descended to the great Family of *Bythemore*, or *Delamore*; who married the Female Heir; and again, by the sole Heiress of that House, to the House of *Perceval*, who are now the Representatives of this Illustrious Family. But for a farther Deduction of this Descent, we refer to the following Pages.

THE Illustrious Family of *Gant*, is equal, if not superior in Dignity, to any that settled in *England* at the *Norman* Conquest; being immediately descended in a Male Line from the Sovereign Counts of *Flanders* §, and at the Time of their Entrance here, in so near a Degree of Relation, as that of Nephew, to the Conqueror.

THE

\* Rot. Fin. 15 Hen. III. m. 8.

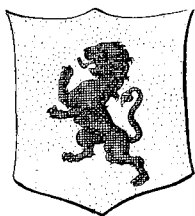
† Ibid. m. 9. & Claus. 15 Hen. III. m. 21.

|| Madox Formulæ Anglicæ.

§ Monasticon Anglicanum, Vol. I. p. 833, 834, n° 40, & 50.



FLANDERS,  
or  
GAUNT.



THE first of this Family of whom we have any certain Account\*, was *Lyderic*, Count of *Harlebeck*, upon whom the Government of that County was conferred by the *Carolinian* Emperors, with the Title of Forrester, about the Year 792. He dying in 802, to him succeeded *Engelram*, his Son, who greatly improved that Province, before over-run with Woods and Marshes; and dying in 824, was succeeded by his Son *Odoacer*, who enlarged his Dominions, and repulsed the *Normans*, who invaded his Coasts,

To *Odoacer* succeeded *Baldwin* his Son †, the First of that Name, surnamed *Iron-arm*, or the *Hardy*.— He was the first who obtained the Title of Count: for having married, in the Year 862, *Judith*, Daughter of *Charles* the Bald, King of *France*, (Widow of *Ethelwulph* the *Saxon* King of *England*) without his Consent, though with her own, and that of *Lewis* the Stammerer, her Brother; and having at length pacified the Anger of that King, and the Marriage being confirmed at *Auxerre* in 863, *Flanders* was given to him, with the Title of a County; whereupon he built the Castles of *Bruges* and *Gaunt*, the Capital of that County, and died in 877.

To him succeeded *Baldwin* §, the second Count of *Flanders*, his Son, surnamed the Bald §, who was also Count of *Bologna* and *St. Paul*.— He married *Alfrida*, youngest Daughter of *Alfred* the Great the famous *Saxon* King, and Law-giver of *England*, and died at *Gant* the second of *January*, 918 or 919.

*ARNULF*, the First of that Name ||, Count of *Flanders*, surnamed the Great, or the Elder, succeeded his

\* Anselm's Genealogies of France.

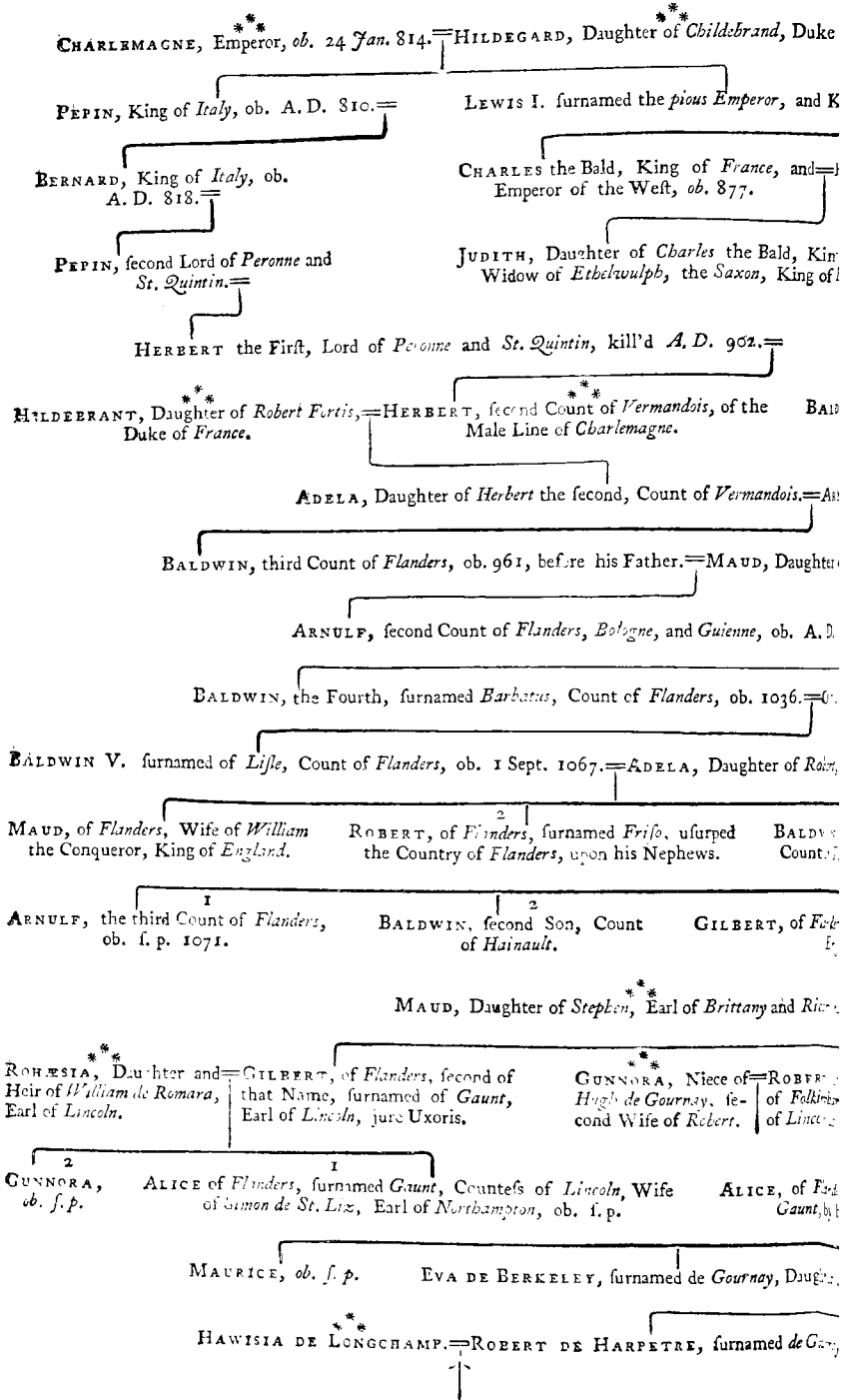
† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

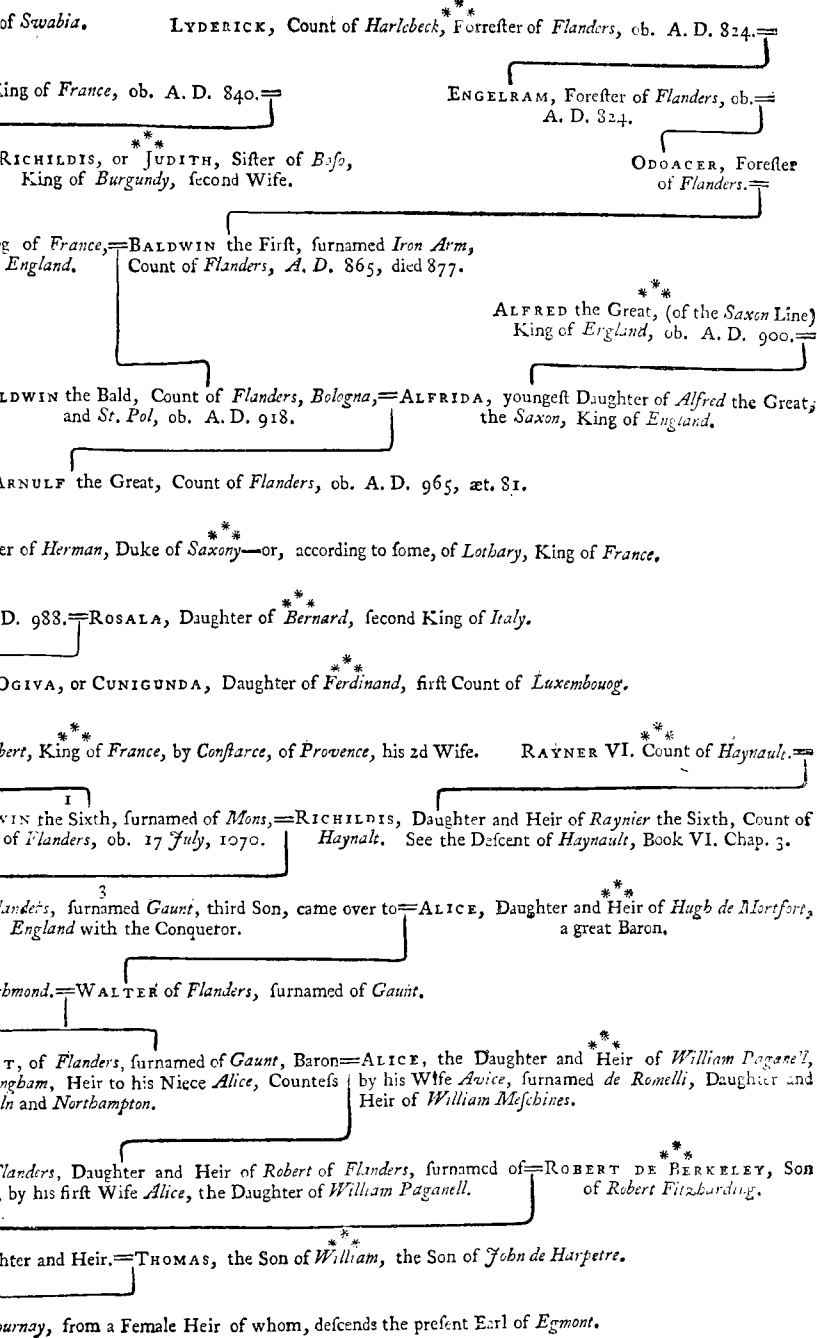
|| Ibid.



# Genealogy of the Earls of *Flanders*, and of the House of *Gaunt* descends the F



t. (a younger Branch thereof) through a Female Heir of which Earl of *Egmont*.



See the Continuation of this Descent, Book VII. through *Gournay*.



his Father, and had long and cruel Wars with the Emperor *Otho* the First, who had made himself Master of the Castle of *Gant*, which was at length restored to him in the Year 941.——Having also great Differences with *William*, the First of that Name, surnamed *Longespée*, Duke of *Normandy*, he treacherously caused him to be murdered, at a Conference in an Island of the *Somme*, near *Piquigny*, in 943.——He died on the twenty-second of *March*, 965, eighty-one Years old; leaving by *Adela*, Daughter of *Herbert* the Second, Count of *Vermandois* (descended in the Male Line from *Charlemayne*) and of his Wife *Hildebrante*, Daughter of *Robert Fortis*, Duke of *France*, Ancestor to the present Race of the *French Kings*, *Baldwin*, his Son and Heir.

*BALDWIN*, the Third of that Name\*, Count of *Flanders*, surnamed the Young, governed *Flanders* in the Life-time of his Father, but died before him, of the Small-Pox, the first of *January*, 961, at *Berg St. Winox*. He married *Maud*, the Daughter of *Conrade* the First, King of *Burgundy*, by his Wife *Maud*, the Daughter of *Lotbair*, King of *France*, of the *Carlovingian* Line; though others say, she was the Daughter of *Herman* Duke of *Saxony*.

His Son *Arnulph*, the Second of that Name, surnamed also the Young †, was the next Count of *Flanders*, and also of *Bologne* and *Guienne*, being born some Days after his Father's Death. King *Lotbair*, his Uncle by the Mother's Side, taking Advantage of his Minority, took Possession of some of his Cities, among the rest of *Doway* and *Arras*, which were at length, however, restored to him again.——He married *Rosala*, Daughter of *Beringer* the Second, King of *Italy*, and died in 988:

To him succeeded his Son, *Baldwin* the Fourth †, Count of *Flanders*, surnamed *Barbatus*, or, with the Beard; who subdued his rebellious Subjects of *Court-ray*; and having seized upon the Town of *Valenciennes*, defended

---

\* Anselm's Genealogies of France.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

defended it with great Bravery, against the united Forces of the Emperor, the King of *France*, and *Robert Duke of Normandy*; but afterwards he made his Peace, by his Submission to the Emperor, who gave him, in the Year 1007, as a Fief, the Castle of *Gant*, the County of *Waes*, and the four Districts or Mestiers of the Towns of *Halst*, *Axile*, *Bouchout*, and *Affenede*, situated in the Isle of *Walcke*, in *Zealand*, which he united to his County of *Flanders*.——He was deprived of his Territories by *Baldwin* the Fifth, his Son, but was restored again by the Aid of *Robert Duke of Normandy*.——He married *Ogiva*, called also *Cunnigunda*, Daughter of *Ferdinand* the First, Count of *Luxemburg*, of the Imperial House of that Line, and died on the thirtieth of *May*, 1036.

*BALDWIN*, the Fifth of that Name\*, surnamed of *Lisle*, or the *Pious*, or the *Debonaire*, Count and Marquis of *Flanders*, was a Prince of great Qualities, the Lustre of which was tarnished by his rebellious Practices against his Father.——He subdued the *Frisons* 1045.——He assisted *Geoffry Barbatous*, Duke of *Lorraine*, against the Emperor *Henry* the Third, and entering the County of *Hainault* by Force, obliged the Princess *Richildis*, Heiress of that Province, after the Death of her first Husband, to consent to marry his Son, *Baldwin* the Sixth; by which Marriage, that County was afterwards added to the Dominions of this House.——He afterwards did Homage to the Emperor *Henry* the Fourth, on the Day of his Coronation, at *Cologne*, for the Territories of *Valenciennes*, the Castle of *Gant*, *Alost*, and other Places, in 1057, which were then confirmed to him anew.——In 1060, upon the Death of *Henry* the First, King of *France*, he was appointed Regent of that Kingdom, during the Minority of *Philip* the First, who was Nephew to his Wife.——In 1066, he went over into *England*, to assist the Conqueror, his Son-in-law; for which Service he obtained a Pension for himself and his Successors,

of

---

\* Anselm's Genealogies of France.

of three hundred Marks of Silver, out of the Revenues of the Crown of *England*; which was afterward the Cause of long and bloody Differences between the Posterity of both Princes.—He died at *Lisle*, the first of *September*, 1067, leaving by *Adela*, Daughter of *Robert* King of *France*, and of *Constance* of *Provence*, his second Wife, among other Children, *Baldwin*, the Sixth of that Name, his Successor; *Robert*, surnamed *Friso*, who usurped the County of *Flanders*; and *Maud*, who was the Wife of *William* Duke of *Normandy*, and Conqueror of *England*.

*BALDWIN* the Sixth, Count of *Flanders*\*, Son of *Baldwin* the Fifth, of *Mons*, acquired *Tournay* from the Emperor *Henry* the Fourth; in 1057, he likewise added to his Dominions the Lordship of *Grandmont*, beyond the *Scheld*.—And marrying *Richildis*, Daughter of *Raynier*, the Sixth of that Name, Count of *Hainault*, Heiress of that County, died the seventeenth of *July*, 1070.

THIS *Baldwin*†, left three Sons, *Arnulf*, the Third of that Name, Count of *Flanders*, who was killed in the Battle of *Mont-Cassel*, upon the twentieth of *February*, 1071, his Territories being usurped by his Uncle *Robert Friso*, whose Posterity continued the Line of the Counts of *Flanders*, to the Prejudice of the true Heirs, *Baldwin* and *Gilbert*, the younger Sons of *Baldwin* the Sixth.—Of these, *Baldwin* obtained the County of *Hainault*, which his Posterity long enjoyed.—And *Gilbert*, surnamed *de Gant*, was the Ancestor of the House of *Gant* and *Montford*, in *England*, of which we here particularly treat, whose Pretensions are fallen, through Heiresses, to that Branch of the House of *Yvery*, or *Perceval*, of which the Earl of *Egmont* is the Chief.

BUT before we proceed farther with the Account of this great House, we must observe, that the Truth  
of

---

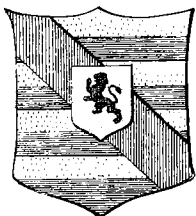
\* Anselm's Genealogies of France.

† Ibid.



of this Descent has been somewhat obscured, by the Supposition of *Duchefne*, in his History of the House of *Guisnes* and *Gant*; for not having seen the positive Authority upon which we ground this Deduction, which, indeed, did not come to light till long after he wrote. — He has derived the House of *Gant*, by Conjecture only, from an ancient Family so called in *Flanders*; which Surmise is entirely defeated, by that authentic Record which is cited in the first Volume of the *Monasticon Anglicanum*, fol. 833.

HAVING therefore cleared up this important Error, we return to *Gilbert*, surnamed *de Gant*, the third Son of *Baldwin* the Sixth, surnamed of *Mons*, Count of *Flanders*, and *Richildis*, Countess of *Hainault*, his Wife.



THIS *Gilbert de Gant*, being Son to *Baldwin* the Sixth, Earl of *Flanders*, and *Richildis*, Heiress of *Hainault*, his Wife, and also Nephew to *William* Duke of *Normandy*, (*Maud*, Wife to the same Duke, being Sister to that *Baldwin*) came into *England* with him, and assisting in that

signal Conquest, had the Lands of one *Tour a Dane*\*, given to him, as also much more; for at the Time of the General Survey it appeareth, that he was possessed of one Lordship in *Berkshire*, two in *Oxfordshire*, three in *Yorkshire*, six in *Cambridgeshire*, two in *Buckinghamshire*, one in *Huntingtonshire*, five in *Northamptonshire*, one in *Rutland*, one in *Leicestershire*, one in *Warwickshire*, eighteen in *Nottinghamshire*, and an hundred and thirty in *Lincolnshire*, of which *Folkingham* was one, where he seated himself, that being the Head of his Barony.

THIS

---

\* Dugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Gant. and Monast. Angl. Vol. I. fol. 833, 834.

THIS *Gilbert de Gant* being at *York* †, in the Year 1069, (the third of *William* the Conqueror) when the *Danes* with a mighty Power having entered the Mouth of the *Humber*, advanced to that City (on the behalf of *Edgor Etheeling*) and made a lamentable Destruction by Fire and Sword, (there being more than three thousand of the *Normans* then slain) was one of those few who escaped with Life.

HE was the pious Restorer of *Bardney-Abby* \* in *Lincolnshire*, (utterly destroyed by *Inguar* and *Hubba*, the Pagan *Danes* many Years before) which he rebuilt and amply endowed with Lands and Tythes. Moreover, he gave to the Abbey of *St. Maries* at *York*, ten Bovates of Land lying in *Ferriby*, five Bovates also in *Vinle* to the Knights-Templars, and nine in *Scanton*. And married *Alice*, Daughter and Heir to *Hugh de Montfort* (a great Baron in that Age) by whom he left Issue three Sons †, *Walter*, *Hugh*, (who taking his Mother's Name, was Founder of that great Family, which long flourished in this Realm, under the Title of Barons *Montfort* of *Beldefert*;) and *Robert*, (who was Chancellor of *England*;) as also a Daughter named *Emma*, married to *Allan* Lord *Percie*, and departing this Life in the time of King *William Rufus*, was buried at *Bardney*.

To him succeeded in that Barony *Walter* his Son and Heir §, a Person of great Humanity and Piety; who when he was an aged Man, and near his Death, commanded a brave Regiment of *Flemings* and *Normans* in that famous Battle against the *Scots* \*\*, near *North-Alverton* in *Yorkshire*, commonly called *Bellum-Standardi*; where, by his eloquent Speech and prudent Conduct, the whole Army received such Encouragement; that the *Scots* were utterly vanquished. —

† Bugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Gant.

\* Ibid.

† Vide Dugdale, sub tit. de Montfort de Beldefert; also Will. Gemeticensis.

§ Dugdale, sub tit. Montfort de Beldefert.

\*\* Ibid. sub tit. Gant.

This *Walter* added more Buildings to the Abbey of *Bradney*, which his Father had restored, and farther endowed it with Lands and Tithes.

HE likewise founded the Priory of *Bridlington* \* in *Yorkshire*, and gave unto it large Possessions; and taking to Wife *Maud*, Daughter of *Stephen* Earl of *Brittany* (and *Richmund*) had with her all *Swalldale* in *Frank-marriage*; and departing this Life in the fourth Year of King *Stephen*, left Issue *Gilbert*, *Robert*, and *Geffry*,

WHICH *Gilbert*, in his Youth †, being with King *Stephen* in that fatal Battle of *Lincoln*, Anno 1142, (the sixth of King *Stephen*) was with him taken Prisoner; and therefore compelled by *Ranulf* Earl of *Chester*, to marry his Niece, viz. *Robais*, or as some call her, *Hawise*, Daughter and Heir to *William de Romare*, Earl of *Lincoln*, whereby he had the Title of Earl of *Lincoln* in her Right.

AFTER which he founded the Abbey of *Rufford* in *Nottinghamshire* §, Anno 1148 (13 *Steph.*) and in Recompence of that Damage occasioned to the Monks of *Pomfret* by reason of the War, which he had with *Henry de Lacy*, he gave unto them the Benefit of his Ferry at *South-Ferriby*, as also three Ox-gangs and an half of Land, with fourteen Houses in that Town; whereupon he was received into their Fraternity, and made Partaker of all their Benefits.

HE likewise, at the Request of Pope *Eugenius* and *Bernard*, Abbot of *Clarevaulx* ||, gave to the Monks of *Bibam*, in *Lincolnshire*, all his Land called *Braethuait*, lying in the Territory of *Edenbam*, whereunto those Monks translating their Abbey, thenceforth calling it *Vallis-Dei*, or *Valdei*: as also divers other Lands and Woods near adjoining. Moreover, he gave those three Carucates of Land, whereon the Priory of *Sempringham* in *Lincolnshire* was founded by that devout Man Saint *Gilbert*, and was a liberal Benefactor to the Abby of *Bardney* before-mentioned.

LIKE-

\* Dugdale, sub tit. Gant.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

|| Ibid.

LIKEWISE \*, considering with himself, that in his tender Years he had been educated in the Priory of *Bridlington*, (which was of his Father's Foundation) by a special Charter he gave his Body to be buried there. — Expressing thereby, that whenever it should please God to move his Heart so as to quit the Vanities of this World, and to retire to a religious Course of Life, his Purpose was to take the Habit of a Canon Regular in that Monastery, wherein he had been baptized, and brought up from his Infancy. He died in *Anno 1156*, (the second of *Henry the Second*) leaving Issue two Daughters, *Alice*, the Wife of *Simon de St. Lize*, (the last of that Name) Earl of *Huntingdon* and *Northampton*; and *Gunnora*; but neither of them having any Issue, the Inheritance of this great Family returned to || *Robert de Gant*, their Uncle.

WHICH *Robert*, in the fourteenth of *Henry the Second* †, paid Eleven Pounds, six Shillings and eight-pence, unto the Aid then collected for Marriage of the King's Daughter. And in the thirty-first of *Henry the Second*, acknowledged himself a Debtor in six hundred thirty-three Pounds, six Shillings and eight pence, as a Fine for his Lands, and that the Lands he should recover, which Earl *Simon* gave, might be in the King's Hands, (if the King so pleased;) for the Payment of which Money, he assigned to the King an hundred Marks Land *per ann.* in *Folkingham*, *Edingham*, *Eckinton*, and *Barton*, in the County of *Lincoln*; to return to him again, when the before-specified Sum should be paid.

MOREOVER, in the third of *Richard the First* §, he was charged as Debtor to the King in six hundred Marks, that he might have a Trial for those Lands which Earl *Simon* had given him; but it was then considered by the Barons, that neither his Heir, nor any other, should be summoned, until he should be of Age to plead.

BUT

---

\* Dugdale, sub tit. Gant.

|| Placit. 27 Hen. III. rot. 13. *Lincoln de Serviliis Willm<sup>i</sup> de Scremby.*

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

BUT in the same Year, or in the beginning of that which next ensued, he died \*, leaving Issue by his first Wife *Alice*, the Daughter and Heir of *William Paganell*, and of *Avice*, commonly called *de Romelli*, (Daughter and Coheir of *William Meschines*, Lord of *Copeland*, and Brother to *Ranulph*, Earl of *Chester*,) one sole Daughter, his Heir, named also *Alice*, who was the Wife of *Robert* the First, Son of *Robert Fitzbarding*, of the House of *Berkeley*, before treated of, in the Article of that House.

IN the second of King *John*, a Suit at Law was commenced between *Nicholas de Stuteville*, and *Gunnora* his Wife †, (who was the Widow, and had been the second Wife of the last-named *Robert de Gant*) on the one Part, and the Heir of the first Wife of the said *Robert*, the Son of *Robert Fitzbarding*, on the other Part ; to decide whether the said *Nicholas* and *Gunnora* had any Right of Entry in the Town of *Sauteby*, with its Appurtenances, but through *Robert de Gant*, the former Husband of the said *Gunnora* ; which *Robert de Gant* is there said to have had no Right in the same, but in Title of *Alice Painell*, the Grandmother of *Maurice*, the Son of *Robert* the younger, *i. e.* the Son of *Robert Fitzbarding* : which *Alice Painell*, the Record there says, had been the first Wife of the said *Robert de Gant*, and had brought him her whole Inheritance. ——— But, for what Cause doth not appear, this Suit was respited for that Time.

FOR the farther Account that may be given of *Robert* the younger, the Son of *Robert Fitzbarding*, or *Berkeley*, who married the said Heirefs of *Gant*, and of his Posterity, we shall refer to that part of this Work in which we have treated of the Noble Family of *Berkeley*, of which he was a younger Son. ——— From whom, as we have there observed, (through the Heireffes of *Berkeley*, *Gournay*, and *Delamore*) descends the present Earl of *Egmont*.

AND

---

\* Rot. Pip. 4 Ric. I. Ebor. de Novo Oblatis. And Placit. Term. Mich. 2 Johan. Rot. 4. and Claus. 8 Johan. m. 4.

† Ibid.

AND having now by this Deduction cleared up those Mistakes which have been made in the Descent of this House\*, with respect of the Issue of the aforesaid *Robert de Gant*, Lord of *Folkingham*, by his first Wife, the Daughter and Heir of *William Paganell*; we come next to treat of that which proceeded from his second Marriage with *Gunnora*, the Niece of *Hugh de Gournay*, who afterwards became the Wife of *Nicholas de Stuteville*.—By this Lady he left two Sons, *Gilbert*, surnamed the Good; and *Stephen*, who, with his said Brother, adhered to the rebellious Barons, about the latter End of King *John's* Reign.—Which *Gilbert* being under Age in the ninth of *Richard* the First, was in Ward to *William de Stuteville*: and in the thirteenth of King *John*, answered for sixty-eight Knights Fees, a third and fifth Part, upon levying the Scutage of *Scotland*. But in the Year 1216, which was the last Year of King *John*, he was one of those rebellious Barons that adhered to *Lewis* King of *France*, then called in, with purpose to be made King: and coming to *London* to him (upon his Return from *Essex*, *Suffolk*, and *Norfolk*, with much Plunder of those Counties) was by him constituted Earl of *Lincoln*; and thereupon sent into *Nottinghamshire*, to restrain the Irruption of those Soldiers of King *John's*, then in the Castles of *Nottingham* and *Newark*, who did much Mischiefe upon the rebellious Barons Houses in those Parts.—Shortly after which, by the Help of *Robert de Ropesse*, he took the City of *Lincoln*, and subdued all those Parts, excepting the Castle; so likewise all *Holland*; and then laid Siege to the Castle itself.

WHEREUPON †, the King made Seizure of all his Lands, lying in the Counties of *York*, *Lincoln*, *Cambridge*, *Essex*, and *Northampton*, and disposed of them to *Gerard de Rodes*, and committed him Prisoner to *William* Earl of *Albemarle*. But upon the Peace made in the first of *Henry* the Third, he had his Liberty.

Not-

---

\* Dugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Gant.

† Ibid.

Notwithstanding which, he in no wise restrained his violent Courses; so that the famous *William Marshall* (then made Governor of the young King and Kingdom) was necessitated to hasten towards *Lincoln*, with what Force he could raise, where giving Battle to the Enemy, he obtained a glorious Victory, taking many of them Prisoners, among whom this *Gilbert de Gant* was one. But after that Time, we have seen nothing memorable of him till his Death, which happened in the twenty-sixth of *Henry* the Third; and that he left Issue *Gilbert*. — Which *Gilbert* paying one hundred Pounds for his Relief, had Livery of the Lands which he held of the King *in Capite*; and at the same Time also paid a Fine of two hundred Marks (over and above his ordinary Escuage) to free him from Attendance of the King into *Gascoigne*.

IN the twenty-ninth of *Henry* the Third \*, he gave sixty-eight Pounds, for sixty Knights Fees, and a third Part, upon Collection of the Aid for Marriage of the King's Daughter. And in the thirty-eighth of *Henry* the Third, one hundred thirty-seven Pounds, one Shilling and four Pence, for sixty-eight Knights Fees, an half a third and sixth Part, upon Payment of the Aid, upon making the King's eldest Son a Knight.

MOREOVER, in the forty-second of *Henry* the Third §, he was made Governor of *Scardeburgh-Castle*. So likewise, in the forty-third of *Henry* the Third, being one of the rebellious Barons then in Arms against the King, he was taken at *Kenelworth*, and gave no less than three thousand Marks Fine for the Redemption of his Lands; whereupon, the fifty-second of *Henry* the Third, the King received him into Favour again.

BUT not long after this †, he died at *Folkingham*, on the Nones of *January*, Anno 1274, (2 *Edw.* I.) and was buried in the Priory at *Bridlington*, leaving Issue *Gilbert*, (for another Son named *Robert* died in his Life-time,) and three Daughters, *viz.* *Margaret*,  
Wife

---

\* Dugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Gant.

§ Ibid.

† Ibid.

Wife of *William de Kerdeston*; *Nichola*, Wife of *Peter de Mauley*; and *Julian*, who died unmarried.

By the Inquisition taken upon his Death \*, it was found that he held the Lordship of *Hundemanby* in *Yorkshire*, by Baronage; likewise, that upon the Marriage of *Gilbert* his Son with *Lora de Baliol*, he settled it upon her for her Dowry: and he died seised of the Manor of *Helagh* in *Swaledale*; so likewise of the Lordship of *Folkingham*, the Head of his Barony, and of *Hekynton*, *Haddenham*, *Skendelby*, and *Barton* upon *Humber*, in *Com. Lincoln*, and of the Ferry there.— To him succeeded *Gilbert* his Son and Heir, then twenty-four Years of Age, who, doing his Homage, had Livery of his Lands.— This *Gilbert*, commonly called *Gilbert* the Fifth, was in that Expedition made into *Wales*, in the tenth of *Edward* the First. And in the twenty-second of *Edward* the First, had Summons personally to attend the King, with all Speed, for advising of the weighty Affairs of this Realm.— Soon after which †, he received another Summons to repair to *Portsmouth* upon the first of *September*, well accoutred with Horse and Arms, thence to go with him into *Gascoigne*.

In the twenty-fifth of *Edward* the First §, he attended that King into *Flanders*.

In the twenty-fourth and twenty-sixth of *Edward* the First ||, he had Summons to Parliament, among other of the Barons.

He married *Lora* §, the Sister of *Alexander de Baliol*; but having no Issue by her, constituted King *Edward* the First his Heir, to the Lands of his Barony, viz. *Folkingham*, *Barton*, *Heckynnton*, and *Edenham*; retaining nothing but *Swaledale*, and his Portion of *Skendelby*. And in the twenty-sixth of *Edward* the First, departed this Life; whereupon *Roger*, the Son of *William de Kerdeston*, then twenty-four Years of Age,

---

\* Dugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Gant.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

|| Ibid.

‡ Ibid.



Age, and *Julian de Gant*, Sister to the said *Gilbert*, at that Time forty Years of Age, were found to be his next Heirs.

BUT of these Coheirs, it seems that *Peter*, the Son of *Peter de Mauley*\*, died without Issue, in the same Year; for upon the Partition of that Inheritance, the said *Roger*, the Son of *William de Kerdeston*, and *Julian*, doing their Homage, had alone Livery of those Lands whereof he died seised, (the Lordships of *Barton upon Humber*, *Folkingham*, *Heckington*, and *Edenham*, excepted, which were in the King's Hands, by virtue of the Gift before specified.)

BUT *Lora*, his Widow †, out of these had assigned for her Dower, the Lordship of *Heckyngton*, and nine Pounds three Shillings and four-pence Farthing, as a yearly Seck-Rent out of *Edenham*, for her Life; which *Lora* died in the second of *Edward* the Second, leaving *Julian*, her Sister-in-law, surviving; who dying unmarried, gave all her Inheritance, viz. certain Lands in *Skendelby*, to the Nuns at *Nun-Coram*, in Pure Alms.

FROM whence it should also seem, that the said *Roger de Kederston*, Son of *William*, and his Issue, had likewise by that Time failed, or otherwise, after the Death of the said *Lora*, Part of her Jointure would have gone in Partition to the said Family of *Kerdeston*, as well as to *Julian de Gant*, his Aunt; which not appearing, we presume from thence, that the Family of *Kerdeston* was continued by another Branch: and that the Issue of *Robert de Gant*, Baron of *Folkingham*, by his second Wife, was intirely determined upon the Death of the said *Julian* his Great-Granddaughter.

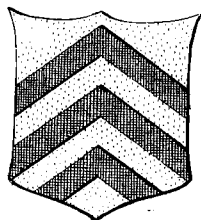
WE

---

\* Miscellan. B. 2. in Officio Armor. Londini, per Glover, Somerset.

† Ibid.

WE come in the next Place to treat of the House of *Hainault*; the Heirés of which having married into that of *Flanders*, or *Gant*, delivered down, through that Channel, its Blood and Arms to the Ancestor of the present Earl of *Egmont*. A Sovereign House of great Possessions, and of



such Antiquity, that if we may credit the major part of the Genealogists †, it may dispute Preheminence, with any Sovereign Family in *Europe*.

As to the Territory of this House, it was one of the seventeen Provinces of the Low-Countries, which probably derived its Name from the River *Hayne*, which passes through it, and empties itself into the *Scheld* at *Condè*. This Country is twenty Leagues long, and sixteen broad, bounded on the North by *Brabant* and *Flanders*, on the South by *Picardy* and *Champagne*, on the East by a Part of *Brabant* and the County of *Namur*, and on the West by the *Scheld* \*, which divides it from *Artois*, and a Part of the *French Flanders*. ——— It consists at present of the *Prevoès*, *Chatellany*, and Bailiwicks of *Mons*, *Valenciennes*, *Le Quesnoy*, *Maubeuge*, *Binch*, *Bouchain*, *Brain le Comte*, *Ash*, the Peerage of *Avesnes*, the Principality of *Chimay*, the Bailiwick of *Engheim*, and the Lands of *Lessines*, with the Towns and Places of *Conde Landrecy*, *Phillippeville*, *Mariembourg*, *St. Guillain*, and *Hall*; most of which, excepting *Mons*, the Capital of this Country, and some others which belong to the *Dutch*, are now comprehended in the Government of *French Flanders*.

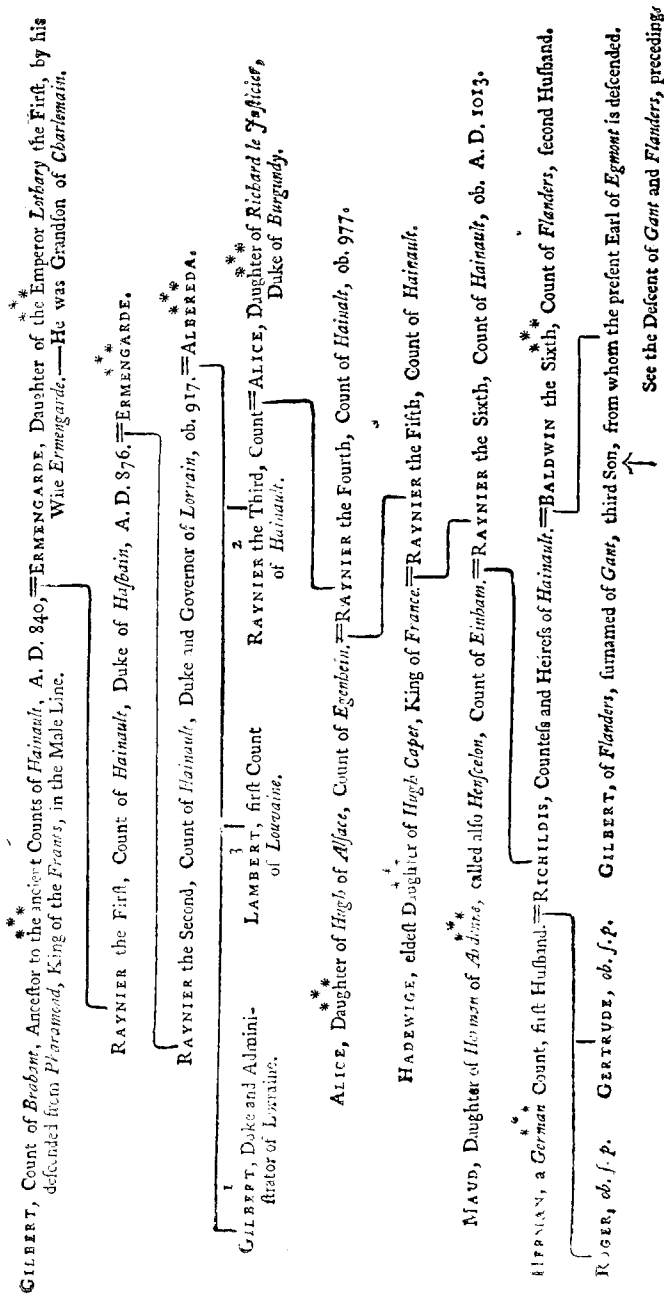
As to the Descent of this great House, most Writers have concurred in Opinion, that it is derived in a direct Male Line from *Pharamond* §, King of the *Franks*,

† Anselm's Genealogies of France.

\* Ibid.

§ Ibid.

Genealogy of the Sovereign Counts of HAINAULT, from the Heir Female of which, through those of Flanders, (or Gant) Gournay, and Delamore, descends the present Earl of EGMONT.



who died in the Year 425 after Christ.——But as it has been our constant Rule to confine ourselves to nothing but what is most fully proved, and incontestible, we shall take up our Account no higher than with *Gilbert* Count of *Brabant*, who lived about the Year 800; and is the first of this House mentioned by *Father Anselm*, in his Genealogical History of *France*. An Author we shall solely follow, with respect to this House, being the most faithful and judicious Writer that has appeared in this Way.

It was this *Gilbert* \*, who, as he pretends, was Ancestor to the ancient House of *Lorraine*, and to this of *Hainault*.——It is said that he bore the Title of Count of the *Mensuarii*, which is in reality no Government, but a Charge simular to that of Grand-Marshal of the Household. He was very eminent in the Wars, which happened between the Children of the Emperor *Lewis le Debonnaire*, and at first adhered to the Emperor *Lothary*, but was afterwards engaged on the Side of King *Charles*, and was one of the greatest Lords of his Court.——And he at length so far presumed upon the Credit he was in, that he carried off, and married *Ermengarde*, the Daughter of the Emperor *Lothary*, and returned with her into *Aquitain*, in the Year 846.——But this Marriage was very much resented by King *Charles*, and thereupon ensued a War, which lasted two Years, till at length the Dispute was amicably adjusted at *Thionville*, in 848, by the Mediation of *Lewis* King of *Germany*, Brother of the said *Charles*; and the said *Gilbert* was restored to his Estate and Dignity.

To him succeeded his Son, *Raynier* the First, Count of *Hainault*, and Duke of *Hasbain*, furnamed With the Long-neck.——He gallantly resisted the Attempts of *Rollo*, then General of the *Normans*, and afterwards first Duke of *Normandy*, who having invaded the Island of *Walkarie*, in *Zealand*, in the Year  
876,

---

\* *Anselm's Genealogies of Feance.*

† *Ibid.*

876, endeavoured to fortify and establish himself in those Parts.— But two Years after this, Count *Raynier* was taken Prisoner by the said *Rollo* at *Condè*, in *Hainault*, upon the Confluence of the *Scarpe* and *Scheld*; who generously restored him to his Liberty, and very honourably suffered him to return home to his Wife.—It is not absolutely certain, whether it was this *Raynier*, or his Son of the same Name, who followed the Cause of *Zuendebold*, King of *Lorraine*, in the Year 898, which he quitted afterwards, (being ill-treated by that Prince) and took the Part of *Charles* the Simple, King of *France*.—He left by *Ermengarde* his Wife, whose Family is not recorded, one Son, named also *Raynier*.

*RAYNIER* the Second \*, Count of *Hainault*, followed all his Life the Fortunes of *Charles* the Simple, who having recovered *Lorraine* in 912, or 913, upon the Death of *Lewis* the Third, King of *Germany* and *Lorraine*, made him Duke of that Province.— He died in the Year 917, much regretted by that Prince, who, to testify his Regard to him, continued his Son in the Posts which he had conferred upon the Father.— The Name of his Wife was *Albereda*, by whom he left three Sons, *Gilbert*, *Raynier*, and *Lambert*, and a Daughter named *Symphoriana*, who became the Wife of *Berenger*, Count of *Namur*.

*GILBERT* †, the eldest Son, was also Duke and Administrator of *Lorraine*, and was Founder of the ancient Dukes of *Lorraine*, whose Descent is not to our Purpose to follow here.— Nor that of *Lambert*, the third Son, who was Count of *Louvaine*.— The Descent in which we are concerned in this Placé, is from

*RAYNIER* §, the second Son, the Third of that Name, who was Count of *Hainault*, having that Province for his Portion; but living usually in the Town and Castle of *Mons*, is frequently known by the Title of Count of *Mons*.— He quarrelled with *Gilbert* Duke

---

\* Anselm's Genealogies of France.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

Duke of *Lorraine*, his Brother, who supported the Interests of *Boso*, Count of *Burgundy*, engaged in Battle with him, and took him Prisoner, in the Year 924. But they were afterwards reconciled in 928, by the Interposition of *Henry* the First, surnamed the Fowler, Emperor of *Germany*. — By his Wife *Alice*, the Daughter of *Richard*, surnamed *le Justicier*, Duke of *Burgundy*, he left *Raynier* the Fourth, Count of *Hainault*; and another Son, *Rodolph*, Count of *Habsain*.

*RAYNIER*\*, Count of *Hainault*, the Fourth of that Name, surnamed also With the Long-neck, together with his Brother *Rodolph*, adhered to the Party of King *Lewis*, surnamed *Outremer*, in 944. — *Conrade*, Duke of *Lorraine*, who was engaged on the Side of the Emperor *Otho* the First, took from him one of his Castles, in 951, and besieged several others. But in 957, he defeated the Duke, who returned the next Year, and ravaged the County of *Hainault*. In 959, he was taken Prisoner at *Valenciennes*, by *Bruno*, Archbishop of *Cologne*, and Arch-Duke of *Lorraine*, Brother to the Emperor *Otho* the First, and sent into Banishment, not only for his Intrigues, and the Disorders which his active Spirit occasioned, but for having attempted to deprive Queen *Gerberga*, Widow of his Uncle *Gilbert*, Duke of *Lorraine*, of her Dower. — He died in 977, leaving by his Wife *Alice*, Daughter of *Hugh* of *Alsace*, Count of *Egenbein*, *Raynier* the Fifth his Heir, and *Lambert*, from whom proceeded the ancient Dukes of *Brabant*.

*RAYNIER*, the Fifth of that Name §, upon the Misfortune of his Father, retired with his Brother *Lambert*, to *Lothary*, King of *France*, where they were received with great Humanity. — Sometime after, by the Assistance of *French* Troops, this *Raynier* defeated the Counts *Garnier* and *Renald*† in 973, at the Battle of *Perrone*, and afterwards attacked the Counts *Godfrey* and *Arnulf*, who had made themselves  
Masters

---

\* Anselm's Genealogies of France.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

64 *A Genealogical History*

Masters of the County of *Mons*, and forced the first of these to surrender, upon *Wednesday* the nineteenth of *April*, 976. He died about the Year 1013, leaving by his Wife *Hadevige*, eldest Daughter of *Hugh Capet*, King of *France*, by *Adelaide* of *Guyenne*,

*RAYNIER* \*, the Sixth of that Name, Count of *Hainault*, who succeeded his Father in the County of *Hainault*, the Town and County of *Mons*, and a good Part of *Brabant*; he espoused the Interest of *Lambert*, Count of *Louvain*, in that Difference which he had with *Godfrey*, Duke of *Lorraine*, against whom they lost the Battle of *Florines*, the twelfth of *September*, 1015.—At his Request, the Emperor *Henry* took the Church of *St. Guillain* under his Protection, which afterwards caused a long Dispute between him and the Bishop of *Cambray*.—It is believed that the Emperor *Conrade* the Second, gave him the County of *Valenciennes*, which he had formerly taken from *Baldwin* the Fourth, Count of *Flanders*; upon which followed a War between the Counts of *Hainault* and *Flanders*; and, in the Year 1033, the Ruin of his Castle of *Eingham*, which belonged to him in right of his Wife. He removed the Relics of *Verona* from *Lambert* to *Mons*, to preserve them from the Enemy; and died about the Year 1037; leaving by *Maud* his Wife, Daughter of *Herman*, or *Henseelom* of *Arden*, or *Lower Lorraine*, Count of *Eingham*, and of *N. N. Afbourg*, a sole Daughter, his Heiress, named *Richildis*.

*RICHILDIS*, Countess of *Hainault*, *Mons*, *Brabant*, and *Valenciennes* §; was first married to *Herman*, Count of *Turingia* in *Germany*, with whom she had great Differences in the Year 1046, and continued till the Year 1049, when they were adjusted by the Mediation of Pope *Leo* the Ninth. This Count *Horman* died in the Year following 1050, leaving by this Lady a Son named *Roger*, and a Daughter *Gertrude*,

---

\* Anselm's Genealogies of France.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

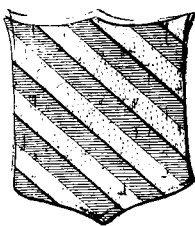
trude, both died without Issue.—Her second Husband was *Baldwin* the Sixth, Count of *Flanders*, to whom, and his Posterity, she brought this great Inheritance.

OF her Children we have already spoken in the last Article; we have therefore only to add, that *Gilbert* of *Flanders*, her third Son, surnamed *de Gant*, coming over into *England* with the Conqueror, was Founder of the great Family of that Name\*; the Heiress of which marrying *Robert de Berkeley*, second Brother to *Maurice*, the first Lord *Berkeley*; and the Heiress of the said *Robert de Berkeley*, marrying *Thomas de Harpetre*, alias *Gournay*; and the Heiress of *Gournay* marrying *Delamore*, or *Bythemore*, the House of *Perceval*, by the last named Family, acquired a Right of Blood and Arms of this Illustrious House.

THE next Family to be deduced, according to the Order proposed, is that of *Montfort*, great Barons of this Realm; of which Sir *William Dugdale* gives the following Account.

THE first of this Family of whom we find mention, is *Hugh de Montfort*, Son of *Thurstan de Bastenberg*, a *Norman*†; which *Hugh* was commonly called *Hugh with a Beard*, (the *Normans* at that Time being annually shaved;) and accompanying *William* Duke of *Normandy*, when he first landed in this Realm, was with him in that famous Battle against King *Harold*, where the Duke, then Conqueror, was advanced to the Regal Throne of this Realm; and shortly after, (being a valiant

MONTFORT.

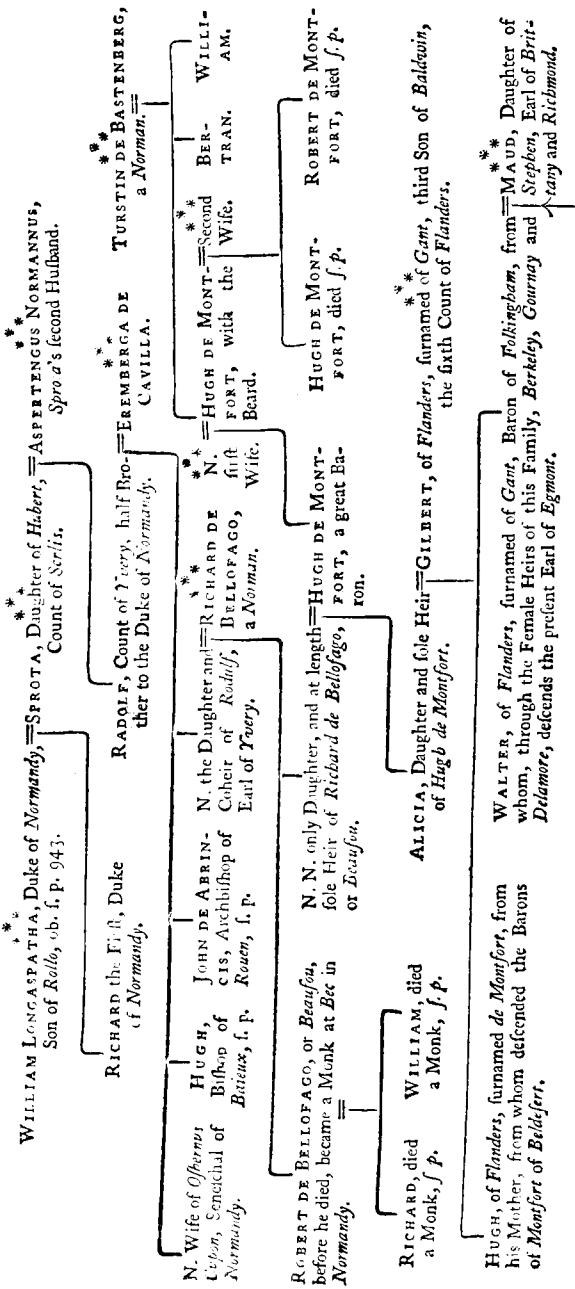


\* Anselm's Genealogies of France.

† Note, that this Descent of Montfort, with that of Bellofago and Yvery, are all contained in the History of Will. Gemeticensis, published by Du Chesne, fol. 288, & 289.



Genealogy of the ancient Counts of YVERY, and of the Great Houses of BELLOFAGO and MONTFORT, from the Female Heirs of whom descends the present Earl of EGDMONT.



valiant and expert Soldier) received express Commands with some others, to be assistant to *William Fitz-Osborn*, and *Odo*, Bishop of *Baieux*, in the administering public Justice throughout the whole Kingdom; for which great Services he obtained divers fair Lordships, as appears by the general Survey, viz. twenty-eight in *Kent*, besides a large Proportion of *Romney-Marsh*; sixteen in *Essex*, fifty-one in *Suffolk*, and nineteen in *Norfolk*: but at length he lost his Life in a Duel with *Walcbeline de Ferrers*, leaving Issue *Hugh*, his only Son and Heir.

WHICH *Hugh*\*, by —— his first Wife, had Issue two Sons, *Robert*, and *Hugh*. Which *Robert* was General of the Army to King *William Rufus*, in the twelfth of his Reign; but favouring the Title of *Robert Curthose*, in Opposition to King *Henry* the First, was called in question for his Infidelity; whereupon, being conscious of his Guilt, he got Leave to go to *Jerusalem*, and left all his Possessions to the King.

THIS *Robert* gave to the Monks of *Beck* in *Normandy*†, the Churches of *Montfort*, *Apevil*, and *Froulancurt*. But both he and his Brother *Hugh* died in a Pilgrimage, without Issue. *Hugh* the Father, by his second Wife, the Daughter, and at length sole Heir, of *Richard de Bellofago*, or *Beaufou*, a noble *Norman*, left only one Daughter, his Heir, married to *Gilbert de Gant*.

WHICH *Gilbert de Gant*§, as we have already shewn in our Account of that Family, left Issue by that Lady three Sons, *Hugh*, *Walter*, and *Robert*, and a Daughter *Emma*, married to *Alan* Lord *Perci*; of which Sons, *Hugh*, his Mother being so great an Heiress, assumed her Surname, which he delivered to his Descendants, who were among the greatest Barons of the Realm, and had their chief Seat at *Beldesert*, in the County of *Warwick*.——And from *Walter* his Brother, to whom the Surname of *Gant* remained, descended that House of *Gant*, so famous in this Kingdom: whose Representative, through the Female Heir,

\* Will. Gemet.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

in the Manner we have already shewn, is the present Earl of *Egmont*.

BELLOFAGO,  
or,  
BEAUFOU,



THE next Heirefs of whom we come to treat of, is *Bellofago*, or *Beaufou*, a Norman House, no doubt of the first Distinction, since *Richard de Bellofago*, or *Beaufou* §, married the Daughter and Coheir of *Ralf* Earl of *Yvery*, who was half Brother to *Richard* the First, Duke of *Normandy*; the other Coheir being the Wife of *Osbernus Crepon*, Senechal of *Normandy*, Ance-

stor to the Earl of *Breteuil* in *Normandy*, and *Hereford* in *England*; of whose Dignity we have already spoken, in the Chapter of *Alliances of the House of Yvery*, and from whom also the present Earl of *Egmont* is descended †.

|| BUT the great Antiquity to which we are now carried, prevents our giving any farther Account of this Family of *Bellofago*, which flourished above a hundred Years before the Conquest. All that we shall add therefore, with relation to it, is, that the said *Richard* having married, as we have before observed, the Daughter and Coheir of *Kalpb* Earl of *Yvery*, left by her a Son named *Robert de Bellofago*, or *Beaufou*, and one Daughter, married to *Hugh de Montfort*, called the second, of whom we have lately spoken.

THIS *Robert de Bellofago*, or *Beaufou*, at length was shorn a Monk, in the Abby of *Beck* in *Normandy*; which was a frequent Practice with the greatest Families

§ Will. Gemet. ut supra.

† Note, that this Coat is usually blazoned thus, The Field Argent, without the Billets, and white Billets charged upon the red Lyon.

See these Arms in the History of the House of Harcourt, Vol. I.

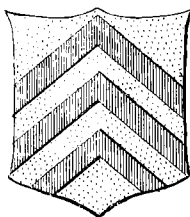
|| See some farther Account of this Family, in the History of the House of Harcourt, by La Roque, Vol. I.

lies in that superstitious Time. But having been married before, he left two Sons, *Richard* and *William*, who both pursuing the Example of their Father, became also Monks in the same Monastery; and dying without Issue, the whole Rights of this House descended to the House of *Montfort*, by Means of the Marriage before observed; and from thence to *Gant*; through which, by the Channel of other Heireffes, as we have shewn already, they devolved upon that Branch of the House of *Yvery*, of which the present Earl of *Egmont* is the Chief.

THE Family next in order, is that of the ancient Earls of *Yvery* in *Normandy*.

IT has been already observed in the first and second Books of this Work, how the Earldom of *Yvery* came into the House of *Perceval*\*, soon after the Conquest, by reason partly of the Rebellion of *Eustace* Earl of *Pacy*, natural Son of *William* Earl of *Breteuil*, and partly in Consideration of the Alliance of *Ascelin Gouel de Percheval* with the said Earl of *Breteuil*; that Degree of Relation being doubtless the Reason why, upon the Offence and Forfeiture of the said *Eustace*, King *Henry* the First conferred that Noble Territory on the said *Ascelin*. And we have also shewn how the said Earldom came to the House of *Breteuil*, by the Marriage of *Osbern Crepon*, Ancestor to that Family, with the eldest Daughter and Cohair of *Ralf* Earl of *Yvery*.— It must be noted, therefore here, that the House of *Yvery* of which we treat in this Place, is of a distinct Original in the Male Line, from that of *Perceval*, which derived their Surname of *Yvery* from a Female of the former.

YVERY.



THE

---

\* Will. Gemet.—Vide etiam Vol. I. Book II. Chap. II.

THE House of *Yvery* here mentioned, is deduced from *Asperleng*, a *Norman*, of immense Riches, who marrying *Sprotta*, the Widow of *William Longaspatha*, Duke of *Normandy*, (the Son of *Rollo*) and Daughter, as it is said, of *Hubert*, and Sister of *Bernard*, Count of *Senlis*. — By her he had a Son named *Ralf*, who being of so noble an Extraction, and half Brother to *Richard* Duke of *Normandy*, and equally eminent for his Courage and great Qualities, was the first in the Degree of a Subject in that Province.

OF this *Ralf* it is related by *William Gemeticensis*. that ancient *Norman* Writer, that being then a Youth, and hunting in the Forest of *Weura*, with others of the Train of the Duke his Brother, in the most obscure Recesses of that Place, on a sudden broke out upon them a Boar of a monstrous Size, with which the rest of the Party were so terrified, that they all fled, leaving the young Man alone, who fearing more the Shame of a disgraceful Flight, than the Fury of the Beast; and though not yet arrived to the Strength of Manhood, supported by the Magnanimity inherent to his Race, attacked the raging Monster, and felled him at his Feet: in which State he was found by his Companions, who returned to learn the Issue of this fearful Combat. — Whereupon this valiant Action coming to the Ears of the Duke, he rejoicing greatly at it, granted immediately to the young Man the said Forest of *Weura*, and its Appurtenances, imposing upon that Valley, in which this Transaction happened, the Name of the *Vallis Ursonis*, or the *Boar's-Valley*, in Commemoration of this Event; which Name it then retained, at the Time when that Author wrote, as he himself assures us. Some Time after he added to this Grant the Castle of *Yvery*, from which the said *Ralf* assumed the Title of Earl.

*RALF*†, Earl of *Yvery*, married *Embrega*, or, as some say, *Albreda*, born in the *Calvine* Territory,  
at

\* Will. Gemet.

† Ibid.

at a Town called *Cavilla*: a Lady of great Beauty, but of Qualities which disgraced her Person; for being of a violent and furious a Temper, she employed a famous Architect named *Lanfred*, who had lately built the Tower of *Pedvers*, to erect a Castle at *Yvery* before-mentioned, which was long esteemed the strongest Fortrefs of that Dutchy. And having finished the Work with great Labour and vast Expence, she beheaded the said Architect, that he never might erect a Building of the like Nature again. But it was not long before she met with the Punishment due to this barbarous Act; for having fortified herself in the same Castle, endeavouring to keep her own Husband from the Possession of it, his Resentments being justly raised against her for this intolerable Conduct, she was put to Death by him.

THIS *Ralf*\*, Earl of *Yvery*, bearing also the Title of Earl of *Baieux*, was Tutor to *Richard* the Second, Duke of *Normandy*, his Nephew, and dying in ———, left by the said *Eremberga* his Wife, two Sons *Hugh*, and *John*, and two Daughters, *Albereda*, and ———. *Hugh*, the eldest Son was Bishop of *Baieux*, succeeded his Father; who slighting that Duty to which he was bound, both by Allegiance and Blood, perceiving that *Robert*, the first Duke of *Normandy*, Brother and Heir to *Richard*, the Third of that Name, neglected his Counsels, preferring those of wiser and more discreet Men, urged by his Pride and Ambition, and relying on the Strength of his Castle of *Yvery*, privately furnished that Place with Arms and Provisions of War, and having left a Garrison therein, withdrew with all Expedition into *France*, to raise Forces there, to carry on the Rebellion he had thus begun. ——— But the Duke of *Normandy*, considering of what Importance it was to check the Growth of such Disorders in their Infancy, raised an Army, and invested the Castle with so much Expedition, that he had Leisure to strengthen his Camp so well, that the said

*Hugh*

---

\* Will. Gemet.

*Hugh* could never relieve the Place, whereupon he was constrained for the Preservation of his Associates thus besieged, to enter into a Treaty with the Duke, upon which he surrendered the Place to that Prince, upon Condition that the Partners of his factious Undertaking might be dismissed with Liberty; and together with these, he long lived dispossessed of his Inheritance, and died at length without Issue.

*JOHN*\*, the second Son of *Ralf* Earl of *Yvery*, and Brother of *Hugh*, (who being called *Johannes Abrincatensis*, or *John* of *Averanches*, became Archbishop of *Rouen*) also died without Issue.

WE therefore now † come to the Daughters of *Ralph* Earl of *Yvery*, who by the Death of both their Brothers, became Coheirs of this illustrious Family.

OF these\*, *Albreda* the eldest, became the Wife of *Osbernus Crepon*, (Son of *Herfastus* the *Dane*, as we have before, more than once observed) whose Son *William Fitz-Osborn*, was Earl of *Breteuil*, *Pacy*, *Constantine*, and *Yvery*, and Earl of *Hereford* in *England*. And by *Adel*, Daughter of *Ralf de Toney*, left *William* his eldest Son, Heir to his great Estate, and to the Earldom of *Yvery*, whose natural Daughter *Isabella*, being married to *Ascelin Gouel de Percheval*, brought this Estate, and Descent in Blood, into the House of which we principally treat.

BUT the other Daughter §, becoming the Wife of *Richard de Bellofago*, (as we have already observed) a new Descent, and the Rights of Blood and Arms, descended to this Line of *Perceval*, of which the Earl of *Egmont* is the Chief, through the Heireffes of *Montford*, *Gant*, *Fitzbarding*, *Gournay*, and *Delamore*, or *Bytbemore*; as the distinct Account of these Houses more particularly shew.

WE

\* Will. Gemet.

† Ibid.

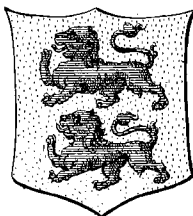
§ Ibid.

¶ Ibid.

WE come now to consider the Descent of *Paganell*: a Family of great Eminence, and ancient Barons of the Realm, as all the others we have mentioned likewise were.

— In tracing which, we shall almost literally follow Sir *William Dugdale*, as far as it relates to that Branch, whose Rights have fallen into the House of *Yvery*, or *Perceval*.

PAGANELL.



By the Conqueror's Survey it appears\*, that *Ralf Paganell* held at that Time ten Lordships in the County of *Devon*, five in the County of *Somerſet*, fifteen in the County of *Lincoln*, and fifteen in the County of *York*, whereof *Nonnintune* was one, unto the Soke to which belonged four Hamlets.

In *Anno* 1089, (the ſecond of *William Rufus*) this *Ralph* † founded the Priory of the Holy Trinity at *York*, for *Nuns* in that Place, where formerly had ſtood a Houſe of Canons, which had been deſtroyed by King *William* the Conqueror: and in the Time of that King, was Sheriff of *Yorkſhire*. He likewiſe gave to the Monks of *St. Mary's Abby* in *York*, ſix Carucates of Land, and one Oxfang in *Millington*, as alſo the Church of *Hugeth*, with the Tithes and Glebe, and ſeven Oxgangs of Land in *Howald*.

To him ſucceeded *Fulk Paganell*, (his Son and Heir, as we preſume) who poſſeſſing a great Part of the Lands of *William Fitzaculph*, founded that Monaftery near *Newport*, in the County of *Buckingham*, (ſince called *Tickford*,) as a Cell to that great Abby of *Marmonſtier* in *France*; which Lordſhip of *Newport* was Part of the Poſſeſſions of the ſaid *William Fitzaculph*.

AND

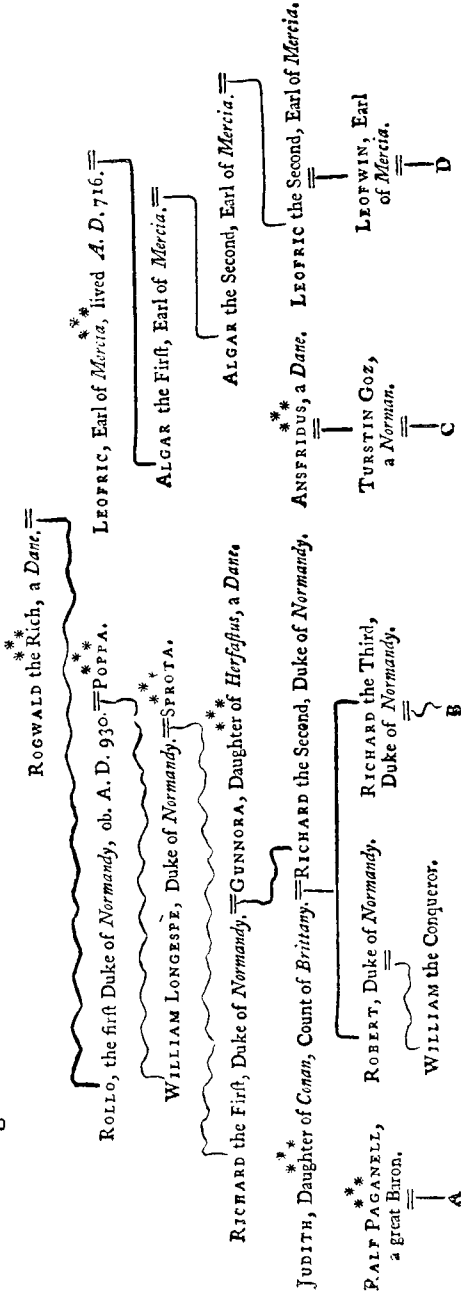
\* *Dugdale's Baronage*, ſub tit. *Paganell*.

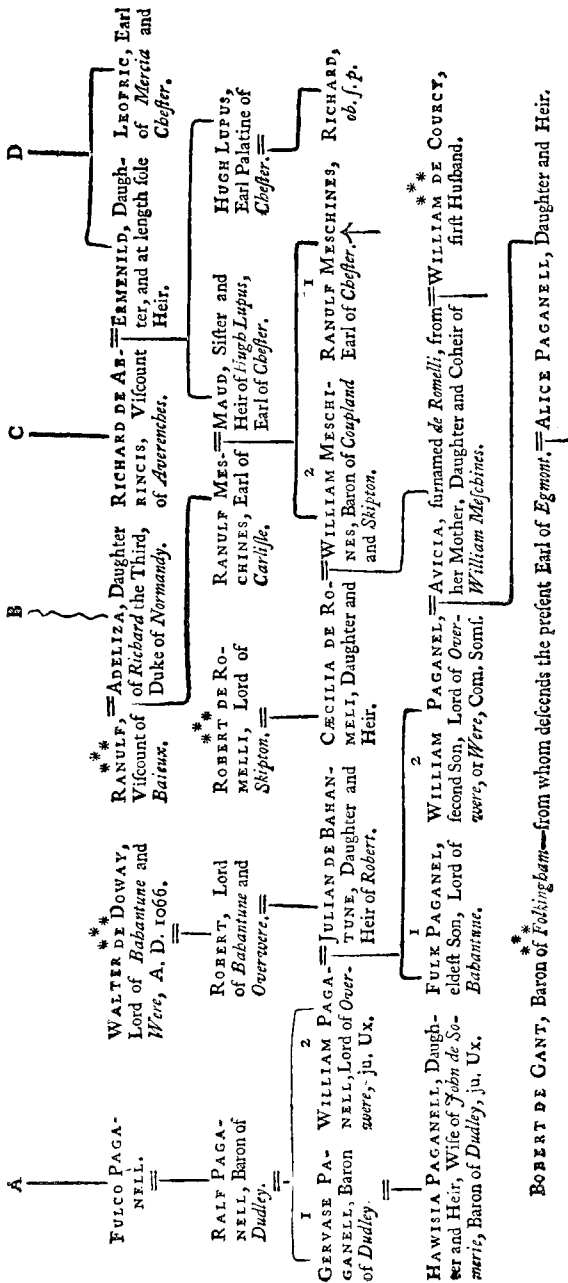
† *Ibid.*

§ *Ibid.*



Genealogy of the Dukes of Normandy; *Leofwin*, Earl of *Mercia* and *Chester*; *Lopus*, Earl of *Chester*; *Meschinus*, Viscounts of *Averanches*; Earls of *Carlisle*, and Barons of *Coupland* and *Skipton* in *Craven*; *Romeli*, Baron of *Skipton*; *Doway*, Baron of *Babantune* and *Overwere*; and *Paganell*, Barons of *Dudley*, *Babantune* and *Overwere*; from all of whom, by Female Heirs, descends the Earl of *Egmont*.





AND to him succeeded *Ralf Paganell*\*, his Son and Heir, who being possessed of *Dudley*, in the County of *Stafford*, (Part of the Lands of the before-mentioned *William Fitzasculph*,) did there purpose to found another Monastery.

IN the fifth of King *Stephen* †, this *Ralph*, taking part with *Maud* the Empress, was by her made Governor of the Castle of *Nottingham*, (*William Peverell*, then Lord thereof, being taken Prisoner in the Battle of *Lincoln*, fighting for King *Stephen*,) whereupon he instigated *Robert* Earl of *Gloucester* to enter *Nottingham*, the Inhabitants being destitute of any defensive Arms, which he accordingly did; so that the Town was miserably plundered by the Soldiers.

TOUCHING his Issue §, we find that he had divers Sons, viz. *Gervase*, *William*, *Hugh*, *Adam*, *Jordan*, and *Alexander*. Of these, beginning with *Gervase*, we shall first observe, that in *Anno* 1138, (3 *Steph.*) adhering to *Maud* the Empress, when *Robert* Earl of *Gloucester*, and others, raised Forces on her behalf, and manned several Castles against King *Stephen*. He held the Castle of *Dudley* for her; and in the twelfth of *Henry* the Second, upon the Assesment of the Aid for marrying the King's Daughter, residing then at *Dudley*, certified his Knight's Fees, *de Veteri Feoffamento*, to be in number six, and those *de Novo* six, and a third Part. But after this, viz. in the twentieth of *Henry* the Second ||, being with young *Henry*, Son to the King, in that Rebellion against his Father, his Castle of *Dudley*, in *Anno* 1175, (21 *Hen.* II.) was demolished, as others at that Time were, belonging to those who had done the like. And in the twenty-second of *Henry* the Second, gave five hundred Marks to the King, as a Peace-Offering for that Transgression.

THIS *Gervase Paganell* ‡, in pursuance of that pious Intent of *Ralf Paganell* his Father, whereof we have

\* Dugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Paganell.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

|| Ibid.

‡ Ibid.

of the House of YVERY, &c. 77

have already made mention, founded the Priory of *Oudley*, in the County of *Wigorn'*, and gave to the Nuns of *Eaton*, in the County of *Warwick*, his Mill at *Ingepenne*, in the County of *Berks*, with the Meadow and Croft adjoining. But leaving no Male Issue surviving, *Hawisa* his Daughter, became his Heir: which *Hawisa* was first married to *John de Somerie* \*, by which Means *Dudley*, with other Lands of great Extent, came to *Ralf de Somerie*, her Son and Heir; afterwards to *Roger de Berkeley*, of *Berkeley* in the County of *Gloucester*.

HAVING thus done with *Gervase*, we come next to *William* †, who in the twelfth of *Henry* the Second, upon that Assesment of the Aid for marrying the King's Daughter, certified his Knight's Fees, *de Veteri Feoffamento*, to be fifteen in number, and half a Knight's Fee *de Novo*,

THIS *William* founded the Priory of *Drax*, in the County of *Ebor.* for Canons Regular of Saint *Augustine*. Moreover, he confirmed to the Monks of *Selby*, that Grant which *Ralph* his Father made to them, of the Land, Meadow and Woods, lying opposite to *Rondcliffe*, on the other side of the River *Eyre*. And having married *Julian* §, the Daughter of *Robert de Babantune* ||, Baron of *Babantune*, in the County of *Devon* ‡, (Son of *Walter de Doway*, left Issue *Fulk* \*\*, his Son and Heir, and *William* ††, his second Son; which *William* §§, by *Avice*, surnamed *de Romelli*, (Widow of *Robert* ||| *de Courcy*,) the Daughter and Coheir of †† *William Meschines*, Lord of *Coupland*, (Brother to *Ranulf Meschines*, Earl of *Carlisle*, and Uncle to *Ranulf* Earl of *Chester*,) left one sole Daughter

---

\* Dugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Paganell.

† Ibid.

§ Monasticon Anglican. fol. 373. fol. 911. Ibid. Vol. II. & fol. 475, 563, 564, 912.

|| Ibid.

‡ Ibid.

\*\* Ibid.

†† Ibid.

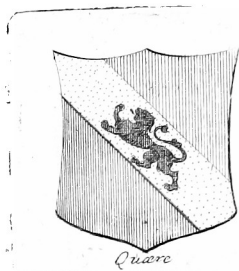
§§ Ibid. Vol. II. fol. 27.

||| Ibid. Vol. I. fol. 691.

†† Certificat. Feodor. Mil. in Com. Somf.

ter and Heir named *Alice*\*, who became the Wife of *Robert de Gant* †, Lord of *Folkingham*, Brother, and at length Heir to *Gilbert de Gant*, Earl of *Lincoln*, as we have before observed. The Continuance of which Descent having been deduced already to the House of *Perceval*, or *Yvery*, is needless to be repeated here.

## DOWAY.



THAT the Family of *Doway* proceeded from *Flanders*, their Name sufficiently demonstrates; and that they were, as some Authorities affirm, of the Sovereign House of that Province, is rendered more than probable, by the large Portion of the Spoils of *England* conferred upon them at the Conquest; but in this

Conjecture, not being sufficiently supported, we shall proceed no farther.

BE this as it will, it is certain that *Walter*, surnamed *de Doway* §, was a very eminent Adventurer in the *Norman Expedition*; and by that ancient Record called *Doomsday-Book*, it is evident that he received for his Services at that Time, the Barony of *Babantune*, or *Bampton*, in the County of *Devon*, the great Lordship of *Overwere*, and many other noble Manors in both the said Counties, and elsewhere.

To this *Walter* succeeded his Son *Robert*, who was surnamed *de Babantune* ||, or *Bampton*, from the chief Seat of his Barony, whose sole Daughter and Heir *Julian*, became the Wife of *William Paganell*, a great Baron, (of whose Descent we have lately treated) to whom this large Inheritance devolved. ——— *Fulco*, the eldest Son of this *William*, enjoyed the Barony of *Bampton*;

\* Rot. Pip. 4 Ric. I. Ebor.

† Monasticon. Anglican. fol. 97.

§ Doomsday. Book.

|| Monast. Anglican. ut supra, sub tit. Paganell.

*Bampton*; but *William*, the second Son, obtaining the Lordship of *Were*, or *Overwere*, with other Parcels of that Estate, married *Avice*, surnamed *de Romelli*, the Daughter and Heir of *William Meschines*, Lord of *Coupland*, Brother to *Ranulf Meschines*, Earl of *Carlisle*, and leaving by her a sole Daughter named *Alice* his Heir, she became the first Wife of *Robert de Gant*, Baron of *Folkingham*: through whom, in the Manner we have shewn before, the Estates and Rights of Blood, descended to the present Earl of *Egmont*.

THE Greatness of the Families whose Rights, by Heir-esses, have centered in this Branch of the House of *Yvery*, or *Perceval*, which is the Subject of our Enquiries here, is such, that it is difficult to decide which have been the most conspicuous.—This of *Meschines*, which is next in order to be deduced, is doubt-

MESCHINES.



less among the very first of the Old Nobility in *England*, as will appear by the following, though short Account, which we shall give of it.—And as the Family of *Gant*, in Birth and Proximity of Blood to the Royal Family, appears to have been most eminent; so this of *Meschines*, in Power and immense Possessions, undoubtedly exceeded all the rest.

FOR by Alliances, or Grants from different Princes, this House † obtained the County of *Cumberland*, and Earldom of *Carlisle*, the County Palatine of *Chester*, (which they held as freely as the King held the rest of *England*;) and the whole County of *Stafford*, the County of *Richmond*, the Honour of the Earl *Roger* of *Picou*, the Honour or Baronies of *Blithe*, and *Eye*, *Coupland*, and *Littlelang*,  
with

\* Dugdale, sub tit. Chester.

with an immense, and almost incredible Estate besides, in different Parts of this Realm. ——— And abroad, the whole Dutchy of *Brittany*, the Viscounty of *Averanches*, and Earldom of *St. James*, besides many other Castles, and Places of Importance, in the Provinces of *Normandy*; all which may be seen in Sir *William Dugdale's Baronage of England*, under the Head of the *Earl of Chester*; but this Deduction being too voluminous to be inserted here, we shall content ourselves with a short Account of this House, as far as it relates to that Branch of it, from the Heirefs of which the House of *Perceval* is descended.

THE first Ancestor of this Family that we are able with Certainty to mention, is *Ranulf de Mæcinis*, or *Mesbines*, Viscount of *Baieux* in *Normandy*, who married *Adeliza*, Daughter of *Richard* the Third, Duke of *Normandy*. — § Notwithstanding which Relation to that Ducal House, he, together with *Guido*, the Son of *Rainald*, Count of *Burgundy*, and *Haman Dentatus*, Count of *Corboille*, took up Arms against *William* Duke of *Normandy*, afterwards the Conqueror of *England*, then a Youth; being moved thereto, by an immoderate Ambition, and the Desire of preventing that Reformation of the State, which the young Prince effectually laboured; a Regulation very injurious to those licentious Habits, in which they had been before indulged. But this Rebellion proved unfortunate to their whole Party, though the Authors of it escaped the Punishment they had deserved, from the generous Clemency of Duke *William*.

To him succeeded *Ranulf Mesbines*, his Son, who coming over with the Conqueror, obtained the Earldom of *Cumberland*, commonly called of *Carlisle*, and marrying *Maud*, the Sister, and at length Heir of *Hugh*, surnamed *Lupus*, Earl of *Chester*, left by her three Sons, *Ranulf*, *William*, and *Geffry*.

R. A.

\* Vide Dugdale, sub tit. Chester.

† Ibid.

§ Will. Gemeticensis.

of the House of YVERY, &c. 81

*RANULPH de Mescbines* \*, surnamed *Bricasard*, having married *Lucia*, Daughter of *Algar*, the Saxon Earl of *Mercia*, Sister, and at length Heir, of *Edwin* and *Morcar*, the Saxon Earls of *Northumberland*; and being Nephew and Heir of *Hugh Lupus* Earl of *Chester*, obtained that great Palatinate, as some pretend, in right of his Mother, and others, of his Wife; though doubtless not of the latter, who died without Issue; but for the wonderful Pre-eminence of his Posterity, (from which also the Earl of *Egmont* is derived, as will appear in the Chapter of *the Aliances of the House of Yvery*, and in other Parts of this Work) we refer the Reader to Sir *William Dugdale*. As to *Geoffry*, the youngest Son, he received the Lordship of *Gillestand*, of his Brother *Ranulf*, from whom, through Females, the Barons *Dacres* of *Gillestand*, derived their Descent.

BUT *William Mescbines*, the second Son of *Ranulf* the First †, Earl of *Cumberland* and *Carlisle*, is the Person from whom the House of *Yvery* and *Perceval* through the Female Heir proceed.—Which *William* obtained of his Brother *Ranulf*, Earl of *Chester*, that Part of the vast mountainous Country of *Stancemore*, on the Borders of *Cumberland* and *Yorkshire*, (which the said *Ranulf*, according to some Opinions, had obtained of the Conqueror) called afterwards *Coupland*, containing all those Lands which lie between the River *Dudene* and *Darwent*, which other Authorities say were given to him by *William* the Conqueror himself, and others, by King *Henry* the First; but it appears rather to have been the Gift of the said Earl of *Chester* his Brother, because it is said farther, that the said Earl obtaining the County Palatine of *Chester*, gave up to the King the Earldom of *Cumberland*, making, however, these Conditions, that his Brothers, and others, whom he had enfeoffed with Lands in those

Parts,

---

\* Vide Dugdale, sub tit. Chester.

† Ibid. sub tit. Mescbines.



Parts, should retain their Estates for the future, holding them of the Crown.

THIS *William* \*, having married *Cæcilia*, Daughter and Heir of *Robert de Romelli*, obtained by her the Lordship of *Skipton* in *Craven*, and founded the Monastery of *St. Bega*, commonly called *St. Bees*, which was a Cell to that of *St. Mary* at *York*, and gave to the Monks of *St. Warburg* at *Chester*, the Church of *Dissard* in *North Wales*.

*CÆCILIA* de *Romelli*, his Wife †, gave also for the Health of the Soul of *William de Meschines*, her Husband, and also of those of her two Sons, to the Canons of *Emesey*, her whole Lordship of *Childwie*, with the Mill and Soke thereof, as also that of *Singlesdon*, and those at *Harwood*, with the Suit that was due thereto.

THIS *William de Meschines* left two Sons §, *Ranulph* and *Matthew*, who both died without Issue, and two Daughters, his Heirs, *Cicely*, the Wife of *Robert de Romelli*, Lord of *Skipton*, (from whom the *Lucies*, *Moultons*, and *Percies*, did descend;) and *Avicia* ||, called *de Romelli*; who being first the Wife of *William de Courcy*, Server to *Henry* the First, was afterwards married to *William de Paganel*, as we have before observed, whose Daughter and Heiress became the Wife of *Robert de Gant*, Lord of *Folkingham*; from whom the Descent was continued, as we have already shewn, to that Branch of the House of *Yvery* which bears the Name of *Perceval*.

WE are now come to that House, the Arms of which are marshalled next in order by the House of *Perceval*; and this is no less than that of the Sovereign Dukes of *Normandy*, from whom the Kings of *England* do also deduce their Descent.— But here we must observe, to avoid all Matter of Cavil or Dispute, somewhat with respect to this Pretension. For as, according to the modern Rules of Heraldry, the Issue of a Man not married, is not entitled to bear the Arms of

\* Vide Dugdale, sub tit. Meschines.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

|| Ut supra.

of the Father, without a Mark of Bastardy, as being counted illegitimate; yet in this Case, there is a Difference to be made, which will obviate all Objection.—For in these elder Ages, the Children of unmarried Parents were capable of succeeding to Inheritances of every Kind, as those who are conversant in Matters of Antiquity well know; and

DUKES of  
NORMANDY.



Christianity, with its System of regular Marriage, not having well obtained at that Time in that Country, it followed, that from the first Conquest of *Normandy* by *Rollo*, till the Conquest of *England* by his Descendant *William* the Conqueror, there was but one Succession to that Dutchy, which we should now allow to be legitimate\*; yet was this Particular never an Objection to the Title of these Princes; and was not, therefore, then contrary to the Law of Inheritances in that Country: and as the Law of Inheritance is that by which the Quartering of Arms is wholly directed, there is no Doubt at all, but that the Heiresses of that Family, though not born in Marriage, were entitled to the Arms of that Dutchy.—For the farther Justification of which, we find that all the Dukes carried the same Arms, *viz. Gules, two Lions, or Leopards, Gold*, (to which the Kings of *England* have afterwards added a third:) which Arms *William* Duke of *Normandy*, the Conqueror of *England*, likewise used, though the Son of *Robert* Duke of *Normandy*, not born in Wedlock: either therefore, the Conqueror himself, and the Kings of *England* descended from him, had no Right to that Coat, or *Adeliza*, the Daughter and Heir of *Richard* the Third, Duke of *Normandy*, Brother to the said Duke *Robert*, was entitled equally to bear it herself, and to deliver it down to her Heirs, according

M 2

to

---

\* Vide Bacon upon Government.

to the usual Course of Armory, of which number is the present Earl of *Egmont*. ——— This will be sufficient to maintain the Pretensions of the House of *Perceval* to this Pre-eminence, which might otherwise meet with Objection, from those, who either envy so great a Mark of Distinction, or may be ignorant of the Practice of Antiquity. ——— And sufficient for us to join the Arms of *Normandy* to the Quarterings of this Family, without the *Bordure Gobonnèe, Argent and Azure*; with which Mark of Illegitimacy it has been borne by them commonly. ——— This Pretension proceeds (as will appear from the Pedigree annexed) thro' the Marriage of *Adeliza*, the Daughter of *Richard* the Third, Duke of *Normandy*, with the House of *Meslines* before-mentioned.

LUPUS, Earl of  
CHESTER.



THE next Family, according to our proposed Order, from whence the House of *Perceval*, is by a Female Heir derived, is that of *Hugh Lupus*, Earl of *Chester*.

THERE is no Genealogy of a *Norman* Family, which is carried with Certainty farther back, than that of which we treat in this Place; for it is derived from *Ansfridus*, who was a *Dane*, and was one of those who settled with *Rollo* in *Normandy*.

To him succeeded *Turstinus*, surnamed *Goz* \*, his Son, who in the Reign of *William* the Second, Duke of *Normandy*, being Governor of the Province of *Oximi*, in that Dutchy, and perceiving the Power and Influence of the *French* to be such, as to keep the young Duke in great Subjection, conceived that Opportunity favourable to render himself independant of his Prince. ——— And thereupon, corrupting the Troops  
under

---

\* Dugdale. Orderic. Vital. Will. Gemeticensis.

under his Command, he fortified his Castle of *Falaise*. But the Duke having gathered together the *Norman* Forces from all Parts, under the Command of *Ralf de Wacey*, he attacked the Castle, and soon made so great a Breach in the Wall thereof, that if the Night had not prevented, they had taken the Place.—This *Turstin* therefore, well weighing the imminent Danger in which he was, capitulated, and obtaining Leave to march away, long wandered an Exile from his native Country.

To this *Turstin* Goz succeeded *Richard*, his Son, who, by great Services, at length reconciled his Father to the Duke, and acquired far greater Possessions than his Father had lost. This *Richard*, who was Viscount of *Averanches* in *Normandy*, and called *Richard de Abrincis*, and surnamed also *Goz*, is by some said to have married the half Sister of *William* the Conqueror, but in Truth, (as appears from a Pleading *coram Rege*, *Hill. 14 Ric. II. Rot. 50. Warw.* between the King and the Prior of *Coventry*\*) *Ermenilda*, Daughter of *Leofwin*, and Sister and Heir of *Leofric*, the *Saxon* Earl of *Mercia* and *Chester*, by whom he left a Son named *Hugh*, and three Daughters, *Margaret*, of whom we shall treat hereafter; *Judith*, who became the Wife of *Ricberus de Aquila*; and another, whose Name is not recorded, married to *William de Auco*.

*HUGH de Abrincis* †, the Son, so well known by the Surname of *Lupus*, was that glorious Subject, who being a Person of great Note among the *Norman* Nobility, and an expert Soldier, was for that respect, and partly, no doubt, for his great Descent from the Earls of *Mercia*, placed near the unconquered *Welch*, or *Britons*, the better to resist their bold Incurfions.—He was advanced to the Earldom of *Chester*, by the Advice of the Council of *William* the Conqueror, with a very extraordinary Power, for he had Royal Jurisdiction in the Precincts of his Earldom, which was given him, *Tenere ita libere ad Gladium, sicut ipse Rex*

\* *Placit. coram Rege*, 14 Ric. II. *Hill. Rot. 50. Warw.*

† *Dugdale*, sub tit. *Cestriæ*.

*Rex tenebat Angliam per Coronam, To hold as freely by the Sword, as the King himself held England by the Crown.*——Which great Advancement happened to him four Years after the *Norman Conquest*, in 1070.

IT is unnecessary to say any thing farther of this *Hugh*\*, but that he left Issue three Sons, *Richard*, Earl of *Chester*; *Robert*, and *Othellus*.——Of which, *Robert* was a Monk, and *Richard* and *Othellus* were both drowned, (leaving no Issue) in that unhappy Shipwreck, together with *Henry*, eldest Son of *Henry* King of *England*.

WHEREUPON, the Rights of this Family in the Male Line being thus extinct, fell to *Maud*, or *Margaret*, the Sister of the said *Hugh Lupus*, who having married *Ranulf Meschines*, Earl of *Cumberland*, or *Carlisle*, as we have before observed, the said *Ranulf* became Earl of *Chester*, and left a second Son *William*, surnamed *Meschines*, Lord of *Coupland*, who, as we have shewn already, had a Daughter and Coheir named *Avice de Romelli*, the Wife of *William Paganell*; from whom, by the Accounts already given, the Descent of this great House is drawn to the present Earl of *Egmont*.

#### EARLS of MERCIA.



THE next Heirefs of the House of *Yvery*, or *Perceval*, to be mentioned in this Place, is that of the Family of the *Saxon* Earls of *Chester* and *Mercia*, which is absolutely and incontestibly the eldest House in those Kingdoms, that can be deduced by the undoubted Evidence of History and Record; and from this House proceeds the Earl of *Egmont*, by a Descent remounting to the Year 700, above one thousand Years ago.

THE

\* Dugdale, sub tit. *Cestriæ*.

† Dugdale's *Baronage*, sub tit. *Chester & Mercia*.

of the House of YVERY, &c. 87

THE first Ancestor of this great House †, is mentioned by *Ingulphus*, who tells us, that *Leofric*, or *Leuric*, was Earl of *Chester* in the Year 716, and Witness to the Charter of *Ethelbald* the Saxon King to the Monks of *Crowland*, of which Monastery that Prince was a Founder, in which he is stiled *Comes Lecestriae*; but the Reason is well known, because the City of *Chester* was anciently called *Urbs Legeonium*; wherefore, by Corruption, in the Mention made of *Leofric* Earl of *Mercia*, in the Reign of King *Edward* the Confessor, where he takes Notice of his great Magnificence to several Religious Houses, (and in particular to that of *St. Warburgh the Virgin*) he says, that the said House was *Legacestra sita*, which is very well known to be intended for *Chester*, where the Abby of *St. Warberg* was, and not *Leicester*, as Sir *William Dugdale* shews.

To this *Leofric*, Earl of *Chester* \*, succeeded *Algar*, Earl of *Chester*, the first of that Name.

WHICH *Algar* had a Son also *Algar*, the second of that Name †, Earl of *Chester*, who left a Son, *Leofric*.

WHICH *Leofric* §, Earl of *Chester*, the second of that Name, had a Son, *Leofwin*.

THIS *Leofwin* || was Earl of the Province of *Mercia*, and left three Sons; *Leofric*, who was Earl of *Mercia* after his Father; *Norman*, and *Edwyn*; and one Daughter named *Ermenilda*, who was, at length, the sole Heiress of that House, by the Death of her Brothers, and their Issue; which *Ermenilda* became the Wife of *Richard de Abrincis*, the Father of *Hugh Lupus*, in Right of his Mother, and by Favour of the Conqueror, Earl of *Chester*; whose Sister and Heir having married *Ranulf Meschines*, Earl of *Cumberland*, or *Carlisle*, the Descent is carried through the different Houses we have mentioned, by Heiresses, to that of the present Earl of *Egmont*.

R O-

---

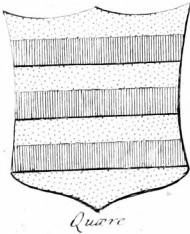
\* *Dugdale's Baronage*, sub tit. *Chester & Mercia*.

† *Ibid.*

§ *Ibid.*

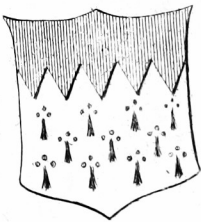
|| *Ibid.*

## ROMELLI,



*ROMELLI*, is the next Family we should consider here; but as yet we have not been able to deduce a perfect Pedigree of that House, before the Heirefs of it was married to *William Meschines*, as we have observed above; but that it was of great Possessions is evident enough, from that eminent Lordship of *Skipton*, in *Craven*, which passed into that House, by Means of this Marriage.—How this Line is deduced down to the present House of *Perceval*, will be seen, by reverting to what we have said of the other Heireffes, through which its Pretensions are derived to this. We shall therefore now set ourselves to treat of the next we are to mention in this Place, which is that of *Counteville*.

COUNTEVILLE,  
or,  
CAUNDEVILLE.



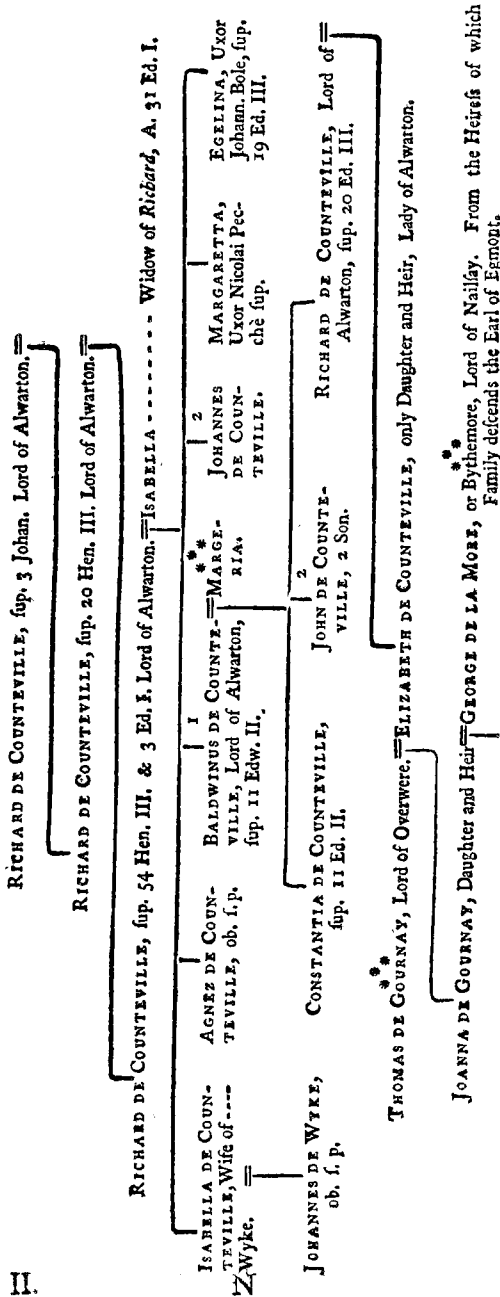
THE first and most ancient Mention of this Name, is long before the Conquest. *Osmund de Comitivilla*, or *de Counteville* \*, having married the Daughter of *Herfastus* the Dane, Brother to *Gunnora*, Wife to *Richard* the First, Duke of *Normandy*, Great Grandfather to *William* the Conqueror; but what Issue he left is uncertain, more than that he had a Daughter, who became the Wife of *William de Redvers*, Ancestor to the great Family † of that Name, who were Earls of *Devon*.

THERE

\* Will. Gemet.

† Ibid.

Genealogy of the House of *Counteville*, or *Camville*, from the Heirefs of which, through that of *Delamore*, descends the present Earl of *Egmont*.





THERE can be but little doubt, but that of the same Family (as Brother, Nephew, Son, or some very near Relation to the said *Osmund*) was *Herluin de Counteville*\*, who founded the Monastery of *Saint Mary Grestein*, in *Normandy*, where he lies buried with *Herleva*, or *Harlota*, his Wife; which *Harlota* was once the Concubine of *Richard Duke of Normandy*, by whom she had that famous *William*, who succeeded his Father in that Dutchy, and obtained the Crown of *England*, which his Posterity still enjoy.—— This *Herluin de Counteville* † had by the same *Harlota*, *Robert*, Earl of *Moriton* and *Cornwall*, and *Odo*, Bishop of *Baieux*, who being half Brothers to the Conqueror, were advanced to the highest Places of any Subjects in the State.—— But *Odo* having no Issue, being a Priest, and *William*, the second Earl of *Moriton* and *Cornwall*, dying, without Issue, a Monk in the Priory of *Bermondsey*, whither he retired, after an unsuccessful Attempt to dethrone King *Henry* the First; we shall say no more of this Line, but that he left three Sisters; *Agnes*, married to *Andrew de Vitre*, another to *Guy de la Val*, and *Emma*, to *William*, Earl of *Thoulouse*.

WE have not absolute Authority to affirm, but there is great Presumption to believe, that *Herluin de Counteville*, before-mentioned, had another Son, who assumed the Name of *Mallet*, from whence descended the great House of the Barons of that Name; as also, according to some, the *Peytons* and *Uffords*, who became Earls of *Suffolk*; for certain it is, that he bore the Title of *Princeps*, and that he was Lord of *Counteville*, in *Normandy*, which he gave to the Abbey of *Bec*, in that Dukedom.

THIS *William* † was Lord Great Chamberlain of *England* in the time of *Henry* the First, but engaging with *William de Counteville*, Earl of *Moriton* and *Corn-*  
wall,

\* Monast. Anglican.

† Dugdale, sub. tit. Cornwall.

‡ Dugdale's Baronage, sub. tit. Mallet.

will, in the same Attempt against that Prince, (which strengthens the Probability of his Descent) he was a Partner with him in his ill Successes, being disinherited and banished for this his imprudent Conduct.

AND for a further Confirmation thereof, there is extant Charter † of *Robert Mallet*, Son of the aforesaid *William*, and *Heslia* his Wife; which *Robert*, having founded the Convent of *Eye*, in *Suffolk*, granted, at the Request of *Osbert de Counteville*, those Lands in *Accolte*, which the said *Osbert* held apparently of him therein.

IN a Charter † of *Robert Fitzbarding*, relating to the Foundation of the Priory of *Saint Augustin*, in *Bristol*, *Adam de Counteville* was a Witness thereto, wherein *William*, the Son of *Gregory*, grants to the said Priory ten Shillings of Land in *Alertone*, (or *Alwarton*) which *Earl William* had formerly confirmed to the said *Gregory*, as I presume.

IF this *Albertone* be the same with *Alwarton*, as we presume it is, having been from very remote Time in the Line of this House of *Counteville*, of whom we principally here treat, and that *Earl William*, here mentioned, being no other than *William de Counteville*, *Earl of Moriton* and *Cornwall*, before mentioned, this Suggestion is much enforced thereby.

FOR the regular Links of the Chain we are still at a loss, yet, in all probability, the Relation was very near between these two Families we have now spoken of; and *Gerrard de Camville*, or *Counteville*, or *Caundeville*, (the Name being thus differently written) who, in the Fifth of King *Stephen*, gave two Parts of the Tithes of *Cberleton, Camville*, in the County of *Somerset*, to the Monks of *Bermondsey* in *Surrey*, (though his chief Seat was then at *Lilburne*, near *Creek* in *Northamptonshire*;) which Priory of *Bermondsey* may be noted here to be the same to which *William de Counteville*, *Earl of Moreton* and *Cornwall*, retired, and in which he died; whence it may be reasonably accounted for, that those

† *Monasticon Anglicæ*

‡ *Ibid.*

of his Family should pay their pious Contributions to that Place.

To this *Gerrard* succeeded \* *Richard de Counteville*, who, in the Reign of King *Stephen*, founded the Abbey of *Cumbe*, and left many Sons, whose Posterity were Barons of this Realm, both by Tenure and by Writ, of some of whose Descendants a regular Descent is drawn, by Sir *William Dugdale*, in his *Baronage of England*.

OF these, *Gerrard* † was the eldest Son, who by *Nichola*, Daughter and Heir of *Richard de Haya*, was Father of another *Richard*, who by *Eustachia*, Daughter and Heir of *Gilbert Basset*, the Widow of *Thomas de Verdon*, had *Idonea*, his Daughter and Heir, who became the Wife of *William de Longespè*, Earl of *Salisbury*.

THAT there was a Brother, or a second Son, to the said *Gerrard de Camville* first mentioned, who was named *Robert*, is probable enough; for *Robert de Gundeville*, (which is still the same Name) held in the Reign of || *Henry* the First,) two Knights Fees of *Henry Luvel*, Baron of *Kary*, upon the Aid levied to marry *Maud*, the Daughter of that Prince, to the Emperor of the *Romans*; and this Family is found to hold under the same House of *Luvel*, several Knights Fees, in the Reign of *Henry* the Third, and of *Edward* the First; and we presume that the *Richard de Counteville*, who limited certain Lands in *Alwarton* to *Robert Tortemain*, and *Maud* his Wife, with Remainder to himself and to his Heirs, was the Grandson of the said *Robert* †.

To this *Richard* succeeded his Son, (as it should seem) another *Richard de Counteville*, who in the Third of King *Henry* the Third, 1219, upon the Assignment of *Richard Luvel*, Baron of *Kary*, to *Christian*, Wife of *Richard Cotell*, and Widow of *Henry Luvel*, of Part  
of

\* Dugdale's Baronage, sub. tit. Camville.

† Ibid.

|| Black Book, in the Exchequer.

‡ Fin. Somf. 3 Johann.

of her Dower, appears to have been possessed of one Knight's Fee \*, two Hides, and one Yard-land in *Alwarton*, then held of the Lords and Barons of *Kary*, whereof the Services, Escheats, Wards, Rights of Relief, Marriage, &c. were then granted to the said *Christiana*.

THIS *Richard de Counteville*, in the twentieth of *Henry the Third*, *A. D.* 1236, was Plaintiff in a Fine, in which *Thomas* †, Son of *Albert*, was Defendant, concerning Lands in *Batilberg*, or *Batilborow*, then assured to *Richard de Counteville*, and to his Heirs.

To him succeeded another *Richard de Counteville*, who obtained a special License from the Crown to hunt for ever through the whole Forest of *Mendip* ‖, the Hare, the Martin, and the Cat, at all Times and Seasons, (the forbidden Month excepted) with his own Dogs, and without Molestation of any of the King's Justiciaries, Ministers, Foresters, &c. dated at *Windsor* the Fifth of *May*, in the fifty-second Year of the Reign of *Henry the Third*, *A. D.* 1268.

In the Eighth of *Edward the First* †, 1284, *John de Hampton* commenced a Suit against this *Richard Counteville*, for Liberty of a certain Road in *Albertone*, or *Alwarton*, which, however, was discontinued afterwards.

IN the Inquisition § taken after the Death of *Hugh*, Lord *Luvel* of *Kary*, in the nineteenth of *Edward the First*, 1291, the same *Richard de Counteville* is found to hold of him the same one Knight's Fee in *Alwarton*, before mentioned, also two Knights Fees in *Cricket*, and one in *Bagripp*, now *Bawdrripp*. And here we cannot omit to observe, that the Barony of *Kary* chiefly consisted of Fees, which had belonged to *William (de Counteville)* Earl of *Moriton* and *Cornwall*, before-mentioned,

\* *Fin. Somf.* 3 *Hen. III.*

† *Ibid.* 20 *Hen. III.*

‖ *Placit. Forreft. Com. Somf.* 54 *Hen. III. Rot. 1. dorso.*

† *Placit. coram Justiciar. Hierer. Com. Somf.* 8 *Ed. I. Rot. Reg. Rot. 39. dorso.*

§ *Esch. post Mort. Hugon. Luvel*, 19 *Ed. I.*

mentioned, granted, as it is supposed, to the House of *Luwel*, after the Forfeiture of that Earl; from whence a further Argument arises to corroborate the supposed Descent of this Family from that great House of the same Name, this seeming to have been a younger Branch, upon which these Estates had been bestowed for their Inheritance, with an Acknowledgment of Superiority to the elder House, according to the constant Practice of those elder Times.

THIS *Richard*, yet living in the thirtieth of *Edward* the First, *A. D.* 1301, and stiled of *Alwarton*, was Deforciant in a Fine \* with *John*, Son of *Isabel de Wyke*, in which — *de Bourne* was Plaintiff, concerning Lands in *Alwarton* and *Overwere*, which were settled on *John de Wyke*, and the Heirs of his Body, with Remainder to *Agnes*, Daughter to the said *Richard de Counteville*, Remainder to *Egeline*, another of his Daughters, and his Heirs in Fee.—But it appears that this *John de Wyke*, and *Agnes de Counteville*, both died without Issue; for *Egeline*, having married *John Bole*, did, jointly with her Husband, levy a Fine of this same Parcel of Lands, in the nineteenth of *Edward* † the Third, *A. D.* 1345, (being then possessed thereof) whereby they were conveyed to *Nicholas Fraunces* and *John Queynt*, and the Heirs of *Nicholas* in Fee.

THIS *Richard* † had likewise several other Children, viz. two Sons, *Baldwin* and *John*, and a Daughter named *Margaret*, who became the Wife of *Nicholas Pccbe*.

BUT doubtless he did not long survive that Settlement before mentioned, for in two † Years after, *Isabel*, his Widow, demanded her Dower in *Overwere*, in the County of *Somerset*; and in *Littleton Pagnek*, in the County of *Wilts*; and *Tarvistock*, in the County of *Devon*.——And in the same Year *Baldwin*, his Son, is found possessed of his Estate.

IN

\* *Fin. Somf.* 30 *Ed. I.* n. 94.

† *Ibid.* 19 *Ed. III.*

‡ *Placit. Mich.* 32 *Ed. I.* Rot. 87 & 327 dorso, & *Hill.* 33 Rot. 50 & 78 dorso.

§ *Ibid.*

IN which Year \* *Nicholas de Peche*, and *Margaret de Counteville*, his Wife, brought an Affize of *Novel Disfezin* against the said *Baldwin de Counteville*, *John de Counteville*, his Brother, *Richard de Counteville*, of *Alveryngton*, or *Alwarton*, (his Son); *Robert de Burgoigne*, *Clement de Hamton*, *Hugh de Chapeleyn*, and *Andrew le Deveney*s, for thirteen Messuages, and six Plough-lands, in *Ken Towestocke*, and *Hescote juxta Towestocke*.

WHEREUPON *Baldwin de Counteville* pleaded, that *John* and the rest had nothing in the Premisses; but pleads, in regard to himself, as † *Tenant* thereof.— That *Richard*, his Father, whose Heir he is, died seized of the said Premisses in Fee; after whose Decease, he the said *Baldwin* entered into the same as his Son and Heir: And says further, that indeed there was a Discourse by the said *Richard*, the said *Margaret's* Father, that he would grant the Premisses to her, to hold until she should be honourably married, either by her said Father, or his Heirs: But in case she should marry herself without the Consent of her said Father, or his Heirs, or refused to accept of such Match as they should approve, or be actually bestowed in Marriage by them, that then the Premisses should revert to her Father *Richard* and his Heirs; but he avers, that in fact his Father *Richard* never did depart with his Estate therein, but died seized thereof in Fee.— Issue is joined, and the Jury find, that the said *Richard*, *Margaret's* Father, granted the Premisses to her and her Heirs in Fee when she was but two Years old, and that she took the Profits for two Years after the Feoffment, by *Walter Parson*, of *Niveton*, her Guardian; and that then her Father *Richard* took the same into his Hands, as her Guardian, and afterwards married her to the said *Nicholas Peech*: And the said *Nicholas* and *Margaret* were seized thereof after the said Marriage, until disseised by *Richard de Counteville*, de *Alveryngton*, and *Hugh de Chapeleyn*; and Judgment is given,

---

\* Affiz. divers. Comit, 32 Ed. I. Devon.

† Ibid.

given, that *Nicholas* and *Margaret* recover the said Premiffes, with one hundred Shillings Damages, &c.

NOT many Years after this, *Baldwin de Counteville*; viz. in the eleventh of King \* *Edward* the Second; A. D. 1318, made a Settlement of divers Lands in *Alwarton*, and of the Advowson of the Church of *Alwarton*, upon himself, and upon *Richard*, his eldest Son, and the Heirs of his Body; Remainder, in like manner, to *John*, his second Son; Remainder to *Constantia*, his Daughter, and the Heirs of her Body; Remainder to his own right Heirs for ever: By virtue of which Settlement, which was pleaded long after, in 1488, the third Year of the Reign of *Henry* the Seventh, (one hundred and seventy Years after) this Estate descended to the Family of *Delamore*; and a considerable Part of it from thence to the House of *Perceval*. By the said Settlement, *John le Riche*, of *Wedmore*, being the Deforciant, certain Lands in *Batlibergh*, near *Southbrent*, are settled upon the said *Baldwin* and *Margery* for their Lives; Remainder to *Richard*, Son of the said *Baldwin*, and the Heirs of his Body; Remainder to *John*, Brother of the said *Richard*, and the Heirs of his Body; Remainder to *Constantia*, Sister of the said *John*, and the Heirs of her Body; Remainder to the right Heirs of the said *Baldwin* in Fee.

BUT *Baldwin* deceased not long afterwards, leaving two Sons, here mentioned, and † *Constantia*, a Daughter, of whom we know nothing farther; but of the Sons, *John*, the Youngest, having rashly concerned himself in that fatal Infurrection with *Thomas*, Earl of *Lancaster*, in the Reign of *Edward* the Second, was fined twenty Pounds for his Pardon of that Transaction, in the first Year of King *Edward* the Third, A. D. 1326.

RICHARD, the eldest Son of *Baldwin*, upon an Inquisition taken in the County of *Somerfet*, in the  
fifth

---

\* Fin. Somf. Mich. 11 Ed. II. n<sup>o</sup> 101.

† Rot. Clauf. 1 Ed. III.

fifth of \* *Edward* the Third, *A. D.* 1331, with regard to the Rights of the Abbey of *Glastonbury*, was returned to have held certain Rights under the said Abbey in *Therlemere, Southbrent, Bergbes, Lymplesham,* and *Eastbrent*, for which he paid an annual Acknowledgment of four Bushels of Oats.

IN the twentieth of the same † *Reign, A. D.* 1346, upon that Aid levied for making *Edward* the Black Prince a Knight; he was charged for half of one Knight's Fee in *Awarton, Aston,* and *La Lyde*.

WHO this ‖ *Richard* married we cannot say, but he left a sole Daughter and Heir, *Elizabeth de Counteville*, who became the Wife of Sir *Thomas de Gournay*, Lord of *Overwere*, to whom she carried the great Inheritance of this House, whose Daughter and Heir, *Joan de Gournay*, marrying *George Delamore, or Bythemore*, Lord of *Nailsay*, in the County of *Somerset*, it passed into that Family; and in process of Time, by *Alice*, the sole Heiress also of *Delamore*, to *David Perceval*, Ancestor to the present Earl of *Egmont*.

HAVING thus in pursuit of these great Inheritances and Descents, departed somewhat from our just Order, we must now return to the said *David Perceval*, of whom we particularly treat in this Chapter.

WHO, upon the thirteenth of § *November, 1533*, the twenty-fifth of *Henry* the Eighth, entered into several Obligations, in conjunction with *Alice* his Mother, then a second time a Widow, by the Death of her second Husband - - - - *Jones*, by which they both engaged themselves not to interrupt *Elizabeth Hadley*, late Wife of *John Cave*, nor her then Husband *James Hadley*, in the quiet Possession of the Manors of *Moreland, Weley,* and *Sydenham*, and other large Possessions  
in

---

\* *Hearn's Chronicon. Glastonienf.*

† *Lib. Auxil. in Scaecario, 20 Ed. III.*

‖ *Placit. coram Justiciar. de Banco Term. Mich. anº 3 Hen. VII. Rot. 423.*

§ *Unica Pars Claus. 25. Hen. VIII. 1533, in cap. Rotulor.*



in *Wolmerton, Wembdon, North Pederton, Petherinz, Mersb, Dunwere, Mulsay, Slapp, Baudripp, Bridgwater,* and *Bower*, all in the County of *Somerſet*; of which it appears, that *John Cave*, the Brother of *Alice Jones*, formerly the Widow of *Thomas Perceval*, Father of this *David*, had died ſeiſed, with Remainder, after her Death, to his ſaid Siſter *Alice*, and to the lawful Heirs of her Body.

By another Deed of the ſame Date \*, enrolled alſo in Chancery, the ſaid † *David Perceval* grants the Marriage and Wardſhip of *James* and *George Perceval*, the Sons of the ſaid *David*, to *James Elizabeth Hadley*.

AND again, there is a third Deed ‡, dated alſo the ſame Day, and enrolled with the former, between *David Perceval* alone, on the one part, and *Elizabeth* and *James Hadley* on the other; by which the ſaid *David*, in conſideration of the Sum of one thouſand Marks, paid by the ſaid *Elizabeth* and *James*, in conſequence of ſeveral Deeds of *John Cave*, Eſq; lately deceaſed, releaſed for ever, (as far as it related to himſelf,) all Pretenſions to the Manors and Lands lately belonging to the ſaid *Cave*, viz. *Sydenham, Moreland, Weley, North Pederton, Petherinz, Mersb, Mulley, Dunwere, Slapp, Baudripp, Bower, &c.*

THAT *Alice Bythemore*, or *de la More*, the Wife of this Man, was dead at this time, appears from the Records here mentioned. The Reaſon for his Grant of the Wardſhip, and Marriage of his Son being aſſigned, that he might have liberty to make a Jointure for another Wife, out of the Lands of *Cave*, then in poſſeſſion of the Wife of *James Hadley* aforeſaid.

AND himſelf § did not long after ſurvive, for it is found that he died upon the fifth of *December* following, in the ſame Year, viz. the twenty-fifth of *Henry* the Eighth, 1533.

THE

---

\* A. D. 1533.

† Unica Pars Clauſ. de eod. ann.

‡ Ibid.

§ Eſchat. poſt Mort. *David Perceval, unica pars Bundelli in cap. Rotulor. 26 Hen. VIII.*

THE Inquisition, which was taken after his Death at *Bruton* before *Thomas Bampffield*, Esq; Escheator, the last of *September*, and returned into the Court the twenty-third of *October* in the twenty-sixth of King *Henry* the Eighth, rehearſes, “ That one *John Cave*, “ the Uncle of the ſaid *David Perceval*, did by his “ Deed made the laſt of *April*, in the nineteenth of “ *Henry* the Eighth, *A. D.* 1527, give and grant to “ Sir *John Fitz-James*, Knight, Chief-Justice of the “ King’s Bench, *John Fitz-James*, his Son and Heir, “ *John Horſey*, Esq; ſince deceaſed, Sir *John Horſey*, “ *John Marshall*, Esq; and *Richard Marshall*, Son and “ Heir apparent of the ſaid *John Marshall*, his Manors “ of *Sydenham*, *Moreland*, and *Weley*, with their Ap- “ purtenances, in the Pariſh of *North Pederton*, with “ the other Lands called *Ballis*, near *Sydenham* afore- “ ſaid; and alſo other Eſtate in *Bradnemed*, in the Pa- “ riſh of *Baudripp*, *Dunmere*, *Petherham*, *Marſhe*, “ *Wolverſton*, *Hampnie*, near *Bridgwater*, and five “ Meſſuages and Burgage Houſes in *Bridgwater*, to- “ gether with Lands in *Weley*, *Huchyn*, *Baunteſland*, “ alias *Blantſland*, *Webbhouſe*, *Emeſham*, *Starkeſland*, “ alias *Storkeſland*, *Rydon*, and *Culwere*, in the Pariſh “ of *North Pederton* aforeſaid, to hold all the ſaid “ Manors, Lands, and Tenements for ever, (paying “ to the Lord of the Fee the uſual Services) for the “ uſe of the ſaid *John Cave*, and *Elizabeth* his Wife, “ and the Heirs of the ſaid *John Cave*, and after to “ fulfill the laſt Will and Teſtament of the ſaid *John* “ *Cave*. And the Jurors ſay further upon Oath, that “ the ſaid *John Cave* did afterwards, upon the twenty- “ fourth Day of *April*, in the twenty-fiſt of *Henry* the “ Eighth, that now is, *A. D.* 1529, by his laſt Will “ and Teſtament, which theſe Jurors have ſeen, de- “ viſe and bequeath to the ſaid *Elizabeth Cave*, then “ his Wife, all the ſaid Manors, &c. with their Ap- “ purtenances, for the Term of her Life; and that af- “ terwards the ſaid *John Cave* died, and *Elizabeth* his “ Wife out-lived, and thence became ſeiſed of the ſaid “ Manors, &c. the Reverſion belonging to one *Alice*

“ *Jones*, alias *Perceval*, Widow, as the Sister and Heir  
 “ of the said *John Cave*; which *Elizabeth* marrying  
 “ afterwards *James Hadley*, the said *James* and *Eliza-*  
 “ *beth* became jointly seized thereof.——That *Alice*  
 “ *Jones* aforesaid, Sister and Heir of *John Cave*, did,  
 “ upon the thirteenth of *December*, in the twenty-fifth  
 “ of *Henry* the Eighth, in Consideration of several  
 “ Deeds before made by the said *Alice*, and *David*  
 “ *Perceval* her Son, in favour of the said *James* and  
 “ *Elizabeth Hadley*, in Consideration of an annual  
 “ Payment of four Marks *per annum*, to be paid at  
 “ the four usual Feasts to the said *Alice*; and also, in  
 “ Consideration that the said *James* and *Elizabeth*  
 “ *Hadley* should enfeoff Sir *Richard Warr*, Knight,  
 “ *Edward Marshall*, *Nicholas Fitzjames*, *Christopher*  
 “ *Hadley*, and *Richard Gattcombe*, with the said Ma-  
 “ nors, &c. for the Use of the said *Elizabeth* and  
 “ *James Hadley*, for both their Lives, without Im-  
 “ peachment of Waste; and after their Decease to the  
 “ Use of *James Perceval*, Son of *David* aforesaid,  
 “ and the Heirs of his Body lawfully begotten; and  
 “ so on, under the like Conditions, to the Use of  
 “ *George Perceval*, Brother of the said *James*, and his  
 “ Heirs, and of *Alice* and *Dorothy*, Sisters of the said  
 “ *David Perceval*, in like Order and Manner: and on  
 “ Failure of Issue of these, to the Use of the said *Eliz-*  
 “ *abeth*, and her Heirs for ever. As also in Consid-  
 “ eration that they should fulfil the last Will and Te-  
 “ stament of *John Cave* aforesaid; release for ever,  
 “ for herself and her Heirs, to the said *James* and  
 “ *Elizabeth Hadley* his Wife, all her Right and Title  
 “ whatsoever to the said Manors, Lands and Tene-  
 “ ments: by virtue of which Deeds, the said *James*  
 “ and *Elizabeth Hadley*, were possessed of the same  
 “ at the Death of *David Perceval* aforesaid.

“ As to the Tenure of the said Estates, that the  
 “ Manor of *Sydenham* was held of *Roger Blewit*,  
 “ Esquire, but by what Service the Jurors cannot tell.

“ ——— That the Lands in *Ballis* paid an annual  
 “ Fee of twenty-one Pounds *per annum*, in lieu of all

“ Services,

of the House of YVERY, &c. 101

“ Services, and held of *Henry Lord Dawbeney*. —  
 “ That the Lands in *Bradmede*, in the Parish of  
 “ *Bridgwater*, held of the Heirs of — *Broughton*,  
 “ by the Service of one Pair of gilt Spurs. — That  
 “ the Lands in *Dunwere* were held of *John Chichester*,  
 “ as of his Manor of *Dunwere*, by the annual Service  
 “ of a red Rose, upon the Feast of St. *John* the Bap-  
 “ tist. — That the Lands in *Petterbam-Mersh*, in  
 “ the Parish of *Cannington*, held of *Thomas Tibby*, by  
 “ the annual Fee of one Farthing, in lieu of all Ser-  
 “ vices. — That the Manor of *Wely* held of the Priores  
 “ of *Buckland*, by an annual Fee of two Shillings in lieu  
 “ of all Services. — That the Messuages in *Bridgwater*,  
 “ held of the Lord of *Dawbeney*, as of his Manor of  
 “ *Haygrove*, but by what Services the Jurors cannot  
 “ tell. — That the Lands in *Wolverston* are held of  
 “ *William Portman*, *Richard Uney*, *Richard Dodyng-*  
 “ *ton*, and *John Crockburn*, as of their Manor of *Wol-*  
 “ *veston*, by the Service of one Pound of *Cummin*, to  
 “ be annually paid at the Feast of St. *Michael* the  
 “ *Archangle*. — That the Lands in *Wely*, *Huchbyn*,  
 “ *Bauntesland*, alias *Bluntland*, *Webb-House*, *Ernesham*,  
 “ *Starkestrand*, alias *Storkestrand*, *Rydon*, and *Culwere*,  
 “ in the Parish of *North-Pederton*, are held of the a-  
 “ foresaid Priores of *Buckland*, but by what Services  
 “ the Jury cannot tell. — Lastly, that the Lands  
 “ in *Hampnie*, near *Bridgwater*, are held of the Ab-  
 “ bot of *Athelnay*, but the Jurors know not by what  
 “ Services.

“ THE Jurors farther say, that *Alice Jones*, alias  
 “ *Perceval*, was of the Age of fifty Years, and more,  
 “ at the Death of her Brother *John Cave*; and that  
 “ *James Perceval*, is the Son and Heir of *David Per-*  
 “ *ceval* aforesaid, and at the Time of his Father’s  
 “ Death, which happened upon the fifth of *December*,  
 “ 1533, in the twenty-fifth of *Henry* the Eighth, as  
 “ we have already shewn, two Years old, and up-  
 “ wards.”

OF this *David* we shall add no more, but that he  
 was a Man of great Extravagance, and did as much  
 De-

Detriment to the Fortune of his Family, as it was in his Power to do ; but happily for them, great Part of it being settled upon his Children \*, and that which was in Reversion being guarded by the careful Management of his Wife's Mother, who enjoyed it for her Life † ; he was capable only of bringing himself and his Fortune into great Difficulty, during his own Time. *Alice* his Wife was Daughter of *Elizabeth Marshall*, by her second Husband, *Thomas Bythemore*, who was first the Wife to *John Cave*, secondly to *Thomas Bythemore*, and lastly, to *James Hadley* ; and by her, who died but little before him, he left three Sons §, *James*, *George*, and *Thomas* ; of which last she is reasonably conjectured to have died in Childbed, since it may be collected from the Records, that her Death happened at a very small Distance of Time from the Birth of her youngest Child.

ISSUE of *DAVID PERCEVAL*, and of  
*Alice Delamore*, or *Bythemore*, his Wife.

- I. *JAMES* \*\*, eldest Son, a Twin with his Brother *George* ; of him we shall treat in the next Chapter.
- II. *GEORGE* ‖, a Twin with his Brother *James*, of whom in Chapter the Fifth of this Book.
- III. *THOMAS* ‡, of whom we know nothing, but that his Wife's Name was *Catherine*, and that he left a Son also named *Thomas*. — We have no farther Account of him, or his Descendants.

\* Escheat. post mort. Johan. Bithemore, 31 Hen. VIII.

† Ex Visitat. Dorf. & Somf. penes Ducem de Kingston, ex altera penes Com. Oxon.

§ Ibid.

\*\* Escheat. post mort. David Perceval, ut supra.

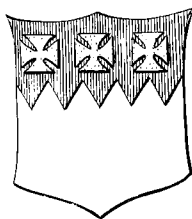
‖ Ibid.

‡ Ex Visitation. penes Ducem de Kingston, prædict.

CHAP. IV.

JAMES PERCEVAL, *Lord of Tykenham, Rolleston, Sydenham, Batilborough, Overwere, &c.*

PERCEVAL,



**JAMES**\*, the eldest Son and Heir of *David Perceval*, and *Alice*, the Daughter of *Thomas*, Sister and Heir of *John Bythemore*, Lord of *Overwere*, *Batilborough*, and *Nailsay*, was born upon *St. Andrew's Day*, viz. the thirtieth of *November*, 1531, the twenty-third of *Henry* the Eighth, and was a Twin with his Brother *George*; which, though affirmed positively in no one Record, is proved by the Comparison of several together, as we shall discover more particularly in the next Chapter.

BEING two Years and six Days old at the Time of his Father's Decease †, he was, together with his Brother *George*, in Ward to *James Hadley*, Esquire, and his

---

\* Escaet. post mort. David Perceval, 26 Hen. VIII.

† Escaet. post mort. Johanni Bythemore, 31 Hen. VIII.

his Wife *Elizabeth Marshall*, which *Elizabeth* was his Grandmother \*, as may be collected from what we have said before, being the Widow of *Thomas Bythemore*, his Mother's Father; for which § Wardship the said *Hadley* had paid no less than one thousand Pounds; a Sum so large in that Age, that it is a mighty Evidence of the great Inheritance to which he was entitled.

AFTER his Succession to the Estate, we hear nothing farther of him till the thirty-first of *Henry the Eighth*, when *John Bythemore* †, his Uncle, dying without Issue, he inherited from him the Manors of *Overwere*, and *Batilborow*; and other considerable Estates in *Dunster*, *Hurcote*, *Littleton*, and *Kingsdowne*, in the County of *Somerset*.

“ THE Inquisition taken after his Death at *Philip's-Norton*, in the County of *Somerset*, the twenty-ninth of *November*, the thirty-first of *Henry the Eighth* §, *A. D.* 1539, rehearſes, that a Settlement was made, upon the Marriage of *Thomas Bythemore* and *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *John Marshall*, Father and Mother of the said *John*, by *Roger Bythemore*, Father of the said *Thomas*, of forty Messuages, and one thousand Acres of Meadow and Pasture, and the Appurtenances, being Parcel of his Manor of *Overwere*, and other his Estates in *Hurcote*, *Littleton*, and *Kingsdown*, with Remainder to their Issue Male, and in Failure thereof, to the Male Heirs of the said *Roger Bythemore*, for ever.

“ THAT the said *Thomas* dying, *Elizabeth* his Widow became seised of these Estates, in Right of her Dower, but gave them up afterwards to her Son *John Bythemore*, the Person upon whose Death the Inquisition was taken.

“ BUT the said *John* dying upon the thirteenth of *September*, in the thirty-first of *Henry the Eighth*,

1539,

\* Claus. 25 Hen. VIII. ut supra.

† Escaet. post mort. Johan. Bythemore, 31 Hen. VIII. ut supra.

† Ibid.

|| Unica pars Claus. 1533, in Capell. Rotulor.

“ 1539, the Lands before recited in the Settlement,  
 “ by virtue thereof reverted to *Richard Bythemore*,  
 “ Uncle to the said *John*, and second Son to *Roger*  
 “ before-mentioned.

“ BUT farther, the Jurors say, that this *John By-*  
 “ *themore* died likewise seised of the Remainder of the  
 “ Manor of *Overwerē*, and other Lands, in *Dunster*,  
 “ *Hurcote*, *Littleton*, and *Kingsdown*, and also of the  
 “ Manor of *Batilborow*; all which, being not subject  
 “ to the said Settlement, descended to the next Heir  
 “ at Law, viz. to *James Perceval*, his Cousin, as Son  
 “ to *Alice*, Sister of the said *John Bythemore* (at the  
 “ Time of taking that Inquisition, more than seven,  
 “ in reality wanting but one Day of eight) Years  
 “ old.

“ AND as to the Tenure of these Estates, That  
 “ the Manor of *Batilborow* is held of the King, as of  
 “ his Manor of *Southbrent*, Parcel of his Monastery of  
 “ *Glastonbury*, ; but by what Service they know not.  
 “ ——— That the Lands in *Overwerē* are held of the  
 “ Dean and Chapter of *Wells*, as of their Manor of  
 “ *Wedmore*, but by what Service they know not. That  
 “ the Lands in *Dunster* are held of *John Lutterell*,  
 “ Esquire, as of his Castle of *Dunster*, but by what  
 “ Services they know not. ——— And that those in  
 “ *Hurcote*, *Littleton*, and *Kingsdown*, are held of  
 “ *William Popley*, Esquire, as of his Manor of *Somer-*  
 “ *ton*, but by what Service they are likewise ignorant.”

BUT after this\*, the said *James Perceval* survived  
 not many Years, for being still in his Minority, he  
 died upon the twenty-fourth of *March*, One thousand  
 five hundred and forty-eight, the second of King *Ed-*  
*ward* the Sixth, being then sixteen Years three Months  
 and twenty-four Days old.

THE Inquisition after the Death of the said *James*  
*Perceval*, was taken at *Bridgwater*, in the County  
 of

---

\* Escheat. post mort. Jacobi Perceval, de Sydenham, 6 Edw. VI.  
 secunda pars.



of *Somerset*, upon the tenth of *November* following, before *Alexander Popham*, then Escheator of that County.

“ IT is there observed, that *Roger Bythemore*, Great Grandfather of this *James Perceval*, settled the Manor of *Overwere*, and other Lands in *Overwere*, and *Netherwere*, before observed, upon *Thomas Bythemore*, his Son, and *Elizabeth Marshall* his Wife, and their Issue, as above; and of these the said *James Perceval* died seised, as also of the Manor of *Batilborow*, being Son of *Alice*, Sister and Heir of *John*, and Daughter and Heir of the said *Thomas Bythemore*, as also of other Lands, to a great Value in *Dunster*, *Carhampton*, *Withicombe*, and *Hurcote*, *Littleton*, and *Kingsdown*, in the County of *Somerset*. — That he was also intituled in Reversion, after the Death of *Elizabeth Marshall*, (alias *Cave*, alias *Bitthemore*, alias *Hadley*, to the Manor of *Sydenham*, and other Estates in *Bridgewater*, *Wembdon*, *Chilton*, *North-Pederton*, and *Pederbinz-Mersh*.

“ Of the Tenure of these Lands: — That the Manor of *Overwere*, and the Premises in *Overwere* and *Netherwere*, were then held of *William* Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells*, but by what Service they could not say. — That *Batilborow* was held by the Service of a Sixth Part of one Knight's Fee, of the King, as of his Manor of *Southbrent*, Parcel of the Lands of the Abby of *Glastonbury*. — The Lands in *Dunster*, of *Mary Lutterell*, Widow, as of the Honour of *Dunster*, by Homage, in lieu of all Service. — Those in *Withicombe* of *Arthur Hadley*, as of his Manor of *Withicombe*, by the sixteenth Part of one Knight's Fee; the Lands in *Hurcott*, *Littleton*, and *Kingsdown*, of Sir *Ægidius Strangwicke*, Knight, as of his Manor of *Compton-Dando*.

THE Manor of *Sydenham*, and the Lands in *Bridgewater*, *Wembdon*, and *Chilton*, of Sir *Roger Bluet*, Knight, as of his Manor of *North-Pederton*, The Lands in *North-Pederton*, of *Alexander Popham*, Esquire,

“ Esquire, as of his Manor of *Buckland*. And last-  
“ ly, those in *Perderbinz-Mersh*, of *James Tilley*,  
“ Esquire, as of his Manor of *Saltbay*, by Knight-  
“ Service.

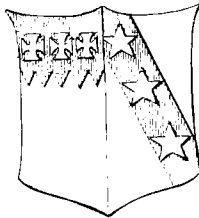
“ THE Jurors likewise say, that he departed this  
“ Life upon the twenty-fourth of *March*, in the se-  
“ cond Year of the then King *Edward* the Sixth,  
“ 1548. That his Brother *George Perceval* is his  
“ next Heir, and that he was seventeen Years of Age,  
“ upon the Feast of St. *Andrew* the Apostle, viz. the  
“ thirtieth of *November* next after his Brother’s  
“ Death.

“ THEY say farther, that the said *Elizabeth Had-*  
“ *ley*, formerly the Wife of *Thomas Bythemore*, by  
“ Virtue of a Feoffment from *Roger Bythemore*, Fa-  
“ ther to her said Husband *Thomas*, made in favour  
“ of her and her Husband *Thomas Bythemore*, had hi-  
“ therto enjoyed all the Profits of the said Manors of  
“ *Overwere* and *Netherwere*, ever since the Death of  
“ the said *James Perceval*, as likewise of the Pre-  
“ mises in *Dunster*, and *Carhampton*, *Hurcote*, *Lit-*  
“ *leton*, and *Kingsdown*, as nearest Relation, to the  
“ Use of the said *George Perceval*. And that Sir  
“ *John Sydenham*, Knight, in whose Guardianship and  
“ Custody the said *George* has remained since the  
“ Death of his Brother, received the Profits of the  
“ Manor of *Batilborough*, for the Maintenance and  
“ Education of the said *George*.”

C H A P. V.

**GEORGE PERCEVAL**, *Lord*  
*of Tykenham, Rolleston, Sydenham,*  
*Moreland, Wely, Overwere, Nether-*  
*were, Batilborow, Nailfay, &c. &c.*

PERCEVAL,



BAMPFYLDE.

**G**EORGE\*, second Son of *David Perceval*, and *Alice*, Daughter of *Thomas*, Sister and Heir of *John Bythemore*, at length Heir to the Estate of this House, by the Death of his elder Brother *James*, a Twin with his said Brother, being also born upon the Feast of *St. Andrew* the Apostle, upon the thirtieth of *November* 1531, which answers to the twenty-third Year of the Reign of King *Henry* the Eighth.

FOR as it is said in the Record after the Death of *James Perceval*, that *George* his Brother attained to the Age of seventeen Years upon the Feast of *St. Andrew* the Apostle, viz. the thirtieth of *November*, next ensuing

\* Escheat. post mort. Jacobi Perceval, ut supra.

ensuing after the Decease of *James*, which fell in the Year 1548; the Birth of the said *George* is thereby fixed to the thirtieth of *November* 1531, and it is consequently proved, that he was eight Years old upon the thirtieth of *November* 1539. — But in the Inquisition mentioned in the last Chapter, to be taken after the Death of *John Bythemore*, at *Philip's-Norton*, upon the twenty-ninth of *November*, 1539, *James Perceval*, the Brother of *George*, is there said to be not yet eight Years old. As it is evident, therefore, by the first of these Records, that *George Perceval* was eight Years old the next Day after that Inquisition was taken, viz. upon the thirtieth of *November*, 1539; and by the second Record, that *James* was not yet eight Years old, upon the Day immediately preceding, it must inevitably follow, that *James*, who was the elder Brother of *George*, must have been born also upon the next Day, viz. the thirtieth of *November*, 1531, and consequently, that *James* and *George* were Twins, as before asserted.

In order to follow which Deduction without Error, it must be noted, that King *Henry* the Eighth came to the Crown upon the twenty-second of *April*, 1509, and that his Son King *Edward* the Sixth began his Reign upon the twenty-eighth of *January*, 1546.

It is proper in this Place to observe farther, that there is a Difference made in the Computation of Records and others Matters, the legal Way of beginning the Account of the Year being from the twenty-fifth of *March*, whereas the vulgar Account is from the first of *January*. And this is extremely necessary to be considered and known, by those who concern themselves in Histories of this Nature. — It must be remembered also, that the Times are usually noted in Record only by the Years of the King's Reign, which must be computed from the first Day of the Accession of the Prince; which, however near it may fall to the twenty-fifth of *March*, the second Year of his Reign is computed from the said twenty-fifth of *March* next ensuing: and this creates a great Confusion in the Dates,

## 110 *A Genealogical History*

Dates, unless it be carefully attended to, and often causes Mistakes, that obscure the Descent of Families in a high Degree.—But we have said enough to give a proper Caution in this Particular.

WE find by the same Inquisition \* after the Death of *James Perceval* mentioned in the last Chapter, that this *George* his Brother was then in the Guardianship of Sir *John Sydenham*, Knight, who received the Profits of the Manor of *Batilborow*, for the Maintenance and Support of his Ward.

IT appears farther †, that the Profits of the Manor of *Overwere*, and other Lands in *Netherwere*, were enjoyed still by *Elizabeth* the Wife of *James Hadley*, Widow of *Thomas Bythemore*, so often mentioned before, for her own Life; and the Profits of all the other Estates, in *Dunster*, *Carhampton*, *Hurcote*, *Littleton*, and *Kingsdown*, were received likewise by the said *Elizabeth*, as nearest Relation to the said *George Perceval*, to be accounted for by her to his Use.

SOMETIME in the following Year, being then but eighteen Years of Age §, he was married to *Elizabeth* Daughter of Sir *Edward Bampfylde*, of *Polymore*, in the County of *Devon*, Knight, by *Elizabeth* his Wife, Daughter of Sir *Nicholas Wadham*, of *Merrifield*, in the County of *Somerset*.

BY this Marriage a very great Descent in Blood accrued to this Family, from so many Sovereign Houses in *Europe*, and great Families, that we may be well excused in giving a short Account of them; and especially, as not only the Dignity of this Family will appear the more conspicuous from it, but because there are many Baronies in Fee concerned in it, which being often, after long Time, recovered, by a due Deduction of the different Descents, none of them ought ever to be neglected.

FIRST

\* Escheat. post mort. Jacobi Perceval, ut supra.

† Ibid.

§ Visit. Dorf. & Somf. & Devon. in Offic. Armor. & in Visit. prædict.

### of the House of YVERY, &c. III

FIRST then, with respect to *Elizabeth Wadham*, the Mother of the Wife of this *George Perceval*, she was descended, through a number of very ancient Families, from *Longespe*, Earl of *Salisbury*, the Barons of *Nevil*, *Martin*, *Lorty*, and *Walrond*.

AND on the other Side of *Bampfylde*, the Descents from the Old Nobility are very great.—For, by *Margaret*, Daughter and Coheir of Sir *Thomas St. Maur*, of *Rode*, Son of Sir *John*, Son of *John*, Son of *Richard* Lord *St. Maur*, Son of *Nicholas* Lord *St. Maur*, by *Muriel Luvel*, Granddaughter and Heir to *Richard* Lord *Luvel* of *Castle-Kari*, in the County of *Somerset*. The Derivation of this illustrious Family is so often repeated, both from the *Saxon* and *Norman* Kings of *England*, the Kings of *France* and *Scotland*, and other Sovereign Houses, that there is no Possibility of entering into the Enumeration of them here, without wholly disjointing the Thread of our Narration; we are therefore obliged to refer the Reader to the Chapter of the Alliances of this House, to avoid this Inconvenience.—It will be sufficient therefore to observe farther in this Place, that a Descent was acquired by this Branch of the House of *Yvery*, from the Heirefs of the Barons *Luvel* of *Kari* \*, the second Branch of the same Family.—And a Descent through the Heirefs of *David* the Ninth, King of *Scotland*, Earl of *Huntingdon*, Son of *Henry*, Son of *David* King of *Scotland*, Son of *Malcolm Canmore*, Son of *Duncan* King of *Scotland*, murdered by *Macbeth*.—Also from *Margaret*, the sole Heirefs of the *Saxon* Line of the Kings of *England*, Sister of *Edgar Atheling*, Daughter of *Edmund*, Son of *Edmund Ironside*, King of *England*; which *Margaret* was the Wife of *Malcolm Canmore*.—Also from the Kings of *Hungary*, the Daughter of *Solomon* King of *Hungary*, who was Mother to the said *Margaret*. And again, from the *Franconian* Emperors, by *Sophia*, Daughter of the Emperor

---

\* See the Descent at the End of the third Book of the first Volume.

Emperor *Henry Niger*, who was Wife to the said *Solomon* King of *Hungary*. And from the Dukes of *Aquitain*, by *Agnez*, Daughter of *William* Duke of *Aquitain*, Wife of the said Empress, from the Heirefs of the Barons *Moreville*, *Engaine*, *Galloway*, *Kevelioke* Earl of *Chester*, the Earls of *Mercia*, *St. Liz* Earl of *Northampton*, *Waltbeof* Earl of *Northumberland*, *Lambert* Count of *Lentz*, Uncle to *Godfrey* of *Bo-loyne*, King of *Jerusalem*, *Quincy* Earl of *Winchester*, *Bellomonte* Earl of *Leicester*, and *Mellent*, *Guader* Earl of *Norfolk*, the Barons *Grentmesnil*, the Counts of *Vermandois* of the House of *Charlemaign*. From *Henry* the First, King of *France*, and from the Kings of *Russia*, by *Anne*, Daughter of *George* King of *Russia*, his Wife. From the Emperors of *Constantinople*. From the Barons *Zouch* of *Asbby*, (paternally descended from the Sovereign House of *Brittany*) from *Rosmar* Earl of *Salisbury*. From *Riddlesford* Barons of *Bray* in *Ireland* †. And from a Multitude of other great and noble Families, as *Brian*, *Erlegb*, *Chevroyl*, *Paveley*, *De Brook*, *St. Lando*, *Hungerford*, *Cobbam*, *Chokke*, *Beauchamp* of *Hacche*, &c.

AND here we must observe, before we proceed any farther, a very remarkable Incident, with relation to this Marriage.

*ELIZABETH BAMPFYLDE* \*, the Wife of *George Perceval*, of whom we here treat, had at first a Portion only of two thousand Marks, which was left her by her Father, together with the Increase that might be made during her Minority.—This Fortune, (though a Provision suited to the Quality of either of the Parties, in an Age when Money was yet

ex-

---

† Note, That it is needless to encumber this Work with the Proofs of all these Royal Descents,—either here, or in any other Part of the Work,—as we name the Families through which the Descent accrues.—All the Accounts of the Books of the Baronage, and of the Office of Arms, will shew the respective Descents, with their Proofs, which the Curious may readily follow from one to the other, without much Trouble.

\* Ex Chart. Famil.

extremely scarce in *England*, and the Fashion of giving Portions very slightly introduced) was still not a sufficient Inducement to the Relations of this *George* to dispose of him in Marriage to that Lady, he being then looked upon as Master, in Possession or Reversion, of one of the greatest Estates in the *Western* Parts of *England*, in the whole amounting to two thousand Pounds *per annum*.

BUT this *Elizabeth Bampfylde* was at that Time considered as one of the greatest Heireffes in those Parts, both for Family and Fortune.——As to the first, we have already hinted at it.——But as to her Fortune, her elder Brother *Edward* dying without Issue, and another named *Richard* being reputed also dead for many Years, she was thought to be a Coheir to the great Estate of *St. Maur* and *Bampfylde*.

THE Belief of this was so strong, that it prevailed every where; insomuch that in many cotemporary Pedigrees\*, drawn by the greatest Heralds of those Times, this *Elizabeth* is insisted on as Coheir of that Family.——And this of *Perceval* did then, and since continue to quarter all the Arms of those great Houses, from the Heireffes of which they are derived in Blood, through this of *Bampfylde*; among which, those of the Crown of *Scotland*, and of *England* before the Conquest, are not the least considerable.

IT was consequently expected, that upon the full Age of this *George Perceval*, he should have been admitted into the Purparty of these great Estates, in Right of his Wife.——When, on a sudden appeared a Man, who stiled himself *Richard Bampfylde*, the second Son of the late Sir *Edward Bampfylde*, by *Elizabeth Wadham*. This Man gaining a Woman, who pretended to have been his Nurse, she swore positively that she knew him to be the Person he affirmed himself

---

\* Lilly's Pedigrees of the English Nobility, penes Comit. de Egmont.



self to be †, by certain Marks upon his Body, which tallied exactly with those of that *Richard Bampfylde* she had formerly nursed.

AND such was the Weight of this Evidence §, that however suspicious it might seem, the said *Richard Bampfylde*, who had been employed in the lowest Offices in Life, in the Family of a private Gentleman, and was at the Time of this Claim, no better than a Huntsman in the same House, obtained Possession of the Estate; and from him descended the Family of *Bampfylde*, which still flourish very worthily in the same County of *Devon*.——The Family of *Perceval* in vain then, and less efficaciously now, insisting on their Rights, of which they have maintained no other than Quartering the Arms to which they were entitled by that Marriage, and in which they are warranted by so many Authorities of Time itself.——But the Modesty of this House at present discontinue this Demonstration of a Right which is but imperfectly acknowledged, declining to add any Lustre which they derive from a contested Title, to the other great and indisputed Rights which they enjoy.

THE next Year (*viz.* 1550) after this Marriage, this Lady brought him a Son named *Richard*, who was his Heir, and of whom we shall give a particular Account in his proper Place.

WE have recovered nothing farther material of this *George Perceval*\*, till the thirteenth of *November*, 1553, the first of *Philip* and *Mary*, when he had Livery of the Manors of *Overwere* and *Batilborow*, with the Lands in *Dunster*, *Carhampton*, *Hurcote*, *Littleton*, and *Kingfdown*; in which Act of Livery is recited, almost *verbatim*, the Inquisition after the Death of *James Perceval*, Brother of this *George*; so that it is needless  
to

† Lilly's Pedigrees of the English Nobility, penes Comit. de Egmont.

§ Prince's Worthies of Devon. Baronetage.

\* Ex Libro Libration. Cur. Wardor. Edwardo VI. Philippo & Maria, & Elizabetha Regnantibus, fol. 115.

to be more particular in our Mention of it.——We shall only add, that the said *George* had attained to the Age of twenty-one Years on the thirtieth of *November* precedent, *A. D.* 1552, in the sixth Year of the Reign of King *Edward* the Sixth.

It appears farther by this Livery, that the Estate of *Cave*, viz. the Manors of *Sydenham*, *Moreland*, *Wely*, &c. were still in the Possession of *Elizabeth Hadley*, so often before-mentioned, who was yet living, and after whose Death they came to this *George Perceval*, but in what Year is not exactly known.

BUT it was not long before another great Estate descended to him\*; for by the Death of *John Bythemore* his Great Uncle, second Son of *Roger Bythemore*, by his second Wife, and then only Male Heir of the House of *Bythemore*, he obtained the great Manor of *Nailsay*, and the other large Possessions of that Family in the County of *Somerset*.

THIS *John Bythemore* died the eighth of *December*, in the fifth of *Edward* the Sixth, 1552. But the Inquisition after his Death was not taken till the seventh of *July* following, which was the Day after the Death of King *Edward*; so that being transacted at *Taunton*, before *Alexander Popham*, then Escheator of the County of *Somerset*, the remote Distance of that Place from *London*, where the King lay, created an unavoidable Mistake; and the Record observes it to have passed in the Reign of King *Edward* the Sixth, when it was in reality upon the first Day of the Reign of that *Mary*, who has been noted by the unhappy Appellation of the bloody Queen of *England*.

BUT to proceed farther with this Inquisition: we learn from it, that *Roger Bythemore*, (of whom we have already spoken frequently, with regard to his Settlements of the Manors of *Overwere*, &c. upon his eldest Son *Thomas*) Father of this *John*, “ did by  
“ Deed, upon the Feast of *St. Edward*, in the tenth  
Q 2 “ Year

---

\* Escaet. post mort Johannis Bythemore de Nailsay, secunda pars *Bundel*. An° 6 Edw. VI.

116 *A Genealogical History*

“ Year of King *Henry* the Eighth, 1519, enfeoff  
 “ *James Fitzjames* the elder, *Richard Ayshe*, *James*  
 “ *Perceval* (of *Weston*,) and *John Raynton*, and their  
 “ Heirs, in the Manor of *Nailsay*, with its Appurtenan-  
 “ ces; as also in three Messuages, one Cottage, one  
 “ Windmill, sixty Acres of Land, Twenty Acres of  
 “ Meadow, sixty Acres of Pasture, twelve Acres of  
 “ Wood, one hundred Acres of Rushland and Moor,  
 “ and the Rent of four Acres and two Shillings, with  
 “ the Appurtenances, in *Nailsay* and *Tykenham*, in the  
 “ County of *Somerset*, to hold for ever, to the Use of  
 “ him the said *Roger Bythemore*, and his Heirs, and to  
 “ fulfil his last Will and Testament.— And moreo-  
 “ ver, that the said *Roger Bythemore* did, upon the  
 “ seventh of *June*, in the sixteenth of *Henry* the Eighth,  
 “ *A. D.* 1525, (upon which Day he died) by his last  
 “ Will declare, that the said Feoffees should hold the  
 “ said Manor and Lands, to the Use of *Joan* his last  
 “ Wife for her Life, and afterwards for the Use of  
 “ the Male Heirs of the Bodies of the said *Roger* and  
 “ *Joan*, lawfully begotten; and in Failure of such  
 “ Issue, to the right Heirs of the said *Roger Bythe-*  
 “ *more* for ever.

“ THAT by Virtue of the said Will, (after the  
 “ said *Roger*’s Death) *Joan* his Wife became seised of  
 “ the said Lands, and she dying, they descended to  
 “ *Richard Bythemore*, the eldest Son of *Roger*, by the  
 “ said *Joan*. ——— Who dying after the fourth of  
 “ *February*, in the twenty-seventh of *Henry* the Eighth,  
 “ 1535, the said Manor and Lands then came to this  
 “ *John Bythemore*, the other Son of *Roger* and *Joan*  
 “ before-mentioned;—who dying upon the eighth of  
 “ *December*, in the sixth of *Edward* the Sixth, 1551,  
 “ as we have shewn before, without Issue, the said  
 “ Estates are now devolved upon *George Perceval* his  
 “ Cousin and next Heir, viz. Son of *Alice*, Daughter  
 “ of *Thomas*, eldest Brother of the said *John Bythe-*  
 “ *more*.

“ AND as to the Tenure of the Lands, that the  
 “ Manor of *Nailsay*, with all the other Estates in *Ty-*  
 “ *kenham*

“ *kenham* and *Nailsay*, were held of Sir *Hugh Pawlet*,  
“ Knight, but by what Services they cannot tell.”

HAVING now fairly fixed him in the Possession of this great Inheritance,——Our next Remarks tend to this Dissolution of it; for such was his inordinate Profusion, that even the very next Year, he, together with *Elizabeth* his Wife, levied a Fine of the Manor of *Overwere*, and other Lands in *Overwere* and *Netherwere*, in order to be enabled to borrow Money on them.

AND his Necessities encreasing with his Expences\*, in the ninth of *Elizabeth*, 1567, he mortgaged the whole Manor of *Overwere*, to *John Smith* of *Ubley*, Esquire.——In the next Year, 1568, he redeemed it again. and then sold it, with the Manor of *Streme*, which was dependant on it, to *Thomas Hodges*, of *Wedmore*, Esquire.—— And thus that rich and noble Lordship, then entire, and of vast Value, and obtained by a lineal Descent from the Conquest, through the Heireffes of the Noblest Families in *England*, viz. *Doway*, *Paganell*, *Gant*, *Berkeley*, *Gournay*, and *Delamore*, was for ever alienated from this House; and is since divided into Parcels, in a Multitude of Hands.

IN this Disposition of Expence, he was farther aggravated by the imprudent Behaviour of his Son, of which we shall have Occasion to speak hereafter; and at which he was so offended, that he was resolved to leave him nothing more of his Estate, than he was by Settlement obliged to do.

AND accordingly †, in the twenty-fourth of *Elizabeth*, 1582, having before raised by Fines a great Sum of Money upon it, he sold the Manor of *Nailsay* in the County of *Somerset*, to *Richard Cole* of *Bristol*, who afterwards reserving a Part of it, sold the rest of it in Parcels to a vast Advantage.

YET not long after, becoming reconciled to his Son, in the Manner we shall shew in the next Chapter,  
he

\* Fin. Somf. 9 Eliz. & Strachey's Collections.

† Ex Chartis ipsius Ricardi Cole.

he from that Time so far regarded his Affairs, that putting a Stop to his profuse Expences, he left a noble Estate behind him, notwithstanding the prodigious Injury he had done it in the beginning of his Life.

ALL we know of Certainty relating to him, after his Sale of the Manor of *Nailsay*, was, that he retired to his House at *Sydenham*, where he lived in a frugal and retired Manner.——There goes an idle Story of him whilst he lived there, still credited in that Country, that he was transported in the Night out of his Bed-Chamber, through the iron Windows of that old Seat, and by the marvellous Power of some invisible Spirit, carried through the Air, and placed in the upper Branches of a great Oak, whose venerable Head still rears itself, not yet remarkably decayed, at some Distance from that Seat.

BUT to leave this superstitious Tale.—— We must observe, that some Accounts of this Family have asserted, that he went over into *Ireland* with his Son *Richard*, whom, as they pretend, he out-lived; that he was present at the Christening of *Judith*, the first Child of his Grandson *Sir Philip Perceval*; and that he died in *Dublin*.——But all this took its Rise from a Note, in the Hand-writing of *Sir Philip Perceval*, That at the Christening, the two Great Grandfathers of the Child were present; the one of whom was taken to be this *George Perceval*: whereas it appears by other Notes, that it was *Sir William Usher*, and *Sir Robert Newcomen*, Baronet, the Grandfathers of the *Lady Perceval*, the Wife of *Sir Philip*, who were present upon that Occasion; and this we mention, to prevent the ill Consequence of differing from other Accounts, without explaining the Particulars in which they erred.

So far from his living that Time, there is reason to believe that he was dead in the Year 1601; though the exact Time of his Decease is not known: for his Son was then possessed of a large Part of the Estate. Nor is there any Probability that he was ever in *Ireland* at all, his Death having happened, as we have said,

said, in all Appearance, at least seventeen Years before *Richard Perceval* his Son was settled in the great Employments which he held in that Kingdom.

ISSUE of *GEORGE PERCEVAL*, by *Elizabeth Bampfylde* his Wife.

I. *RICHARD PERCEVAL*\*, of whom in the next Chapter.

II. *BAMPFYLDE PERCEVAL*†, who died without Issue.

III. *THOMAS PERCEVAL*§, who also died without Issue.

IV. *ELIZABETH*||, who became the Wife of *John Gilbert*, of ———, Esquire.

---

\* Ex Visitationibus Dorf. & Somf. penes Ducem de Kingston, & Com. Oxon.

† Ibid.

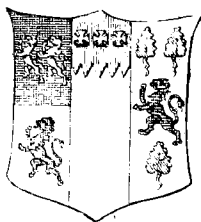
§ Ibid.

|| Ibid.

## CHAP. VI.

**RICHARD PERCEVAL**, *the fourth of that Name, Lord of Tykenham, Rolleston, Sydenham, &c. Secretary, Remembrancer, and one of the Commissioners for the Office of Receiver-General of the Court of Wards in England, Register of the same Court in Ireland; and Member of the English Parliament for the Borough of Richmond, in the County of York.*

YOUNGE, PERCEVAL, SHERMAN,



**RICHARD**\*, the fourth of that Name, eldest, and at length only Son of *George Perceval*, by *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *Sir Edward Bampfylde*, of *Polymore*,

\* Ex Testamento Philippi Perceval, Militis, filii dict. Ricardi, penes Com. Egmont, & Visitation. prædictis.

*Poltymore*, his Wife, was born, as we have before observed, in the Year 1550, the third of *Edward* the Sixth, and was educated at *St. Paul's School*, then the most famous Nursery of Learning in *England*; from thence he was sent to *Lincoln's-Inn*, according to the Mode of those Times, to acquire some general Idea of the Laws, which was then reckoned an Accomplishment of high Consequence; for the most considerable Men. In both these Stations he made an admirable Progress; yet at the same Time, he fell into such a Course of Extravagance and disorderly Living, that he became the Aversion of his Father, who was utterly unable to restrain him within any Bounds, either as to his Conduct or Expences.—— The old Man endeavoured if he could to settle him by Marriage, and accordingly proposed to him several Matches of great Advantage; partly with a View to draw him from his Irregularities, and partly to restore his own Fortune by the Portion of his Son's Wife, which he had greatly encumbered by his profuse Expences, as we have before observed.—— But in this he was likewise disappointed, the Son rashly plunging into Marriage with *Joan* †, one of the Daughters of *Henry Younge*, of *Buckborn-Weston*, in the County of *Dorset*, Esquire, a second Brother of that Family, with whom he had no Fortune.

THE Father \*, irritated beyond Measure with this Aggravation of his former Imprudence, immediately abandoned him after this Step, and would see him no more, nor contribute in any Degree to his Support; resolving, as he said, to leave his Son, *who had ruined himself by his Riots, to recover himself by his Wits*.

THIS *Richard*, however, found Means by the Credit of his reversionary Estate §, and the Assistance of his Friends,

† Visitation. Dorf. & Somf. by Sir George Leonard, 1623, p. 65. Duce de Kingston, apud Thoresby.

\* Ex Chartis Familis.

§ Ibid.



Friends, to maintain himself without any Help from his Father, several Years; during which Time he had three Sons and two Daughters, of whom we shall speak farther in their Place.

BUT the Expences of his Family increasing §, and the Fountain of his Supply being pretty near exhausted, his Friends also growing less kind than before, as finding the Charge likely to continue long upon them, and himself not yet so prudent as the same Difficulties would have rendered any other Man; he became at last obliged to quit this Kingdom, and accordingly travelled into *Spain*, where he lived four Years, leaving his Wife and Children behind him, who were taken Care of with much Friendship, by the Families of Sir *Richard Bampfylde*, and *Roger Cave* of *Stamford*, Esquire, the latter of which was only a very distant Relation, and the other one with whom his Father had had great Contests, concerning the Legality of his Pretensions to the Estate of that House.

IT is not known, nor have we been ever assisted by any Tradition of the Family, to discover how he passed these four Years of voluntary Exile, or how he came to chuse that Country, then no ways hospitable to *English* Guests, for his Retreat. But it is certain, that at the End of that Time, being informed of his Wife's Death, he returned into *England*, expecting, or at least hoping, that as she had been one principal Cause of his Disagreement with his Father, he might now recover Favour with him again. But his Hopes were vain, his Father still continuing inexorable, and totally unmoved by his Distress.

IN this unhappy Situation\*, he laboured under the greatest Difficulties, till at length, by his Relation to Mr. *Cave* of *Stamford*, with whom he passed a good deal of his Time, he became acquainted with the Lord Treasurer *Burleigh*, whose Sister Mr. *Cave* had married.—This Lord being pleased with his Talents,  
and

---

§ Ex Chartis Familiz.

\* Ibid.

and moved at his Misfortunes, took his Interests into his serious Care; and thinking that his Interposition with his Father, with whom he was well acquainted, might be of weight with him, endeavoured to procure a Reconciliation between him and his Son; to which End he wrote several Letters of Expostulation upon that Head to him: but these having no Effect, he determined to serve him in another Manner, employing him in the private Management of those Affairs of State, which required the greatest Trust and Secrecy.

IN § this Employment he passed a considerable Time, during which there is nothing memorable recorded of him; till at length, in the Year 1586, the *Spaniards* engaging in those vast Preparations which ended in that famous *Armada*, so providentially destroyed two Years after, all *Europe* became alarmed thereat, and this Kingdom in particular, being much concerned, (as it was even then suspected) in the Consequences of it, an *English* Ship was ordered to chase a *Spanish* Vessel, in which were carried Letters from the Low-Countries, which (by Intimation from abroad) were understood to contain the Secret, the Vessel being accordingly chased, and finding herself in Danger, threw her Pacquets over-board, which being recovered by the *English*, were brought to the Lord *Burleigh*, and by him laid before the Queen in Council.

BUT the Matter contained therein being wrote in Cypher\*, no Man there present was able either to read or understand it; upon which the Lord *Burleigh* proposed, that the Papers should be entrusted with this *Richard Perceval*, whom he recommended as well qualified for such a Confidence, not only on account of his Fidelity, already much experienced in the public Business, but also as he was well skilled in the *Spanish* Language, in which the said Letters were supposed to be written.

To this the Queen assenting †, and he being immediately sent for to the Council, she committed the

R 2

Pacquets

---

§ Chartis Familiæ.

\* Ibid.

† Ibid.

Pacquets to his Charge with her own Hand, in a very gracious Manner; and he so well answered the Expectation conceived of him, that he returned them to the Queen herself, the next Day at the same Hour, decyphered, translated, and fairly transcribed, in *Spanish, Latin, and English*.

THIS was the first certain Intelligence of the *Spanish* Design \*, (which was afterwards more fully explained in a Letter written by the Pope to the King of *Spain*, of which Sir *Francis Walsingham* obtained a Copy out of the Pope's Closet, by Means of a Priest his Spy) and the Importance of this Discovery was such, and the Expedition of the Person employed in it, so grateful to the Queen, that she immediately ordered him a Pension of eight hundred Marks *per annum*, which he enjoyed all his Life after. To this she added soon after a Place in the Dutchy-Court of *Lancaster*, worth four hundred Pounds *per annum* more; she said farther, that she would take him herself under her own peculiar Care.——But the Lord *Burleigh* said, he was too useful to be taken from him, and promised that he should be no Sufferer in his Fortunes by it.

Soon after this †, Sir *Robert Cecil*, afterwards Earl of *Salisbury*, being appointed Secretary of State, the Lord *Burleigh*, partly out of a Regard to his Son, and partly from a View of Advantage to this *Richard*, whom he held in extraordinary Esteem, and who was still utterly neglected by his Father, recommended him to be employed in the Business of that Office; and from that Lord he met with great Friendship.—For he being afterwards made Master of the Court of Wards, appointed him Secretary of that Court, a Place of great Credit, and worth two thousand Pounds *per annum*.

NOT long after this Event §, continuing in great Interest, and obtaining great Advantages, his Father *George* was at length moved by his Prosperity, when  
he

---

\* Ex Chartis Familiaræ.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

he could not be made to relent at his Adversity, and was reconciled to him; leaving him at his Death what remained of his Estate, viz. the Manors of *Sydenham*, *Moreland*, and *Weley*, with *Tykenham*, *Rolleston*, and divers other Lands in the County of *Somerset*, which amounted to seventeen hundred Pounds *per annum*, besides a considerable Sum of Money, saved out of the Fines of his Estate, which he had managed in his later Years with good OEconomy.

SOMETIME during the latter End of this Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, (though we cannot exactly fix the Date) he was sent over into *Ireland*, to inform himself whether the Court of Wards could be extended there, with any Profit to the Crown. — This was the first Visit made thither by any of this Family, from the Extinction of that Branch who were Barons of that Kingdom, which happened near three hundred Years before. — But that Country being then in great Disorder, from the Rebellion of *Tyrone*, he disliked the Situation of Affairs so much, that he made a Report which discouraged any Attempt towards a Settlement of that Branch of the Revenue for that Time. — It was then, as we presume, that he obtained his first Employment there; for we find by the Papers of the Family\*, that he was Commissary of the Provisions to the *English* Army in the Province of *Leinster*, at one Period of that Rebellion; but he discharged this Office by his Deputy, for he appears constantly employed in *England*, for many Years after.

IN the forty-second of *Elizabeth*, (*A. D.* 1599) he obtained a Grant † of the Wardship and Marriage of *Henry Crispe*, Son and Heir of *Henry Crispe*, in the County of *Kent*; and entered into Bonds with the Crown for the Payment of the Fine which was due thereon.

IN

---

\* Family Letters, Vol. IV. N<sup>o</sup> 328.

† Ex Libro Decretorum in Curia Wardor. 1 Jacob. fol. 117. dorso.

126 *A Genealogical History*

IN the Year following §, (*A. D.* 1600,) he had a Grant of the Wardship of *John Perceval*, of *Cannington* and *Bridgwater*, in the County of *Somerset*, Esq;

THIS Family was disowned as Relations, by the Houses both of *Sydenham* and *Weston*, both affirming, That it proceeded from a Servant in the Family of *Weston*, in old Time, who had gained a considerable Fortune in his Service, and in Gratitude had changed his Name to that of his Patron. — We have this Account of the Visitation of *Somerset* and *Dorset*, in the Earl of *Oxford's* Library, by *Robert Coke*. — But they extinguished, as we presume, in the Person of this *John Perceval* here mentioned. — For we have been able to discover nothing farther of him, or any Descendant that he had.

NOR long after \*, *viz.* upon the tenth Day of *February*, in the forty-second of that Reign, he obtained the Custody of the Manor of *Eastbury*, and other Lands, Messuages, &c. in *Carhampton*, all in the County of *Somerset*, Parcel of the Lands of *James Perceval*, of *Weston-Gordein*, Esquire, then in Ward to the Queen; which Lands were fallen into her Majesty's Hands, during the Minority of the said *James Perceval*, by the Death of *Elizabeth* his Grandmother, which happened the eighth of *September* preceding, having been the Jointure of that Lady, who had enjoyed the same, as in our former Discourse of the Line of *Weston-Gordein* we have shewn, for the Space of fifty Years and fifteen Days, *viz.* from the Death of her Husband *Edmund Perceval*, on the sixteenth Day of *August*, *A. D.* 1550, till the eighth of *September*, 1600. In this Year it seems that the Father *George Perceval* being deceased, for this *Richard* his Son being then in Possession of the Manor-House of *Sydenham*, he set a Lease thereof to one *Francis Galhampton*.

UPON

§ *Ibid.* P. 4<sup>ta</sup>, fol. 395, dorso.

\* *Ex Libro Indentura Cur. Wardor.* p. 5<sup>ta</sup>, fol. 4<sup>ta</sup>, dorso, 4. Eliz.

UPON the twenty-second of *October* next ensuing †, viz. 1601, he received likewise a Grant of the Custody of the Manors of *Weston-in-Gordano, Thrubwell* in *Weston-in-Gordano, Thrubwell, Buttcombe, and Stoke-Episcopi*; being another Parcel of the Estates of the said *James Perceval* before-mentioned, to hold during the Minority of the said Ward, under the Conditions expressed in the former Grant. It appears by the Original in the Court of Wards, that the said Grant had been made first to *Thomas Bulbeck*, Gentleman, and by him passed over to *Sir George Rodney*, Knight, who having lately killed himself, and left his Payments to the Queen not perfected, the Disposal of the said Lands did then return into the Power of the Crown again. The Fine paid upon this Grant was no more than thirty Pounds, in Consideration (as another Record of the same Court observes) of the great Diligence and Services of the said *Richard Perceval* in the Business of that Court, and Prosecution of her Majesty's Rights and Titles.

IN the following Year \*, viz. in the forty-fourth of *Elizabeth*, upon the twentieth of *May*, having obtained the *Custodium* of the Manors of *Whittington* and *Middleton*, the Estate of *Francis Albany*, Esquire, in the County of *Salop*, he entered into Bonds for the Performance of the Covenants expressed therein.

UPON the seventeenth of *November* following †, upon a like Occasion, he entered into Obligations of the same Nature, for the Custody of the Lands of *Elizabeth Bassett*, Daughter and Heir of *William Bassett*, Esquire, deceased.

THE next Record in which he is mentioned §, is in the first of King *James* the First, *A. D.* 1603, when being then of the City of *Westminster*, a Decree was made

† Ibid. p. 4. fol. 395, dorso.

\* Ex Libro Decretor. Cur. Wardor. Trin. 15 Jacob. fol. 93.

† Ibid. 17 Nov. 45 Eliz.

§ Ex Libro Decretor. Cur. Wardor. Trin. 1 Jacob. fol. 412. dorso.

made for cancelling the Bonds into which he had entered in the forty-second of *Elizabeth*, for the Fine due on the Grant of the Wardship and Marriage of *Henry Crispe*, Son and Heir of *Henry Crispe*, in the County of *Kent*; the Office having been traversed, and the Wardship discharged, so that he could receive no Benefit thereby.

THE Plague raging in and about *London*, soon after the Accession of King *James* the First ||, it was not thought prudent to call a Parliament so soon as it should have otherwise been held; but the Sickness being abated, the King issued his Writs for that Purpose, upon the thirty-first of *January*, 1603.—— Sir *Edward Philips*, Knight of the Shire for *Somerset* was Speaker of this Parliament, which met upon the nineteenth of *March* following, and continued till the seventh of *July* following, 1604; after which it was prorogued to the seventh of *February*.—— § This *Richard Percival* served in the said Parliament for the Borough of *Richmond* in *Yorkshire*, and was a very active Member, particularly in the Affairs relating to the Court of Wards, and other Matters of the Revenue.—— He was likewise so serviceable in assisting the Town of *Berwick*, with regard to their Charter, that he received Letters of Acknowledgment from several of the principal Inhabitants thereof, on Account of his Endeavours in their Behalf.

THERE does not (as we have yet discovered) occur any farther Grants of Offices or Wardships to this Gentlemen, till the third of *James* the First, *A. D.* 1606\*, when having obtained a Grant of the Wardship and Marriage of *Margaret Gawber*, he then entered into Bonds, upon the twenty-third of *November*, for Payment of the Fine agreed to be paid the Crown on that Occasion.

UPON

|| Journal of the House of Commons in England, 1 Jacob. I.

§ Ibid.

\* Ex Libro Decretor. Cur. Wardor. 16 Jac. I. fol. 282.

UPON the fifth of July, 1609 §, having then acquired the Wardship of *Samuel Sewster*, Son of *Giles Sewster*, of ———, Esquire; he, according to the ancient Form, entered into Bonds for the same.

HE received likewise at *Michaelmas* the same Year the *Custodium* of Part of the Lands of *John Stowell*, Esquire, Son and Heir of Sir *John Stowell*, Knight, (Ancestor to the present Lord *Stowell*) in the Counties of *Somerset*, *Devon*, and *Dorset*, in Conjunction with Sir *James Mervin*, Sir *Thomas Thynne*, and Sir *Richard Grotham*. This *Custodium* having been formerly granted to the Lady *Elizabeth Stowell*, Widow, and afterwards (upon her surrendering thereof) to her, and Sir *Thomas Griffin*, her then Husband, jointly, became forfeited to the Crown, on Failure of the Performance of the Conditions therein mentioned. In this Grant the Crown shewed so much Favour as to remit the Fine that was due thereon.

IN *Trinity Term* \*, the next Year, we find a new Decree concerning the Lands of *John*, the Son of Sir *John Stowell*, Knight; and the *Custodium* was ordered to be made out in favour of this *Richard Perceval*, Esq; and the other Parties joined with him in the former Grant, excepting Sir *Thomas Thynne*, whose Name was then omitted.

NOT long after, there was a † Reference of the Petition of Dame *Dorothy Jennings*, Wife of Sir *John Jennings*, Knight, a Lunatick, and Daughter of *Thomas Bulbeck*, Esq; (praying leave to accept Surrenders and Fines, and to grant out Copyhold Estates towards Payment of her Husband's Debts,) to *Robert Cecil*, Earl of *Salisbury*, Master of the Court of Wards, to his Majesty's Attorney of the said Court, to Sir *Walter Cope*, and *Richard Perceval*, Esq; and in pursuance of their Report upon this Reference, a Decree of that Court was made.

IN

---

§ Ex Libro Decretor. Cur. Wardor. Trin. 16 Jacob. I. fol. 93.

\* Ibid. 7 Jacobi I. fol. 430.

† Ibid. fol. 449.



IN this || Year Sir *William Fleetwode*, Knight, Receiver General of the Court of Wards, having, notwithstanding the great Profit of that Employment, so negligently and unfaithfully demeaned himself therein, that there was arisen a Deficiency of vast Sums of Money in his Accounts with the Crown; upon his Disgrace, that Office being taken from him, was vested in Commissioners, of which this *Richard* was appointed one, with a sole Grant of all the Profits of that Place, paying yearly to the other Commissioners a Salary of one hundred Marks, so long as that Office should remain in Commission.

A Decree § of that Court was likewise then made, exhibiting new Regulations to prevent the like Disorders for the Time to come, bearing Date the twenty-first of *September*, in the same Year.

ABOUT the same Time, an Order was issued for the setting over and delivering of all Bonds for Money due to his Majesty, to this *Richard Perceval*, and one other of the Commissioners before mentioned.

AND as \*, after so great a Loss sustained by the Crown, no Precautions were thought too great to secure this Branch of the Revenue, it was determined to create a new Officer, as a Check upon that of the Receiver General, by the Name of Remembrancer of the Court of Wards, a Place of much Credit, as requiring a Person of the greatest Ability and Sufficiency. — Which Place, being by the Interest of the Earl of *Salisbury* reserved to the Disposal of the Master of that Court, (the Post then held by that Lord) was by him conferred upon this *Richard Perceval* in *Hillary* Term of the same Year.

IN the *Trinity* Term †, the Year next ensuing, *viz.* upon the eighth of *James* the First, *A. D.* 1611, he had

|| Ex Libro Decretor. Cur. Wardor. Trin. 7 Jacobi I. fol. 454.

§ Ex Libro Literar. Patent. Cur. Wardor. 7 Jacobi. p. 10. fol. 376. dorso.

\* Ex Libro Literar. Patent. & Decret. Cur. Wardor. p. 13. fol. 111. dorso.

† Ex Libro Decretor. Trin. 8 Jacobi I. Cur. Wardor. fol. 637.

had Licence to assign over to the Crown a Bond of sixteen hundred Pounds, (forfeited to him by *John Buller*, Esq;) as a Security for the Money then due by him on account of the *Custodium* of the Lands of *Elizabeth Basset*, Daughter and Heir of *William Basset*, Esq; before mentioned.

IN the *Michaelmas* || Term following, one *Robert Oliver* (who had married a near Relation of this *Richard Perceval*,) having procured the said *Richard* to be bound for him in several considerable Sums of Money, and having afterwards drawn in *James Perceval*, his eldest Son, to do the like, without his Father's Knowledge, (as the Record recites;) and the said *Oliver* having withdrawn himself into *Ireland*, leaving nothing that he could seize for the Satisfaction of those Debts, excepting only the Wardship of *Richard Chaffe*, of the County of *Devon*, he obtained a Decree of the Court to transfer the said Wardship to himself, and his Assigns, together with the *Custodium* of the Lands of the said *Chaffe*. During the ninth of the Reign of *James* the First, it does not appear by the Records of the Court of Wards, that he received any further Favour; but in the tenth of the same Reign, *A. D.* 1612, he obtained a *Custodium* of the Lands of ----- *Hardwicke*, Esq; then in Ward to the Crown, in which Year the said *Richard Perceval*, and *Alice* his Wife, joined in the Sale of the Manor of *Sydenham* to Mr. *Bull*, from whom it descended to *George Bubb Dodding-ton*, Esq; late one of the Lords of the Treasury, the present Possessor.

SOMETIME after, he had a remarkable Trial at Law for the Reversion of the Place of Auditor General of the Court of Wards, which he had obtained of the Crown by Patent for his Life, a Charge of great Importance, Profit, and Honour, being the fourth Office in Rank in that Court.———This \* Case, which is contained at large in *Coke's Reports*, is one of great note, it being then determined that the Grant was not

S 2

valid,

|| Ex Libro Decretor. Mich. 8 Jacobi I. Cur. Wardor. fol 643.

\* Auditor Curle's Case in *Coke's Rep.* Part II. Vol. V.P. p. 2, 3, 4.

## 132 *A Genealogical History*

valid, because it was the Reversion of a Judicial Office, which Decision has ever since directed the Course of the Law in this Particular.

ABOUT this Time † also, he obtained a Grant of the Estate of *Richard Benyon*, who was likewise then in Ward.

AND at *Michaelmas* ||, the same Year, a Decree was made in his Favour, by the Name of *Richard Perceval*, of *Chestnut*, in *Hertfordshire*, Esq; (where he then resided,) permitting him to make over a Bond for four hundred Pounds, forfeited for Non-performance of the Condition thereon endorsed, by *John Langford*, of *Axworth*, in the County of *Devon*, Esq; in order to answer the Security to be given for two Grants of the Estates of *Hardwicke* and *Benyon*, before recited.

AFTER this, in *Michaelmas* § Term, the twelfth of *James* the First, we find a Decree concerning the Sale of the Estate of the said *Langford*, in the County of *Devon*, to make good the Sums due to the Crown in manner aforesaid, Mr. *Perceval* having only received Part of the Money due.

IN *Hillary* \* Term following, a Decree was made for the said *Richard* to make over the Custody of the Body, the Effect of the Marriage, and his Claim to the Lease of the Lands of *Richard Chaffe*, of the County of *Devon*, to *Edward Wyott* and *Richard Smith*, for the Use of *Jeremy Hilliard*, of the City of *Exeter*; Matters having been agreed between the said *Perceval* and *Hilliard*, with the Consent of the Court, the former having received Satisfaction by the Appointment of the latter, for the Value of the said Wardship, Marriage, and Lease.

UPON the nineteenth of *November* †, a few Days after, another Decree occurs, confirming the Sale of the Estate of *John Langford*, Esquire, to \_\_\_\_\_ *Humphry*, Esquire; by which the Bonds given by Mr.

*Langford*

† Ex Libro Decretor. Cur. Ward. 10 Jac. fol. 100, dorso. Mich.

|| Ibid. fol. 100, dorso.

§ Ibid. Mich. 12 Jacob. fol. 495, dorso.

\* Ibid. Hill. 12 Jacob. fol. 503, dorso.

† Ibid. fol. 521.

*Langford* to Mr. *Perceval*, with Mr. *Perceval*'s Assignment thereof to his Majesty, were ordered to be cancelled, and a Vacate to be entered thereon: and that the Estallment of the Debt of the said *Richard Perceval*, Esquire, to his Majesty, should stand according to former Orders.

BUT now his Interest having visibly declined, ever since the Death of the Lord Treasurer *Salisbury* ||, who had always been his sincere Friend. In this very Term he was dismissed his Employment as Remembrancer of the Court of Wards, by *William* Lord *Knollys*, who had succeeded the said Lord *Salisbury* in his Office of that Court. This was done in an arbitrary Manner, without any Reason assigned, after many Years of Service, with the greatest Testimonies of Ability and Integrity, that had ever been experienced in any Servant of the Crown.

AND not long after he was removed from all his other Employments †, both in that Court, and in the Dutchy Court of *Lancaster*; nothing being left him but the Pension of eight hundred Marks *per annum*, which having been granted upon so memorable a Service in the late Reign, was yet reserved to him.

HAVING thus quitted all public Business, in the Year 1614, he little thought to be taken into the Service of the Crown again; but he was found too useful to be wholly laid aside, as appeared in a little Time.

FOR about three Years after\*, King *James* the First being made acquainted with the bad Management of the Wards in *Ireland*, which, though conducted with great Oppression to the Subject, was of little or no Advantage to himself. He determined to take some Course therein; but wanting some Officer of Experience to employ in that Business, no other could be found, from whom so much Service was expected, as from this *Richard Perceval*, who in the different Posts

of

---

|| Ibid. ex Libro Literar. Patent. & Decretor. Wardor. p. 13. 2. fol. 111. dorso, 12 Jacob.

† Ex Vet. Cart. Familiae.

\* Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond.

of Secretary, Receiver-General, and Remembrancer of that Court in *England* for above twenty Years, had improved that Branch of the Revenue from Sixty to Ninety Thousand Pounds *per annum*.

THE Prospect of a proportional Encrease in the other Kingdom, was the only Interest that brought him into Business again.——For though in that long Course of lucrative Employment, and notwithstanding the numerous Grants he had from Time to Time received, he had been imprudent enough to have made but little Addition to his paternal Fortune, yet that being then very considerable, he was little inclined to give himself any farther Trouble, having sufficiently experienced the anxious and precarious State of a public Life. However, after some Difficulty, he was prevailed upon to accept the Office of Register of the Court of Wards, upon the new Establishment in *Ireland*, a Place then estimated to be worth in Fees and Perquisites one thousand Pounds *per annum*, to which was added an annual \* Pension of one thousand Marks, to make it worthy his Acceptance.

THE Wards and Profits of them, which had been till then in the absolute Disposal of the Deputy-Governor of that Kingdom; being now taken out of that Hand, a Commission was issued for the Conduct of them there, directed to the Lord Chief-Justice of the King's-Bench, the Master of the Rolls, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, and the Muster-Master-General, or any three of them. The Commissioners, who were eight or ten in number, though they made great Profit by their Places, had only a Sallary of forty Pounds *per annum* each of them, out of the *Concordatum*.

THE Commission was dated on the fourteenth of July †, the fourteenth of *James* the First, *A. D.* 1617, and the Warrant for the Appointment of this *Richard Perceval*, as Register to the said Commission, bears date the fourteenth of *October* following. —— On the

---

\* Family Letters, Vol. VII. fol. 309.

† Ex Officio Registrarius in Hibernia.

the sixteenth of the same Month he passed Patent, and the next Day was sworn into his Office.

AND such was the immediate Consequence of his Labours, that though the Powers were executed with the utmost Moderation, and without any Discontentment of the People, this Part of the Revenue was very suddenly improved, from one to three thousand Pounds a Year.

BEING thus introduced into that Kingdom \*, and finding the Advantage with which he might dispose of Money there, he sold twelve hundred Pounds *per annum* of his Estate in the County of *Somerset* in *England*, the Amount of which Sale he laid out in Mortgages upon Estates in the County of *Corke* in *Ireland*. And thus began the first Establishment of that great Fortune since enjoyed by his Descendants in those Parts.

IN 1618, the very next Year †, he was obliged to come over again to *England*, to oppose the Endeavours of a great *Scotch* Favourite, to divest him of his new Employment, which was soon discovered to be far greater Profit than it was at first conceived to have been. But this he could not do upon easier Terms than that of surrendering his Pension, which was immediately given to the Favourite, together with the Disposal of the Reversion of his Office, which he had much laboured to obtain for his Sons.

HOWEVER, upon the seventeenth of *March* of the same Year §, he received a Grant of the same Fee of forty Pounds, which the rest of the Commissioners for the Wards enjoyed, but under a special Proviso, that it should not go to the Person who had obtained the Reversion of his Patent; and this was done to place him on a level with the rest of the Board.

IN *Trinity* Term the same Year, a Decree was made ‡ out for cancelling the Bonds due by this *Richard*

\* Ex Chart. Famil.

† Ibid.

§ Out of the Council Books at Whitehall, 17 March, 1618, & 16°.

‡ Ex Lib. Decretor. Cur. Wardor. Trin. 15 Jacob. fol. 93.

*Richard Perceval*, then residing at *Kensington*, in the County of *Middlesex*, for Payment of the Fine due upon the Lease of the Lands of *Elizabeth Basset*, *Francis Albany*, and *Samuel Sewster*, Esquires, of whom we have before spoken; *William Earl of Salisbury*, Son to the late Treasurer, and Sir *Anthony Forrest*, engaging themselves for the respective Sums.

THE next Year afterwards, in 1619†, being called over by Summons of the Council in *England*, on account of some new Regulations intended to be made in *Ireland*, he obtained a Privy-Seal for a full Discharge of all his Debts due to the Crown, in Consideration of his great Services.

AND in *Michaelmas* Term the same Year, Process having been issued against him and others, for Payment of the Fines due for the Wardship and Marriage of *Margaret Gawber*, and for the *Custodium* of the Lands of *Richard Benyon* before-mentioned. And whereas it appeared §, that by Decree in *Michaelmas* Term, the twelfth of *James* the First, the Marriage of the said *Margaret Gawber* had been discharged, at the Suit of *Richard Earl of Dorset*; and that the *Custodium* of the Lands of *Benyon* was never enjoyed, nor any Profit taken thereby, a new Office having been found, and a new *Custodium* granted of the said Ward's Lands to one *Henry Bell*, he met with so much Justice, that a Decree was made for delivering up the said Bonds to him to be cancelled, and for discharging all the Process thereupon.

BUT now, in the Year following, 1620, being advanced into the sixty-ninth Year of his Age, his Health having for some Time gradually declined, he died upon the fourth of *September*, in *Ireland*, as it is presumed, and was buried in the Church of *St. Audeon* in *Dublin*, as it should seem, from the following Inscription, which was lately\*, and is probably now subsisting there.

D. O. M.

† Out of the Council Books at Whitehall.

§ Ex Libro Decretor. Cur. Wardor. 16 Jacob. I. Mich.

\* Ex Vet. Cart. Familia.

D. O. M.

|| - - - - - the Earthe Remaines of Richarde Percivall, late of Sydenham in the Countye of Somersett Esquire, Son of George, Son of David, Son of Thomas, Son of Ralf, second Son of S<sup>r</sup> Richarde, and Brother of Ralf Percivall, Lord of Weston in Gordano in the Countye of Somersette aforesaide, Esqr, descendyd of an auntient Familie, whiche have Flourished in those Partes for more than five hundrede Yeres.

Which Richarde having passed thro various Fortunes good and evile did exercise diverse memorable Employments in the Courte of Wardes and Lyveries under that renoued Lord Robert Sicill Earl of Salisburie, Master of the said Courte in England, in the Raigne of her late Majestye of Bleffyd Remembraunce, as also of his Sacred Majestye that now is, whereine having approved hymself of ample and lucrative Utilitie unto the Crowne, he was transmtyted from that Kyngdom in the Yere of our Lord God Sixteen Hundred and Seventeene, to perform the like Services in this, upon the Establishmente of a Commission then appointed for the Wardes therein, and havinge in the Office of Register under the said Commission travailed with equal Paine to himselfe and Profyte to his Majestye for the Space of three Yeres, he was called away to pay an other Service before the Throne of the Almightye Kynge of Kynges upon the fourth of September in the Year of our Redemption One Thousand Six Hundred and Twentye, and of his own Age the Sixty and Ninthe.

His

---

|| The first Words are not legible.



His first Wyfe was Jone the Daughter of Henry Younge of Buckhorn-Weston in the County of Dorset Esquire, by whom he had divers Children, all long since deceased. By his seconde, Alice Daughter of John Sherman of Ottry St Maries in Com. Devon Esq<sup>r</sup> he left two Daughters, Norrys and Alice, and two Sons, Walter & Phillipe, who in Pious Memorye of so good a Frende and Father, have Caused this Inscription to be written upon his Grave.

AFTER the Death of his first Lady, he lived a Widower for several Years \* ; but at length, being taken more with her Qualifications, than tempted either by her Beauty or Fortune, he married *Alice*, Daughter of *John Sherman*, of *Ottry St. Marys* in the County of *Devon*, Esquire, who enjoyed likewise a good Estate in the County of *Hertford*. The Time of this Marriage is not exactly known, but that it was before the forty-first of *Elizabeth*, 1599, is evident from certain Dates upon her Pictures in that Year.

THIS Lady †, by the Side of her Father, proceeded from a very ancient Family in the County of *Suffolk*, transplanted some Generations before into the County of *Devon*: and by the Side of her Mother, who was the Daughter of Sir *Bernard Drake*, of *Ashe*, Knight, in the same County, descended from most of the eminent Families of that Province. The Wife of *John Drake*, Esquire, Father of the said Sir *Bernard*, being the Daughter of *Roger Greenville*, of *Stowe*, in that County, Ancestor to the late Earls of *Bath*, Baron of *Lansdown*, and present Countess of *Granville*; and *Gertrude*, Wife to the said *Bernard Drake*, was Daughter of *Bartholomew Fortescue*, of *Pbilly*, Esquire. of the Family of the present Lord *Clinton*, by *Joan* his Wife, eldest Daughter of Sir *Ralph St. Leger*, Knt. —But

---

\* Ex Chart. Famil.

† Visit. Devon. in Officio Armor.

*of the House of YVERY, &c. 139*

— But not to wander farther into the Deduction of Alliances so remote, we refer to the Genealogies of these Families we have mentioned, for the many other ancient Western Houses, whose Blood was by this Marriage brought into that of which we principally treat in this Place; it being by this Lady only, that the Line of this *Richard Perceval* was continued, the Children by his first Wife having all extinguished without Issue, during his own Life.

ISSUE of *RICHARD PERCEVAL*, Esquire, Lord of *Sydenham*, &c. in the County of *Somerset*, and *Joan*, (Daughter of *Henry Younge*, of *Buckhorn-Weston*, in the County of *Dorset*, Esquire,) his first Wife.

I. *JAMES*, the eldest Son, married ———, the Daughter and Heir of ——— *Potts*, in the County of *Devon*\*, with whom he had obtained a large Inheritance for his Family, but that he died without Issue sometime after the Year 1611; the last Mention † that we find made of him being in that Year, which was the eighth of *James* the First, in relation to certain Bonds inadvertently entered into, on behalf of *Robert Oliver*, a Relation to him, who deserting this Country. *Richard*, the Father of this *James*, obtained a Wardship, which had been formerly granted the said *Oliver*, in Satisfaction for the Debts due to him, and his said Son *James*, by the said *Oliver*.

II. *FRANCIS* §, who being employed in the *East-Indies* in Traffic, was there unfortunately killed, by the Treachery of the *Indians* of *Malabar*, or some other neighbouring Province there.

T 2

III.

---

\* Visit. Dorf. & Somf. penes Ducem de Kingston, per Leonard & St. George.

† Ex Libro Decretor. Cur. Wardor. Mich. 8 Jacob. I. fol 643.

§ In Visitatione prædict.

III. *RICHARD* \*, being very young, deserted his School, and falling into scandalous Debauches, for Love of an Actress associated himself with a Company of Strollers, with whom he went down to *Canterbury*, and was there murdered in a drunken Scuffle with them, about the Age of eighteen Years.

IV. *MARY* †, the eldest Daughter, was married to ——— *Dorr*.

V. § *PHILIPPA*, married *John Buller*, of *Lilledon*, in the County of *Somerset*, Esquire; but neither of them had Issue that long survived.

ISSUE of *RICHARD PERCEVAL*, Esquire, &c. by his second Wife *Alice*, Daughter of *John Sherman*, of *Ottry St. Marys*, Esq;

I. || *WALTER PERCEVAL*, of whom in the next Chapter.

II. † *SIR PHILIP PERCEVAL*, who continued the Descent; of whom in Chapter the Eighth.

III. \*\* *NORRYS*, married to *John Mulys*, of *Hallington*, in the County of *Devon*, Esquire.

IV. ||| *ALICE*, married to *Richard Fitzgerald*, of *Castle-dodd*, in the County of *Corke*, Esquire, the Heirefs of which Family is now Wife to *William Steward*, Lord Viscount *Mountjoy*.

\* In Visitatione prædict.

† Ibid.

\*\* Ibid.

§ Ibid.

|| Ibid.

|| Ibid.

‡ Ibid.

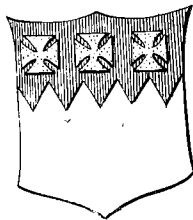
---

---

CHAP. VII.

WALTER PERCEVAL, *the second of that Name, Lord of Tykenham and Rolleston, in the County of Somerset.*

PERCEVAL,



**W**ALTER PERCEVAL\*, the eldest Son of *Richard* by the second Wife, inherited the Estate, and was Lord of *Tykenham, Rolleston, &c.* in the County of *Somerset*, together with all those Mortgages his Father left upon Estates in *Ireland*, which produced him a very large Income.

As soon as might conveniently be after his Father's Death †, he joined with his Brother *Philip* in a Petition to the King, setting forth, "That they had both  
" been educated under their Father in the Court of  
" Wards,

---

\* Visit. Dorf. & Somf. per Leonard & St. George, penes Ducem de Kingston.

† Council Books at Whitehall, March 12, 1621.

“ Wards, and made intire Masters of the Business  
 “ there, with a View to succeed him in his Employ-  
 “ ments in that Court.—But that upon his Death, they  
 “ found another had obtained the Reversion of it.  
 “ They therefore humbly prayed, that they might re-  
 “ ceive a Grant of the same Reversion after the Death  
 “ or Demise of the Person then in Possession; or in  
 “ Case of a new Settlement of the Wards in *Ireland*,  
 “ (then expected) in which Case the old Commission  
 “ would determine, a Grant of the same Employ-  
 “ ment.”

THE Matter of this Petition being referred to the Privy-Council in *England*, they took it under Consideration, upon the twelfth of *March*, 1620, and after giving an ample and honourable Testimony of the general Knowledge of that Board, relating to the great Services done by the said *Richard Perceval* to the Crown, they resolved to make it their joint Request to Mr. Secretary *Calvert*, to move his Majesty, that he would be graciously pleased to give Order on the Petitioners Behalf, as was desired by their Petition.

THIS Affair\*, and several others relating to his private Fortune, being settled very advantageously to him,—it is reported, that he insensibly fell into such a notorious Indulgence of his Vanities and Pleasures, that in less than four Years, he greatly incumbered his Estate in *England*, which his younger Brother *Philip* observing, and being unwilling that the Remains of that ancient Inheritance should be alienated wholly from his Family, purchased it from him. ——— But very soon after, this *Walter* having suffered, as it is reported, no less in his Health than in his Fortune, by the Irregularities of his Life, died; and having never married, his whole Fortune descended to his Brother, of whom we shall treat in the next Chapter. ——— The Time of his Death is not exactly known, but it happened sometime in the Year 1624.

THIS

---

\* Ex Chartis Familix.

*of the House of YVERY, &c.* 143

THIS young Man †, not yet twenty-three Years old, was a remarkable Instance of the Facility with which the Mind of Youth may be perverted; for during his Father's Life, he was remarkably eminent for a Degree of Sobriety and Virtue, very uncommon in a Person of his Age.——At the same Time that his younger Brother was equally censured for his early Disorders.——But, whether from the Difference of their Capacities, or the Company and Acquaintance into which they fell, when they became Masters of themselves, a total Alteration fell out in the Manners of both. —— The eldest, as we have here shewn, engaging in very unhappy Courses, whilst the youngest, quitting his former Habits, soon became the Admiration of all his Acquaintance, for the Prudence and Sagacity of his Conduct, and the steady Application which he afterwards shewed, to every thing that was virtuous and praise-worthy, advantageous or honourable, to himself, or to the Public.

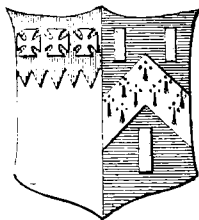
---

† Ex Chartis Familiæ.

## C H A P. VIII.

*The Right Honourable Sir PHILIP PERCEVAL, Knight, (the first of that Name,) Register of the Court of Wards in Ireland, Commissary-General of the Army, Providore-General of the Horse, Clerk of the Crown, Chief Prothonotary of the Common-Pleas, Keeper of the Records, Keeper of the Rolls of the Upper House of Parliament, Keeper of the Public Accounts, Customer of Dublin, Escheator of Munster, General Feodary of Ireland, &c. one of the most Honourable Privy-Council to King CHARLES the First, &c. &c. and Member of the English Parliament for the Borough of Newport in Cornwall.*

PERCEVAL,



USHER.

**W**E come now to \* *Sir Philip Perceval, Knight, second Son, and at length Heir of Richard Perceval, Lord of Sydenham, &c. and of Alice Sherman, his second Wife, who was born, as we are informed*

\* Visitation. Dorset. & Somerset. by Leonard and St. George, penes Ducem de Kingiton, apud Thoresby.



*The Right Hon<sup>ble</sup>  
S<sup>r</sup> Philip Percival K<sup>t</sup>  
Register of y<sup>e</sup> Court of Wards, in Ireland, &c. &c.*

*AND  
One of the most Honourable Privy Council,  
to King CHARLES y<sup>e</sup> First*

*Born 1599. Died. 1647.*





formed in the Visitation before-mentioned \*, in the Year 1603.

IT is evident that he was a young Man of very early and notable Activity, for so soon as the twentieth of *December*, 1620, not many Weeks after the Death of his Father, being then but seventeen Years of Age, there is extant a Bond of that Date from *William Rouse*, granting to him the said *Philip* the Moiety of the Profits of the Lands of *Barnaby Sberlock*, of *Tryne*, in the County of *Meath*, Esquire, in Consideration of his Expences, in procuring a Composition for the Intrusion of those Lands.

DURING his Father's Life, his Disorders and Irregularities had been very excessive †, and such as much hazarded the intire Loss of his Favour; but immediately after his Decease, though not of an Age to have that kind of Reformation expected from him, he totally changed the Course of his Behaviour, giving equal Admiration with his elder Brother to the World, though in a Manner much more advantageous than the other had done, applying himself, with a Zeal and Diligence almost incredible, to every thing which tended to increase his Fortune, and to advance his Reputation. In the first of which he made so good and quick a Progress, before his Brother's Death, that he had already purchased of him the greatest Part of his Estate in *England*, viz. *Tykenham*, *Rolleston*, &c. before-mentioned.

UPON the first of *March*, 1621 §, he obtained the Wardship of the Body, and Care of the Lands of *William Mac Eirly* of *Carrookillin*, in the County of *Mayo*, granted to one *William Reynold*, in his Name, to the Use of the said Sir *Philip Perceval*.

AND

---

\* Visitation of Dorset and Somersset, by St. George and Leonard, A. D. 1623.—Original Book of Leonard's, penes Ducem de Kingston, apud Thoresby.

† Ex Vet. Cart. Famil. penes Comitum de Egmont.

§ Ibid.                   || Ibid.

THOMAS PERCEVAL, Lord of Sydenbam, Son of Ralf the Younger.

ALICE, Daughter, and at length Heir to William Cave, Lord of Sydenbam, in Com. Somsf.

DAVID PERCEVAL, Lord of Sydenbam, ob. 5 Decemb. 25 Hen. VIII.

GEORGE PERCEVAL, Lord of Sydenbam, Overwære, Nailſay, &c. in Com. Somsf.

THOMAS DE LA MORE, of Bythemore, Ld of Overwære, Nailſay, and Son of Roger.

ELIZABETH, Daughter of John Marſhal, Lord of Etborne, or Yuytborne, in Com. Somsf.

ALICE, Daugr and at length Heir of Thomas de la More, or Bythemore, Lord of Overwære, &c.

RICHARD PERCEVAL, Lord of Sydenbam, Secretary Remembrancer, and Receiver General of the Court of Wards in England, and Register of the ſame Court in Ireland.

WILLIAM BAMPFYLDE, Lord of Poltymore, in Com. Devon. married

MARY, Daughter and Coheir of John St. Maur, Lord of Rode, in Com. Somsf. Male Heir to the ancient Barons St. Maur, of Caſtle-Kary.

Sir EDWARD BAMPFYLDE, of Poltymore, in Com. Devon. Knight.

ELIZABETH, Daughter of Sir Edward Bampfylde, of Poltymore, in Com. Devon.

Sir PHILIP PERCEVAL, Knt. Register of the Court of Wards, Commiſſary General of the Army, &c. &c. &c. one of the Privy Council to King Charles the Firſt, Anceſtor to the preſent Earl of Egmont, died 10 Nov. 1647, at London.

Sir NICHOLAS WADHAM, of Merryfield, Knt. in Com. Somsf.

JOANE, Daughter of Robert Hill, of Halfway.

ELIZABETH, Daughter of Sir Nicolas Wadham, of Merryfield, in Com. Somsf. Knight.

JOHN SHERMAN, of Ottery St. Mary's, in Com. Devon. Son of Thomas Sherman, of Suffolk, Eſq; who married the eldeſt Daughter of William Sherman, of Ottery St. Mary's.

WILLIAM SHERMAN, of Ottery St. Mary's, Eſq;

JOHN SHERMAN, of Ottery St. Mary's, in Com. Devon.

TRENT, of Ottery St. Mary's, in Com. Devon.

Daughter of Trent, of Ottery St. Mary's, in Com. Devon.

JOHN DRAKE, of Aſhe, in Com. Devon. Eſq; married

AMY, Daughter of Roger Greenville, of Stow, in Com. Devon. from whom deſcend the Earls of Batb, Counteſſes of Greenville, and Lord Lanſdown.

Sir BERNARD DRAKE, of Aſhe, in Com. Devon. Knt.

MARGARET, Daugr of Sir Bernard Drake, of Aſhe, Knt.

ALICE, Daughter of John Sherman, of Ottery St. Mary's, in Com. Devon. Eſq;

BARTHOLOMEW FORTESCUE, of Pbilly, Eſq; of the Family of the preſent Lord Clinton.

GERTRUDE, Daughter of Bartholomew Forteſcue.

of the House of YVERY, &c. 147

AND not long after |||, viz. upon the twenty-fifth of *May*, he obtained the Wardship, Marriage, and *Custodium* of the Estate of *Elizabeth Roe*, of the County of *Kerry*; which was granted likewise in Trust for his Use, to one *Richard Morgan*.

THE Day after \*, viz. on the sixteenth of the same Month, he entered into Articles with Sir *James Ware* and *Robert Davenport*, being jointly concerned with them in the Profits to be made of the Grant of the Benefit of the Wardships, Intrusion, and Alienation of the pretended Freeholders.

IN 1622 †, he obtained a third Part of the *Custodium* of the Lands of *Richard Stephenson*, Esquire, as appears from the Acknowledgment of *John Ascougbe*, in whose Name that *Custodium* had been granted.—Which Acknowledgment bears Date the thirteenth of *March* that Year.

UPON the twenty-second of *April* following §, *Edmund Forrester* entered into Bonds with the said Sir *Philip Perceval*, and *Edward Branan*, and *Conor Clancy*, Esquires, concerning the Intrusions in *Clan William*, each to bear a Third of the Charge, and to receive a Third of the Profit arising thereupon.

IN the beginning of the Year 1624 || the last of King *James* the First, he was appointed a Commissioner under the great Seal, for finding the Offices *post mortem*, of divers of those who held *in Capite* of the Crown.

SHORTLY after which ‡, great Envy arising against him, divers Accusations were laid to his Charge, with regard to his Conduct in the Commission last mentioned.—And in particular, by a certain Gentleman in the County of *Limeric*, who complained to the Council of *England* of great Oppression, in the Exercise of his Offices of Register of the Court of Wards, and Feodary of that County. This Complaint was at first referred to the King's Commissioners

---

||| Ex Vet. Cart. Famil. penes Comitem de Egmont.

\* Ibid.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

|| Ibid.

‡ Ibid.

for *Irisb* Causes in *England*, who judging that it would be more proper to be examined on the other Side, the Council transmitted the Complaint to the then Lord Deputy\*, requiring of him that the Matter should be heard before the Lord Chancellor, and other great Officers of that Kingdom; whereupon a Trial was appointed, and the whole Affair enquired into with great Solemnity, the Issue of which was, that Sir *Philip Perceval* was dismissed with great Honour, and the other Parties were severely censured for their unjust and malicious Complaint†.—But not long after, the Passions of these Gentlemen being in no wise cooled by their ill Success, he was concerned in an Affair of a different Nature with two others in the same County of *Lymerrick*, viz. one *David Comyn* and *David Rice*, Esquires.—Such was their Animosity against him, that not being able to attain their Ends in a legal Way, they, by a high and unruly Power, which Men with too much Licence exercised in those Parts, made an Attempt upon his Person; in which hazardous Conjunction he behaved himself with admirable Courage and Dexterity, obtaining afterwards a full, publick and ample Satisfaction for this Injury§, and a mean Acknowledgment for their base Carriage to him, under their Hand and Seals: The Original of which Instrument is still extant.

AND certain it is, that the Spirit he shewed upon this and other Occasions in the Beginning of his Life was no small Advantage to him; for though a Gentleman of a very fair Fortune and noble Extraction, yet was he in a manner a new Man in those Parts: And these Circumstances were more likely to draw down further Odium on him, as they were a great strengthening to his Interest, than to reconcile Mens Affections to him in a Country where Envy, as well  
as

---

\* Council Books, Whitehall, 13 June 1624, & postea.

† Ex. Vet. Cartis Familiæ.

§ Ibid.

as Jealoufy, of the Advantage of Strangers (for as such they looked upon the *English* of every Degree) so much prevailed; and, indeed, that Sharpness of Resolution, and ready encountering of all Opposition, was more than ordinarily necessary to check the overbearing Infolence of a People, at that Time, little tractable to their Government, or amenable to their Laws, and therefore more easily kept under by Authority and Power, than by fair and reasonable Dealings: Nor did he, as we find, after some few of these extraordinary Attempts, meet afterwards for a long Time with any Opposition in any thing he undertook or engaged in.

UPON the 27th of *June*\*, in the same Year, he obtained, under the Name of one *Thomas Gay*, the Intrusion of the Estates of *Lacy*, as appears from the Assignment thereof to him, dated upon that Day. || And upon the 13th of *July* following he had a like Assignment on the same Account from *Patrick Cornmuck*, Esquire, of the Composition for the *Custodium* of the Estate of *Geoffry Power*, of the County of *Waterford*, Esquire. Of which *Custodium*, we find further, that it was obtained by the Interest of Sir *Philip Perceval*, for one *Edward Beavan*, on Condition of paying half the Profit to the said Sir *Philip*, who was to pay half the Charge for the Passage of that Grant, an Agreement testifying as much being made between them upon the 16th of *July*, 1624.

UPON the 24th of the said Month he obtained †, in Conjunction with——*Kenny*, Esquire, the Profits of the *Custodium* of——*Dally* of *Ballioroom*, in the County of *Corke*, and of *Richard Keating* of *Clogharding*, in the County of *Cross-Tipperary*, Esquires.

UPON the 13th of *November*§, the same Year, 1624, he entered into Articles with *John O Hea* concerning the Discovery of the King's Title to several large Estates in the County of *Cork* in *Ireland*; as also

---

\* Ex. Vet. Cartis Familix.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

|| Ibid.

also concerning the Profits of the Wardships, Intrusions and Alienations thereof, when recovered and obtained.

UPON the 23d of *July*\*, the First of *Charles* the First, *A. D.* 1625, he obtained a Grant of the Office of Keeper of the Records of *Birmingham Tower*; as also another Grant of Keeper of the Rolls of the Upper House of Parliament, dated likewise upon the same Day, both which Places were of eminent Advantage to him; the one giving him a frequent Admission to the House of Lords, and a natural Acquaintance with all the Nobility of the Kingdom, which he well knew how to improve; and the other making him Master of almost all the Titles of Estates in the whole Kingdom: So that by the Knowledge which that Place gave him, together with that of his Place in the Court of Wards, he became more capable to judge of his Purchases and Grants, and more generally useful to all Men than any other Person in the Kingdom.

UPON the 13th of *September* following it appears†, that he had then obtained the Reversion of the Castles, Towns and Lands of *Killmuckillogh*, *Rowrane* and *Cranah*, after the Death of *Thomas Roche*, Esquire, who then held them.

NOT long after, *viz.* upon the 16th of *December*, the same Year§, he obtained a Grant of the Wardship of *Owen Mac Carty*, Son and Heir of *Daniel Macfines Carty* of *Kilvary*, Esquire; as also another Grant of the 17th of *March* following, of a special Oustermaine and Pardon of Alienation for purchasing divers Lands in the County of——— in *Ireland*: And on the 4th of *March* he obtained likewise the Wardships of *George Thorneton* and *Daniel Sullivane*, Esquires.

THE next Year, *A. D.* 1626, upon the 21st of *August* || (having before executed during Pleasure) the  
Office

\* Family Collections, Vol. VI. No. 941.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

|| Ibid.

Office of Register of the Court of Wards and Liveries: He received a Grant of the same for Life. About which Time he also passed Patent for the Lands of *Cleantefin*, in the County of *Wexford*, bought of *John Cusack* in *Dublin*.

AND now\*, being twenty-three Years old, he thought it Time to settle himself in Marriage; and accordingly fixed his Choice upon *Catherine* the Daughter of *Arthur*, Son and Heir of Sir *William Usher* of *Dublin*, Knight, who had been Clerk of the Council in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth* and King *James* the First, and still continued so under King *Charles* the First; a Family of great Antiquity in that County, being originally (as it is said) of the Stock of *Nevil* in *England*, who, upon the going over of King *John*, were *Ushers* to him, and so assumed the Name of their Office; and having received considerable Grants from that Prince, remained behind, and continued in Possession of Part of them even to our Times.—In this Marriage, as he was determined to push his growing Fortunes in that Kingdom, he acted no imprudent Part; for though he received but a small Portion with her, not exceeding (as it is said) Three thousand Pounds, yet was she of good Birth, a Circumstance which he eminently valued; and besides, allied very nearly to almost all of those Persons who were then the governing Party of that Kingdom.

By this Lady, whom he married on the 16th of *October*†, in that Year, he had a numerous Progeny, as we shall shew in its proper Place, though it was near four Years before he had any Issue by her.

ON the 31st of *January*, 1628\*, he obtained a Grant by Letters Patent of the Offices of Clerk of the Crown, and of the *King's Bench* and *Common Pleas*.

UPON the 9th of *February* following‖, he had a Grant likewise of the Estate of *Ulick Roch*, Esquire.

SOON

\* Family Collections, Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup>. 941.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

‖ Ibid.



SOON after he obtained a Letter from the King \*, dated at *Westminster* the 23d of *May*, the Third of *Charles* the First; by which he passed to him all those Estates which Queen *Elizabeth*, in the 24th of her Reign, had granted to Sir *Henry Harrington*, and the Heirs Male of his Body †. And upon the 26th of *July* following he had a Grant of the Wardship and Marriage of *Thomas Butler*, Son and Heir of *James Butler*, late of *Grellagh*, in the County of *Tipperary*, Esquire.

IN the Fourth of King *Charles* the First §, upon the 18th of *July*, he enfeoffed *William Archbold* with Power to pass Patent in his Name for the Hospital of *St. John* of *Castledermot*, with divers Lands of great Value therein mentioned.

AND being then a Man of great Interest||, he received Letters Patent from the Crown upon the fifteenth Day of *February* of the said Year 1629 (the Lord *Falkland* being then Deputy) by which he was enabled, without any farther Licence, to pass and repass the Seas from *Ireland* to *England*, &c. as often as it should so please him during the Term of his natural Life: Also to carry over with him, or to remit, in such manner as should best please himself, the Profits of all his Offices then enjoyed, or to be hereafter enjoyed, either by himself or his Deputies, or in Partnership with others, or in Trust for his Use, or in any other manner whatsoever held or to be held. And in particular with regard to the Offices of Clerk of the *Crown*, Clerk of the *Common-Pleas*, and Keeper of the Records of the *King's Bench*, all which he then enjoyed; with Clauses of *Non Obstante*, in particular to the Statute of Absentees of the 28th of *Henry* the Eighth, or any other Acts that might be construed to impede this Licence; as also to excuse him from any  
explicit

\* Family Collections, Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup>. 941.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

|| Ibid.

explicit Declaration of the Value of his Employments, or the Money he should export in Consequence thereof.

AN *English* Reader at this Time would hardly, upon the first Mention of this Patent, discover any great Favour in the Grant, or any great Advantage to be obtained from it: But whoever is a little acquainted with the History of *Ireland* a few Years after, when the Earl of *Strafford* carried the Prerogative of the Crown with so high a Hand in this Particular of Licences to go abroad, as may be seen at large in the Account of his Trial, and in many historical Relations of those Times, will discover the Prudence of his desiring that Privilege, as well as the Interest he then had to obtain it. For, however illegal this Prohibition really was, and inconsistent with the Liberty of the Subject, being directly contrary to an express Clause in the *Magna Charta*, the Deputies or chief Governors had long pretended, out of Reason of State, though in reality, out of Security to their own Power, by preventing the Complaints of those whom they oppressed, to exert this hard Prerogative of confining the Subjects of that Kingdom: To which End, they wrested certain old Precedents; as also that Act of Parliament before-mentioned, though it related quite to other Purposes—Nor was this the only Instance in which then or now that Country has been unwarrantably oppressed by those who chiefly have directed their Affairs; an Evil, which few subordinate Governments, especially in mixed Monarchies, escape: Which last Observation being drawn from us by the Thread of this Discourse, for its Explanation will justify a further Assertion, That all Provinces are happier under absolute Princes than under limited Monarchies, the Power of the latter being always shared with the Senate or Council of the Mother Country, who in this Copartnership exert a Sovereignty always partial to the Interest of their own Nation; whereas in the other Case, a Prince ruling independently, dispenses all his Favours as well as his Severities with a

more equal Hand, being not induced by the same Motives to make any such particular Indulgence; of which, without wandering any farther into this politic Question, we have at present Instances enough in *Europe*.

IN the Year 1630, the Fifth of *Charles* the First, upon the twenty-second of *March*, he had another Grant of the Manor of *Corbally*, in the County of *Wexford*.

UPON the fifth of *September* following, he passed Patent for the Place of Customer of *Dublin*, which was then of great Value: But in this Employment he met with great Opposition from the *Dutch* Factors there, who, under the loose and dissolute Management of that Office, had found Means greatly to enrich themselves, defrauding the Crown of great Part of its Duties, which they put into their own Pockets; and yet charged their Principals as paid: But at length he mastered this Difficulty, and established himself in that Post, which he enjoyed for many Years.

IN the Sixth of the said Reign\*, *viz.* 1630, he obtained of the Crown the Manor of *Hassard's Town*, *Herton*, *Herfaston*, and *Black Rath*, in the County of *Tipperary*, and a quarter Part of *Kilmoyleran*, in the County of *Cork*, under the yearly Acknowledgment of twenty-seven Shillings and five Pence for all Services, *vith special Exemption of all Taxes or Charges whatsoever to be laid by Parliament, or any other Authority*.

AND again†, in 1634, being General Feodary of *Ireland*, and Escheator of *Munster*, he had a further Grant of Lands in the County of *Tipperary*.

In the Twelfth§, which was two Years after, he had another Letter from the King, granting divers other Lands in different Counties of that Kingdom.

As

\* In O ficio Rotulor. Hiberniæ.

† Family Collections, Vol. VI. fol. 941.

§ Ibid.

As also a Grant of the Custody, Wardship and Marriage of *Connor O' Dwyer*\*, Grandchild and Heir to *Connor O'Dwyer* of *Dallagh*, Esq; deceased.

In the Thirteenth †, being appointed a Commissioner of Survey, to distinguish Possessions and Titles of Land in the Counties of *Cork* and *Tipperary*, he obtained likewise divers large Estates from the Crown; as also the Wardship of another *Thomas Butler*. And upon the twentieth of *May*, 1638, he, together with *Sir James Ware*, obtained a Grant for the sole Licencing of Ale and *Aqua Vitæ*.

UPON the sixteenth of *October*, in the same Year §, the King, out of special Grace, erected for him the Castle, Town and Lands of *Annagh*, with divers large Tracts of Country, and divers Villages, together with the two ancient Lordships of *Annagh* and *Church-Town*, into one great Manor, under the Name of the Manor of *Burton*, in the County of *Cork*, subject to an Acknowledgment of five Pounds ten Shillings *per Annum*, with all the most extensive Privileges, as Free Warren, Powers to impark sixteen hundred Acres of Land, &c. which Manor is still in the Possession of this Family, and is one of the noblest Royalties in the three Kingdoms.

NOT long after this ||, he received a Grant from the Crown of the Wardships of *Ann* and *Susanna Wiseman*, viz. upon the second of *September*, the fifteenth of *Charles* the First.

UPON the fourth of *October* following |||, he obtained a Grant also of Lands in the County of *Wicklow*, in Conjunction with *Sir Adam Loftus* and *Sir Robert Meredith*.

OVER and above all which important Acquisitions, he obtained\*\*, either in his own Name, or in Trust

\* Family Collections, Vol. 6. fol. 941.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid. Vol. VIII. N<sup>o</sup>. 942. and in the Auditor General's Office in Ireland.

|| Ibid.

||| Ibid.

\*\* Ibid.

156 *A Genealogical History*

to his Use, within a small Distance of the Time last mentioned, though the Dates are not exactly recovered,—the Intrusion of the Estates of *Logblin*, of *Muckinene* and *O Logblin*, of *Gregane*, in the County of *Clare*;—the Wardship of *James Fitzgerald*, Esquire of *Ballyogherty*, and a Rent of twenty Marks *per Annum* out of *Ardogena*, in the County of *Waterford*; the Wardship of *Dudley Colley*, Esquire; the Wardship of *Edmund O' Dwyer* and of *Edward O' Dwyer* of *Morestown*, in the County of *Tipperary*; the Wardship of *Francis Fleetwood*, Son and Heir of *Thomas Fleetwood* of *Ballyderaowen*, in the County of *Cork*, Esquire; the Wardship of *Callaghan More*; *Teigue Carty* of *Tullagh* in *Muskerry*, and twenty-four Pounds *per Annum* in the same County; and in the County of *Limerick* the Intrusion of the Lands of *Daniel O Brian* of *Carrigognil*, Esquire; the Wardship of the Heir of *Edmund Herbert* of *Caber Meighel*, Esquire, deceased; and the Wardship of *Ann Casey*, Daughter and Heir of *Thomas Casey* of *Rathcanon*, Esquire, deceased, with one hundred and ninety-three Pounds sixteen Shillings and eight Pence *per Annum*.—The last Grant was passed about *Easter\**, in the Year One thousand six hundred and forty.

THUS, having followed him in some measure through the Course of his great Successes, and marked out some of those Steps by which he improved that large Fortune which his Posterity in different Branches yet enjoy; and which had been still infinitely greater, had his Affairs remained as they then stood, we must now trace him in another Sphere, labouring to preserve what he had thus acquired; in which we shall find him struggling with the general Difficulty of those ensuing Times, like what he truly was, a Man of Sense, true Courage, and unbiaffed Patriotism. And here we may well remark the Change and Inconstancy of Fortune; for, from the Moment she shewed her  
different

---

\* Ibid. Vol. VII. fol. 62.

different Face, she never altered to him, and persecuted him with the same Steadiness to the End, with which she had favoured him in the Beginning. Yet should not we repine at this Check to the extravagant Growth of this Family, since there is a Reserve of Accidents in the Store of Providence, and in the Womb of Time, not only to render the greatest Advancements abortive, but often to render the Enormity of their own Weight the Cause of their own intire Ruin.

It is certain, that the Eyes of all Men were upon him, insomuch that the great Lord *Strafford*, who was long Governor of *Ireland*, (and a shrewd Observer, though much his Friend) was wont to use this Expression, with a strange Earnestness, in speaking of him, *I bear the Horse's Heels of Sir Philip Perceval trampling hard behind me* \*; implying an extraordinary Opinion, not only of his growing Estate, but of his Abilities, which he held in great Veneration, and did expect would have brought him forward into the highest Offices of the State.

It is more than probable, that this kind of prophetic Spirit about him, and which had (as the Event did shew) no other Ground for it, than his Knowledge of his Parts, and Observations of his Successes, would have been in an extraordinary manner answered, by his Advancement in the World, if that unhappy Rebellion, which confounded all Things, and during which he died, had not happened.

*SIR Philip Perceval* had long maintained a fast and steady Friendship with that Earl, which was first begun in *England*, but was then no more than a slight Acquaintance, and improved afterwards by the mutual Commerce they had together in *Ireland*; for during that Administration, he was continually consulted by the Earl: as indeed, it must have inevitably happened, (had he been a less able Man,) on account of his Employments, for the chief Business, during that Administration, was the Improvement of the Revenue;

---

\* *Ex Chartis Familix.*

nue; and one of the chief Means of doing that, was to find out, by Inquisitions, the King's Title to Lands, and by proving many Estates to be held *in Capite*, or by Knight-Service of the Crown, which the Natives had, by many Arts, pretended Feoffments, and other Contrivances, in which they were very dextrous, withdrawn from that Tenure, to the great Diminution of the Revenue, which consisted very much in the Profit of Wardship, Relief, Marriage, and other Charges, incident to that Manner of holding Estates: and in carrying on this Work, Sir *Philip Perceval*, as Register of the Court of Wards, was absolutely necessary.

DURING this Time he received many Instances of Friendship from the Earl, obtaining several Grants of great Consequence, by his Interposition with the Crown. And though he was not backwards in returning these many Obligations, by many very useful and profitable Services, in which the Earl reposed an entire Confidence in him, and which afterwards gave both him and his Son a great Opportunity for the Manifestation of their Justice and Honour, in returning Estates of great Value, which had been passed to him in Trust, and could never have appeared to have been so passed, if he, or his Family after him, had been willing to conceal the Fact. Yet he thought himself farther bound to shew his Regard for him, which he did in a very particular Manner, upon the Impeachment of that Earl, which was entered upon in the Year 1640.

THIS Friendship may, perhaps, by some be thought a Blemish to his Character, since very severe Prejudices have arisen against that great Man, and not, indeed, without some Reason, for he held, in truth, a violent and boisterous Conduct in his Government, both acting and advising some Things in Opposition to the Laws of the Land, and the Liberty of the Subject, as may be instanced in the Case of the Earl of *Corke*, the Lord *Mouninorris*, Sir *Pierce Crosby*, and many others, but we must beg Leave to say something a little

tle in his Justification, so far as it may tend to alleviate this Aspersion on Sir *Philip Perceval*, who will be found, upon due Consideration, to have acted no Part upon this Occasion, but what was strictly honourable, and just to the Public Interest.

To enter therefore a little into the Character and Conduct of this unfortunate Earl, it is necessary to consider the Person of the Prince under whom he acted, the Conjuncture of the Times, and the Condition of the Country which he governed. As to the first, without falling into those Party Violences which, on either Side, obscure the Truth of the Proceedings of that unhappy Reign, it is not to be denied, that King *Charles* the First had unfortunately imbibed, under the Education of his weak and arbitrary Father, too strong a Tincture of his Principles, with respect to Government, and that he had fatally discountenanced all those who were of a more tender and more legal Way of thinking in those Matters, and never willingly employed such as did not concur in Measures consonant to that rash Spirit. The Earl of *Strafford* had therefore, in this Respect, some little Matter of Excuse to plead, since in the Place of debauching his Prince into the acting in illegal Ways, he found his Prince already but too much bent upon these Courses; so that it was impossible for him to maintain any Degree of Interest in him, but by yielding somewhat to his Humour; a thing in no kind strictly justifiable, yet to meet with some sort of Extenuation from Men, who are themselves but Men, in the Consideration of human Passions and Infirmities. As to our next Consideration, of the Conjuncture of the Time, there was certainly an unruly Spirit gone forth among the People, which however, perhaps at first, created by many unwarrantable Acts of Power, was now doubtless, by all wise Men to be suppressed at any Rate, lest it should produce those great Disorders, which, by a less politic Cession to them, did follow, not long after. And truly, a Man in any high Station at that Time, must have had a very difficult Part to act, between the Necessity



cessity of curbing that Insolence of the People, and the Dilemma of doing it at the Expence of the ordinary Course of Law; from which the factious Party had learned well enough, in most Cases, to screen themselves, and yet to go on in this Work of Inflammation; and in others, had found Means to interpret, cunningly enough, for their own Security.—The last Particular to be enquired into here, is the Condition of the Country which he governed; and this will more than any other Particular diminish his Reproach.

FOR at the Time of his going over into *Ireland*; in 1633, it was, without Dispute, one of the worst governed Countries in the World, through a Licentiousness in all Respects, Civil, Military, and Religious, aggravated to a high Degree, beyond even what it had ever been notorious for; and such a Confusion of Interests, and so little Control upon any, that it was then evident to every discerning Eye, that however the outward Form of Peace and regular Government, might then appear better settled than at any Time before, there was yet nothing that restrained that People from the old, and a Variety of new Disorders, but the Quiet of *England*, which gave it Leisure to throw in at any Time a superior Force, upon the least Disturbance on that Side.

IN this Circumstance, which concurred with the dubious Prospect of Affairs in *England*, where the Pulse beat much too high, to give any Certainty of the Continuance of that quiet State, and on which alone, as we have already said, depended the Peace of that Kingdom, it was highly necessary for the Earl of *Strafford* to apply, not only a strong, but a speedy Remedy: nor had he any other Means to effect this, than by increasing the Revenue, which was far too low to support him in any proper Undertaking.—But this he could not do without many unpopular Acts, and some that might be construed too severe, so artfully, had the Persons then in Possession of all the Flowers and Profits of the Crown, intrenched themselves against it; nor had he any other Way to overcome the Opposi-  
tion

tion which he found from the Grandees there, than by making a fierce Impression of his Authority: And thus he was a Sufferer by the ill Government of his Predecessors, who had, by a weak and unsteady Administration, almost from the Acquisition of that Country till that Time, alternately exerted, one while an unwarrantable Authority, and again discovered a supine Negligence and Weakness, in the Suppression of the riotous Behaviour of the People there. So that as on the one hand, the great Men in that Kingdom had been long indulged, in all Oppression and lawless Violence; so on the other, he was invited by too many Precedents to practise there those Powers, which his Predecessors having used before him, he thought he might be justified in using likewise, by their Example.

— These were the fatal Grounds of his Misconduct there. And doubtless, as strict as it was then necessary to hold the Reins of Government, he proceeded with too much Rigour, yet did the main of his Carriage most evidently and sensibly tend to the Good of that People, who to this Hour owe the flourishing Condition of their great Staple, the Linnen Manufacture, and many other valuable Branches of their Trade, to those Measures which he pursued, in these Respects the best that ever were pursued by any Minister, for the real and common Benefit of both these Kingdoms.

THAT all his Designs thus ultimately tended to render that Country a great and glorious Nation, was well known to Sir *Philip Perceval*, who held so great an Intimacy with him; and the large and brisk Advances which he made to a general Improvement, far beyond all past Experience there, was enough to reconcile a large Share of Regard to him, from all Men who had the Interest of that Country much at Heart, of which Number we may well conclude Sir *Philip* to be one, having drawn over the greatest Part of his Fortune thither, being then possessed of above sixty-two thousand Acres of Land, of the Measure of that Country, above four thousand Pounds *per annum* of the best Rents, and a Stock in Woods, Houses, &c. worth

above Sixty Thousand Pounds; all which he afterwards lost in the Rebellion, together with Places which he enjoyed for Life, of a known Value of above Two Thousand Pounds a-year, besides many others of equal Profit, which he held upon a more uncertain Tenure. This great Establishment may well be supposed, as we have said, to interest him in the Success and Welfare of that Kingdom, which being, in the most essential Points, so eminently considered by the Earl of *Strafford*, it may be no longer any Wonder or Reproach upon him, that he was tender to his Infirmities and Failings, and still retained a Veneration for him.

It was this that engaged Sir *Philip Perceval* to overlook several of those violent Measures, of which he as little approved as any Man; and it was this which induced him, more than any Acts of personal Friendship which had passed between them, (though doubtless, Men of generous Minds may be in a Degree excused, if they suffer some Influence from such Motives,) to pass over into *England* at the Time of his Trial, in order to assist him in it; where, during the Examination into the Conduct of the Earl, the Parliament of *England* discovering some Transactions between Sir *Philip* and that unhappy Nobleman, and knowing well his Endeavours to serve and assist him, upon the latter Account, rather than for any thing criminal in the Nature of that Correspondence, he was accused in Parliament; but was so well defended\* by the Earl of *Corke*, then a Member of the House of Commons, (who particularly undertook his Justification,) and it was found then that he had so many Friends, even among the leading Members of that House, that he escaped, though very narrowly, out of that dangerous Affair. Yet notwithstanding this, he had Resolution enough to persevere to the last in his good Offices to the Earl, when almost all his other Friends deserted him. Nor did the Generosity of this

Conduct

---

\* Family Letters, Vol. III. N<sup>o</sup> 230.

*of the House of YVERY, &c. 163*

Conduct do him any Prejudice with the Heads of that Party, who soon lost their Resentment at it, when the great Object of their Fear and Hate was removed, which happened by the Execution of the Earl, in *May 1641.*

IT † is not exactly known at what Time he returned into *Ireland*, but we find him in that Kingdom before the Death of that Lord, having doubtless seen the Impossibility of doing him farther Service after his Trial was over, during the whole of which Time he attended, and took Notes of every remarkable Occurrence, a Manuscript of which, in his own Hand-writing, is still extant, containing some very curious Accounts of political Transactions at that Time; and doubtless the Business of his Offices required his Attendance, that in the Court of Wards alone exceeding almost all Belief.

IN \* the beginning of this Year he obtained a Grant of the Reversion of the Office of King's-Bench in *Ireland.*

AND during the Remainder of this Summer, being not without a strong Prefage of those Evils which were then impending over both Kingdoms, he laboured with great Earnestness, to make as speedy and secure a Settlement of all his Affairs, as the Greatness of his Fortune, and the Shortness of the Time, would permit, repairing several of his Castles, and providing a great number of Arms and Horses; which Precautions were very shortly after of great Importance to him: that bloody Rebellion of the *Irish*, for its close Contrivance, great Extent, sudden and cruel Execution, hardly paralleled in the Stories of any Time, breaking out in a Torrent of Destruction in the Night of the twenty-third of *October* following, 1641.

AN Event of so extraordinary a kind as this, in which not only the general History of that Age is so much concerned, but in which this Family were so

---

† Family Letters, Vol. III. N<sup>o</sup> 230.

\* Ex Chartis Familiæ.

great Sufferers, and during which, the Person of whom we now in particular treat, was so actively employed, as he will appear to have been, deserves to be considered with some Attention.

BUT the Causes of it were ancient and remote, and have hardly ever been laid open as they ought to have been; what through the Ignorance of Writers, of which there have been very few who have treated of that Kingdom, or through the Partiality both of the *English* and *Irish* Interests, and the mutual Bigotry of the Professors of the two Religions which divide that Nation.

To understand the Truth of this important Affair, it will be necessary to go back as far as the Acquisition of that Kingdom by the Crown of *England*; for to the ill Measures taken by the *English* at that Time, or at least pursued afterwards by them, are chiefly to be ascribed all the Calamities that have befallen that Country, and all that Blood and Slaughter, in which the Story of that Nation abounds above those of any other People.

THIS Island has been blessed by Nature with all the Advantages that ever any other Country boasted: her Climate, never in Extremes, affords a number of Plants, which no other under the same Latitude produces, and has an Influence so favourable also on the Bodies of Men, that they generally exceed both in Age and Stature the rest of *Europe*. A very great, and almost general Fertility of Soil, joined to the most advantageous Situation, and to a bold and wide-extended Coast, abounding in good Harbours, and environed by a Sea, stored beyond Credit, with the best and most profitable Fish; adapt her, in a peculiar Manner, for the Commerce of the whole World. But as if Providence had determined to render imperfect all sublunary Happiness, this Land has ever been as miserable in the Events that have happened in it, as otherwise blessed in the Circumstances we have mentioned.

THE ancient History of this Kingdom is like those of all others, obscured by a Load of Fiction and Romance. The first Circumstance with Certainty known of it, is what would hardly obtain Credit in these Ages of the World, if it were not recorded by so great an Author.—But we are told by *Tacitus*\*, that *it was in his Time much more known and eminent in the Commercial World than England—Solum Cœlumq; & Ingenia cultusq; Hominum baud multum a Britannia differunt, melius aditus portusq; per Commercia & Negotiatores cogniti.* The Romans, however, having never settled *England* so well, as to have Leisure to attempt *Ireland*, we find very little Mention of it in any subsequent *Roman* Author.—That Empire falling to Ruin, *Britain* was one of the first Provinces it was obliged to desert, and consequently one of the first that fell a Sacrifice to *Gothic* Barbarism, which destroyed all Learning, and confounded History for several Centuries in all *Europe*.—Thus *England*, by its Situation the People likely to have known most of the Affairs of *Ireland*, for a long Time recorded nothing of it. Our Accounts of that Country in those Times, are therefore chiefly to be taken from themselves.—But their Writers, though much credited by the Vulgar there, have as yet obtained very little Authority with the rest of the World; and indeed so little, as to occasion the Character of that People to be drawn with some Contempt in this *Latin* Sentence, which is often quoted upon them in foreign Countries;

*Gens ratione furens, & mentem pasta chimæris.*

HOWEVER, this is certain †, that they received the Christian Religion early, and were eminent for Learning, for their Academies were much frequented by the Youth, both of the *Britons*, *Gauls*, and *Saxons*. — From whence we may rationally conclude, that the State was then well settled, and that they were

---

\* Tacitus, in Vita Agricola.

† Vide Sir James Ware's Antiq. of Ireland; Chap. XV.

were freed from those Tumults, which much distracted the neighbouring Nations in those Ages. — Lying detached from all the rest of *Europe*, they were probably the last who suffered by the Incurfions of the Northern Nations. — We have the Testimony of the Venerable *Bede* \*, a *Saxon* Author of great Antiquity, that towards the End of the seventh Century they were a People of great Religion, and Purity of Life and Manners, and then remarkably distinguished for their Attachment and Affection to the Island of Great-Britain. — If contrary Principles are now found to prevail among them, it is therefore evident, that they have taken their Original, not from the Nature of that People, but from the Conduct of their Neighbours, by whose restless Ambition they began to be disturbed, about the Time last mentioned. — The *Saxons* being firmly established in *England*, upon the Ruins of the ancient *Britons*, had then some Leisure to look farther. — And first invaded *Ireland* in the Year 684, when *Ecfrid*, King of the *Northumbrians*, sent an Army thither †, which committed fearful Devastations, upon a Country enervated by long Peace and Superstition. — But the *Irish* exerting themselves, at length repelled the Enemy, who obtained much Booty, though not a permanent Establishment in that Island. — Other *Saxon* Princes, encouraged by this Example, occasionally from Time to Time infested that Nation, in the same predatory Manner. — And if we may credit a Charter of King *Edgar* §, said to be made for depriving married Priests, and introducing Monks, which was dated at *Gloucester*, in the sixth of his Reign, 966, a great Part of *Ireland*, together with the City of *Dublin*, was subdued by that Prince. — But allowing this Evidence to be genuine, it carries nothing with it more than an ostentatious Encomium upon some Expedition of the same Nature with those  
before-

---

\* Book IV. Cap. 26. *Bede's Eccles. Hist.*

† *Ibid.*

§ *Sir James Ware.*

before-mentioned; since it is very clear, that the *English*, neither then or afterwards, till the Reign of King *Henry* the Second, obtained any Settlement on that Side the Sea.

It was not from the *Saxons* that the *Irish* were reduced to the low Condition which they fell into about that Time, and from which they have never recovered since.—The ancient Inhabitants of the Countries bordering upon the *Baltic*, growing too numerous to be maintained at home, under the different Names of *Normans*, *Danes*, and *Easterlings*, in different Expeditions invaded the Coasts of *England*, *France*, and *Ireland*, about the beginning of the eighth Century.—In process of Time, they made themselves Masters of all *England*, and wrested *Normandy* from *France*; but their greatest Success was in *Ireland*, which they entirely subdued, under their Leader *Turgesus*, about the Year 815. Their Dominion was more absolute here, than in any other of their conquered Countries.—The whole Kingdom yet abounds in every Part with Monuments of their Power, and the Forts which they erected within sight of each other through the whole Island, still testify the miserable Subjection to which the Natives were reduced. This Tyranny was so savage and intolerable, that it destroyed itself; for the *Irish*, after having suffered under it above thirty Years, in *A. D.* 845, with one Accord took Arms against their Masters, whom they expelled with a just and horrible Slaughter.

\* THEY had no sooner freed themselves from this detested Yoke, by a generous and general Resolution, but forgetting that the same Union by which they had been freed, was equally necessary to preserve them free, they fell into civil Contentions, which produced a Division of the Kingdom into seven petty States †, *Connaught*, *Corke*, *Leinster*, *Ossory*, *Meath*, *Limerick*, and *Ulster*.

THESE

---

\* Rapin's History of England, in the Reign of King Henry II.

† Ibid.



THESE Kingdoms were, however, still in some Degree dependant on each other, much in the same Manner as the Heptarchy in *England*, all sent Deputies to the General Assembly, in which the King of *Connaught* was the President, and to whom was committed the Execution of their Decrees, which either related to the quieting Disorders that continually proceeded from the Ambition of the different Princes. — Or to resist the Invasions of the *Danes* and *Easterlings*, who still infested their Sea-Coasts, where they had again recovered some Establishment, and built some Cities, from whence they carried on a constant War upon the Inland Country, fomenting the domestic Differences of that People, which they continued to do till the coming of the *English*, who were much assisted by these Divisions, in the easy Acquisition of that Dominion.

THE Majority of this august Body frequently joined their Forces together, to bring to Reason any particular Prince, more turbulent, or more powerful than his Neighbour. And thus, though with much Blood, and perpetual Disorder, the general State of the Government continued a long Time upon the same Model, till at last, in the Reign of *Henry* the Second, King of *England*, *Dermot Mac Morrogh*, King of *Leinster*, having rashly involved himself in Quarrels with the whole Nation, and finding himself deserted by his Subjects, to whom he had rendered himself odious by a brutal Government, he took the Resolution of demanding Succour from the King of *England*. — *Henry* the Second then reigned, whose Ambition was carried to the utmost Excess, and who used to say vainly, *That the whole World was hardly a sufficient Empire for one Prince.* — He was infinitely pleased at so favourable an Opportunity to concern himself with the Affairs of that Kingdom; but was then employed in a War with *France*, which gave him no Leisure to turn himself to any other Quarter; he was besides uncertain what might be the Success of any Enterprize in that Kingdom, and consequently

unwilling to hazard his Reputation upon so flight a Ground. In these Circumstances, he acted a very politic Part, for avoiding both the Charge, and Hazard of the Success, he still forwarded the Attempt, obtaining a Licence from the Pope to invade *Ireland*, for the Improvement of their Religion and Manners. And having thus animated his Subjects, by a Notion of Piety in the Undertaking, he then granted Licences by his Letters-Patent, to such of his Subjects as would, at their own Expence, become Adventurers in that Enterprize.

*RICHARD DE CLARE*, Earl of *Striguil* and *Pembroke*, one of the great Family of *Clare*, Earls of *Gloucester*, (who married into the Royal Family, and were themselves descended in a Male Line from a natural Son of *Richard* the First, Duke of *Normandy*) was the first Undertaker in this Affair, in 1169, having first stipulated with the King of *Leinster*, to obtain his only Daughter in Marriage, and with her the Reversion of his Kingdom, after his Decease. From *Isabella*, the Daughter of this Princess by the said *Richard*, who married *William Marshall*, afterwards Earl of *Pembroke* in her Right, the House of *Perceval* do now proceed, with a very extraordinary Particularity of Circumstances, being lineally descended in Blood through many of the greatest Families in *England*, from every one of the five Daughters and Coheirs of the said *William Marshall*, Earl of *Pembroke*, and *Isabel* his Wife; as may be more particularly seen in the seventh Chapter of the first Book of this Work.

THE King of *Leinster* dying soon after, the Earl of *Striguil*, in Right of his Wife, and by the Power of his Sword, became possessed of a vast Portion of this Country\*; which being envied by King *Henry*, he recalled the Earl, and obliged him to resign most of his Rights in that Kingdom. After which, he went over  
in

---

\* Giraldus Cambrensis.

in Person, with a great Army, to take Possession of that Estate, and to endeavour an absolute Conquest of that Country. But the petty Princes being united in a formidable Manner against him, it was agreed between both Parties, each being induced into that Accord by fear of the other, that *Henry* should be acknowledged Sovereign of the whole Island, and that the *Irish* Lords should enjoy their Estates and Principalities, in the same free manner in which they before held them, saving an annual Acknowledgment to be paid to the King of *England*: whereupon †, King *Henry* held a Council at *Lismore* before his Return, in which the Laws of *England* were promulged to the whole Nation, and joyfully received by that People, who bound themselves by Oath to the Observance of them.

THIS Submission, which was indeed conditional, and obtained without the shedding of one Drop of Blood, is what the *English* Historians do all in general stile a Conquest; the Circumstances of which, however, were such, as to admit a different Construction to be made, by those whose Interest it is, not to allow so harsh an Epithet. ——— And this is of great Consequence to be observed, in order to the clear understanding of the *Irish* Revolutions, which have all depended from the Usage consonant to this Opinion in the *English*, and the Resentments arising in the *Irish*, upon a Conclusion in that People, which they think so false.

It is certain, that the Right acquired by *Henry* the Second of *England*, was not a rigid Right of Conquest; for with respect to the Province of *Leinster*, he obtained that by the Cession of the Earl of *Strigul*, who had himself acquired it by Marriage; and as to the rest of the Kingdom, it was likewise a Cession from the other Princes of the Island, upon Conditions which gave no positive Grounds for this Pretension.

To

---

† Matt. Paris, 1172.

of the House of YVERY, &c. 171

To Henry succeeded *John*, his second Son; and there is no doubt but that the said *John*, afterwards King of *England*, had a legal Title to it, for his Father might freely give to him, what had been before given to himself: but the *Irish* pretend, that he could not give more than what he was himself entitled to before, and that he consequently gave him that Kingdom, subject to those limited Conditions, under which it had been yielded to himself.

THE *English* Lords, who had already obtained great Possessions there, soon assuming intolerable Powers upon their own Lands, and daily invading those of their neighbouring *Irish*, entirely broke the Condition of quiet Possession, and the Advantage of the *English* Laws before-mentioned, which necessitated the *Irish* to rise in their Defence. — Besides which, the King violated his Agreement with them: *Fabian* and *Grafton* both assigning the chief Causes of the *Irish* Insurrections at that Time, to the grievous Taxes which he attempted to lay upon them on account of his Wars with *France*. — And thus the Advocates of *Ireland* assert, that the first Disorder in that Kingdom arose from the Breach of Articles on the *English* Side.

To remedy these great Abuses, and the Disturbances proceeding from them, King *John* himself went over thither, with a great Force, in the twelfth Year of his Reign, 1211. But this Expedition was rather undertaken against the *English* there, than against the *Irish*, which appears from hence, that his Resentments wholly fell upon the Families of *Braose* and *Lacy*, whose Exactions and Oppressions were become intolerable. These Lords not being able to clear themselves of those Crimes then laid to their Charge, fled the Kingdom, the latter particularly fearing to answer for the Murder of Sir *John de Courcy*, the Greatness of whose rival Family the *Lacys* could not endure. — As to the native *Irish*, his Resentments were in no sort shewn against them, for on the contrary, he divided the Countries into twelve Shires, appointed Sheriffs; and ordained again, That the Laws of *England* should

be the Rule of Government in that Kingdom, agreeable to the former Stipulations with his Father, endeavouring, as much as he could, by this Means to make them one People.

*HENRY* the Third succeeded his Father *John* in the Lordship of *Ireland*, in the Year 1216; and in the first of his Reign granted and transmitted the like Charter of Liberties, (that is, the *Magna Charta*) to the People of *Ireland*, as himself and his Father had granted to the Subjects of *England*. And again, in the twelfth of his Reign, he issued a special Writ, requiring the Lord Justice of *Ireland*, to summon all the great Men of the Land, and to read before them the *Magna Charta* of King *John*, which the said *John* had himself caused to be read before the great Men of that Kingdom, when they had sworn to the same, and to a strict Observance of the *English* Laws and Constitutions, in order that the said Laws might for the future be kept and observed by them. ——— The like just and politic Dealing with respect to that Kingdom, was pursued to the latter End of that Reign; for in the thirtieth Year of that Prince, he again confirmed, by Letters Patent under the Great Seal, the Establishment of those Laws of King *John*, which had been the first Grounds of their Submission.

*DURING* this long Reign, the Commotions in *Ireland* were very great; but whoever will read the best Accounts of those Times, will see that all those Disorders happened among the *English* there, between the *Marshals*, Earls of *Pembroke*, and the *Lacys*, and other powerful Families of that Extraction.——— Whatever Disorders the *Irish* committed, were owing to the Encroachment of those *English* Lords, as may be plainly collected from the best Writers of those Times, and particularly from *Matthew Paris*, who shews these Commotions chiefly to have fallen out between the *Burks* and the King of *Connaught*; the Ground of which was only this, that the Agreement which *Roderick o' Connor*, his Predecessor, had made with King *John*, was violated by that aspiring *English*

Family. \* And so far was the *Irish* Prince from shaking off his Allegiance to the King of *England*, notwithstanding the Breach of his Conditions, that he went over into *England* himself, to complain of this Injustice; which he would have never ventured to have done, if this Defence of his Estate had then been looked upon in the Light of Rebellion, under which Name all these Disorders of late Years are characterised.

† THE Truth of this is still evinced farther, by the Reception that *Irish* Prince met with from the King, who, notwithstanding a Grant of *Connaught*, which § *Hubert de Burgh*, that great Favourite, had obtained in the third of his Reign, during the King's Minority, for which he had paid a thousand Pounds, a great Sum in those Days; || the King reflecting upon the Injustice of that Grant, and knowing that it was obtained by the unlimited Power of *Hubert* at that Juncture, and that his Name had been abused in it, did readily countenance the Cause of the Prince of *Connaught*, and that in so high a manner, that he commanded the Lord *Maurice Fitzgerald*, then Lord Justice, to extirpate the unjust Plantation that Family had made in those Parts, to banish *John de Burgo*, Son of the said *Hubert*, who had been guilty of this Invasion, and to establish the King of *Connaught* in the peaceable Possession of his Province.

YET such was the Influence of the *English* Nobility there, that these Orders of that Prince were never put in Execution, the *Burghs* still continuing their Establishment in that Province, which descended afterwards to the Crown itself; these Abuses became no longer their Desire to redress.—The greatest Disturbances which arose in the *Irish* Quarters in the following Reign of King *Edward* the First, proceeded from the like Invasions of the *English* upon that Country

---

\* Matt. Paris, in Vita Hen. III.

† Ibid.

§ Clauf. 3 Hen. III. N<sup>o</sup> 2.

|| Matt. Paris. ut supra.

try of *Connaught*, and other Districts, which were denied the Privileges they had stipulated for, and the Benefit of the *English* Laws.

FOR he being much busied in the Prosecution of his Wars in other Parts, took little Care, and had but little Leisure, to support the *Irish* against the Oppression of the *English*, being the better contented to connive at the Proceedings of the great Men there, and repining less at the Extravagance of their Power, as he was very considerably assisted by them in his foreign Expeditions. This Neglect of that wretched People had produced, in a few Years, so bad an Effect, that the *English*, in whose Hands the Government, Civil, as well as Military, principally lay, had, in little more than fifty Years, (*viz.* between the thirtieth of *Henry* the Third, *A. D.* 1246, when the *English* Laws and Privileges had been in the most formal Manner confirmed to them, and the Year 1300) totally divested them of the smallest Degree of Liberty, their Misery being brought to such a Point, that they could obtain no Redress in any Cause of Property, being excluded all Benefit of the Law, as appears from a \* Pleading before the Justices in Eyre at *Drogheda*, between *Thomas de Boteler* and *Robert de Alman*, in the twenty-ninth of *Edward* the First, in the same Year 1300.

† To evince farther the said Condition to which that Nation was reduced, there is extant a Record of the same Date, and before the same Justices, wherein it appears, that one *John Lawrens* being indicted for the Murder of one *Geoffry Douedell*, did not deny the Fact, but pleaded only the said *Geoffry* was an *Irishman*: which Plea, as it appears from the Record, would have been sufficient, but that the Jury found it to be false, and that the Deceased was of *English* Blood; in Consequence of which the said *Lawrens* was found guilty.

A MULTITUDE of Records may be produced both of this and the succeeding Reign, to show that  
at

---

\* Archiv. in Castro Dublin.

† Ibid.

at this Time the *Irish* were very cruelly treated, and wholly denied those Rights to which they were entitled, not only by the Law of Nature, but by formal Stipulation with the Crown. The *Irish* therefore affirm, that they cannot be justly reputed culpable of that Blood which, for four hundred Years, was shed in their Quarrels with the *English*; and that the Measures they took were only such as, in the Law of Nature and Reason, any People must have taken in such Extremities; and that they fought in Defence of their own Lands, which were secured to them by Charter from the Crown itself, in Opposition to Men who acted in a constant Course of Violence and Disobedience to the Law, and even contrary both to the Sense of the Crown, and of the *English* Nation in general.

THESE Abuses of Power being grown at length very notorious, the *English* Parliament, in the Fourteenth of *Edward* the Second, out of a mere Motive of Humanity, addressed the King to give Orders that the *Irish* Natives of *Ireland* might enjoy the Laws of *England* concerning Life and Member in as large and ample Manner as the *English* in *Ireland* enjoyed the same; in Pursuance of which Request, the King, by his Letters Patent, commanded that equal Justice should be done; yet such was the lawless Violence of the *English* then in *Ireland*, that they slighted the Orders of their Sovereign, and still continued the same oppressive Courses; during which, it was evidently the sole Aim and Labour of the *Irish* to recover these their just Privileges of *English* Subjects. To which Purport, it appears by the Clause Rolls of the Second of *Edward* the Third, that they exhibited not long after a Petition to the King. — \* That Prince, in a Writ to *John D'Arcy*, Lord Justice of *Ireland* then, taking Notice of this Petition of the *Irish*, desiring to be informed whether what they demanded might be granted without Prejudice, and requiring the Sense of the

---

\* Rot. Claus. No 17. in Turri Londini, A. 2 Edw. III.



the great Men in the ensuing Parliament of that Kingdom.

\* THAT this was their constant Endeavour, appears from the Beginning of their History to very late Times, not only in these Instances we have already mentioned, but in their Submissions to King *Richard* the Second, and to the Lord *Thomas* of *Lancaster* before the Wars of the two Houses, and afterwards to the Lord *Leonard Gray* and Sir *Anthony St. Leger*, in the Time of King *Henry* the Eighth. The *Birns*, a powerful Sect in the Thirty-fourth of that Reign, desiring to be incorporated into a County under the *English* Laws, and the great *O'Donnell* desiring no other Terms for his Submission than to be governed by the same Laws.

It does not appear what Answer was returned by the *English* Lords in *Ireland* to this Writ of Enquiry from King *Edward* the Third, which we have just now mentioned; but what it must have been, may be well judged from the Calamities that followed after. The Truth is, that they found too great a Benefit from this Breach of Faith with that Nation, ever to desire that they should be restored to those Privileges which they ought to have enjoyed in common with themselves. It was by this Rejection of that People from these Advantages, that they acquired all their Power; for, having provoked them to the Resistance of their Oppressions, they termed that Resistance Rebellion against the Crown; and, under Pretence of that Rebellion, laid a sure Foundation for rebelling with Impunity themselves.—No other Measures could have enabled them to increase their Territories as they did, all Judgments being given against the Natives as soon as they were stripped of their first Privileges; and the Kings of *England* receiving Information wholly from those *English* Lords, the *Irish* had no Means of Protection but by yielding themselves up to those Lords in a most servile Subjection (each protecting his own Followers:)

---

\* Historical Relations concerning Ireland, by Sir John Davies, Attorney-General to James I.

lowers :) Thus rendering their Condition something better than if they had remained at the general Mercy of these Plunderers. — All which was at length perceived by the Kings of *England*; but they were not in a Condition or at Leisure to remedy the Evil, being constantly occupied in foreign Wars or domestick Troubles.

THE frequent Disorders which followed after this Period, were all in general occasioned by the same Greatness of the *English* Lords, in which they were no sooner well established, than they became themselves the most formidable Enemies of the *English* Crown; for, excepting the Rebellion of *Tyrone* in *Ulster*, in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, it does not appear that the State was ever likely to be lost to *England* by the Attempts of any of the pure *Irish*.

HAVING now shewn the remote Causes of that great Event, which was the continued and manifest Oppression of the Natives, and their Resentments arising from that Usage, we must add some others of a later Growth, which likewise contributed very much to effect the Disorders of which we are coming to speak. And these were principally two; one of them, the Effect of an Alteration in the Religion of these Kingdoms; the other, a new Error in the Conduct of *England*, with respect to that People.

As to the first of these, King *Henry* the Eighth having been much disgusted with the Pope for Difficulties raised by him in the Dissolution of his Marriage with his first Wife *Catherine* of *Arragon*, resolved to gratify his Resentment against that See; and finding that Inclination well suited also to the Increase of the regal Authority, a Portion of which the Ecclesiastical Power had scandalously usurped over almost every State in Christendom; and being in this supported by the general Odium which the Clergy had contracted by their Avarice and Pride, and many other enormous Vices, he undertook to destroy the great Exuberance of Church Power, converting large Parcels of

their Estates to other Uses, and fixing other Regulations in these Matters, which have produced what we now call the Protestant Religion.—This Change was effected with Ease in *England*, his boisterous Temper, Spirit and Power being immediately present to check any Disorder that might have arisen upon it. The Observation of the Vices of the Clergy, and the Advantages reaped by the great Men in the Division of the Spoil (of which great Part was artfully with that View distributed among them) concurring powerfully to assist him it.—But the Case was different in the other Kingdom: For, in the first Place, Bigotry being the Effect of Ignorance, and Ignorance of Poverty, and of a remote Situation, the *Irish* in general, both remote and poor, had a greater Horror at Innovations of this kind.—The Provision for the Clergy *there*, was likewise less magnificent than it had been *here*; and their Luxury had consequently given less Offence.—To all which must be added another Reason, that the Great Men were not equally induced to favour the Change by Grants of the Church Lands, which were less considerable there; and finally, the Influence, Example, and Terror of the Crown, had much less Weight at that Distance. From all which Circumstances together, it has happened that the Reformation was never well established in that Country.

As the Oppression of a Party had formerly been the only Motive for the Disorders in that Kingdom, this Motive being single, these Disorders were less violent; but this of Religion, after that Period, concurring with the other, greatly added to the Discontents of that People.—The Popish Religion being that of the *Irish*, and the Protestant that of the State, Rebellion began to carry a severer Face than it had ever done before: The Remedy of their Civil Abuses might have been provided for in former Times by a Change of Ministers and Measures, but they then saw plainly that the total Subversion of the *English* Government was the only Means to secure their religious Rights.—Thus the Rebellion of *Tyrone* was longer and more obsti-

obstinately carried on with deeper Contrivance, and other Views than any which had before happened. This was, however, with much Expence of Blood and Treasure, concluded happily by the *English* Crown in the first Year of the Reign of King *James* the First, and *Ireland* was then pacified by the universal Comprehension of the whole People, under the common Benefit of the *English* Laws; a Point which they had long insisted on before, and which, as we have already shewn, was very much their Due.

HAD this been done when it ought to have been done, Millions of Treasure and Streams of the best Blood of both Kingdoms had been spared, (but as it frequently in other Cases happens) this Remedy was applied too late; for the Evil of Religious Difference was now grown so strong, that this Step, which had been alone before for many Ages sufficient to reduce and civilize the State to one equal Degree with that of *England*; and to the same peaceable Condition was now only sufficient to palliate these Disorders for a Time.—A Rancour having arisen reciprocally from the Inveteracy of these bloody Quarrels which is not yet eradicated.

THE Benefits of this new Constitution in that Country were however quickly manifested; and might have probably continued to this Hour, in Despight of the lurking Remains of old Resentments in the *Irish*, and the Prejudices of religious Opinions, if the *English* had not anew unhappily administered another Matter for Discontent, which added to the rest, raised the Distresses of that Nation higher than they had ever been known before.

THE Government of *England* had, till the Reign of *James* the First, principally confided the Management of Affairs in *Ireland* to the old *English* Families established there; and they had, as we have already shewn, even committed a great Error in trusting them with that Power in so unlimited a Manner, and in not supporting the *Irish* against their Abuses of it. But it is strange, that as soon as they had adapted a Remedy

to this great Mischief, by restoring the *Irish* to the common Condition of Subjects, which they did in that Reign, they should fall so suddenly into the contrary Extreme. It might be a just Judgment upon that Race of Men for their former Injustice; but it was extreme bad Policy in the *English* to divest them of all Degree of Power. The Government of that State was about this Time in a manner wholly taken out of the Hands of those who had any Interest in that Kingdom, in which both those of *English* and *Irish* Blood were equally concerned; so that the Equality on which all the Natives there were put, was not so much the Restoration of the *Irish* to the Privileges of *English* Subjects, as the Reduction of *both* into the Circumstances of a conquered People:—Both being thus involved in one Common Cause of Discontent, a like Suspicion grew quickly to be entertained of both, and no Representation from either Party carried any Weight on the other Side, where no Informations were received but from a new set of *English* Ministers, who, being generally Men of needy and desperate Fortunes, daily swarmed into that Country after the general Quiet began to be established; and where, by the Improvements hourly made in Consequence of that Quiet, they were ensured a mighty Advance of Circumstances. The Rapaciousness of these new Men created a general Disgust, which further reconciled all Parties; and this Union was not to be resisted by those who caused it, any other Way than by the falsest Representations of that People in general; and the Lords of the Pale and the old established *English*, who had ever, till then, escaped Suspicion, were involved and calumniated among the rest with better Credit and Success, their Religion, which was generally Popish, being the same with that of the ancient *Irish*, and as it was pretended that it would consequently engage them all in the same Interest.—— Thus, by such Representations as these they at length united two Parties which had ever entertained the most riveted Antipathy to each other, and could never have embarked

barked together in the same Measures, if they had not been driven to it by the same Common Cause of Discontent.

THERE is a certain Pride in all Nations (and, upon Enquiry, it may perhaps appear to have a very rational Ground) that creates an Abhorrence to be governed by a Race of Upstarts. That Men of Figure, Family and Fortune should transplant themselves into any Country, and there, by Means noble and worthy of themselves, advance that Fortune, is advantageous to any State. But this is rarely the Case, and was so at that Time only with Sir *Philip Perceval*, and a very small Number more. The Country so well knew and adjudged this Difference, that the Greatness of his Acquisitions there created him no Enemies among that People, though in an Age so jealous upon these Accounts. And it is to be mentioned, much to his Honour, that in all the Invectives of that Time his Power and Figure were never repined at; and his Letters and Papers shew that the principal People, both of the *Irish* and *English* Extraction, had the highest Veneration for him. But it was very different, as we plainly see, with other Men in Power there about that Period. They were in general Persons of wretched Extractions, of mean Circumstances, and who practised meaner Arts to make them better, by the Effect of which many of their Descendants are since arrived to Titles, and are advanced in such a manner, as renders it improper for us to be more particular in our Description of them. We shall therefore say no more of that Matter than this, *that the general and indiscriminate Disregard of that Nation, and the Engrossment of Power in a low English Faction there, was a grand and active Motive to that fatal Conjunction of all the Irish Interests in the Execution of that great Rebellion.*

IT is to be wished that this Neglect, which was even carried to an Affectation of Contempt for that People, had never taken its Beginning then. And, indeed, that it were more discountenanced in our own Times;

Times; for, from the same Causes at certain Conjunctions, the same Effect may spring hereafter.

BUT, besides the general Exclusion of all the best and most ancient Families from all Places of Power and Trust, to the Exception of a very few, these Distempers were further enflamed to a prodigious Heighth, by the Pretensions of the *English* Parliament to share with the Crown in the Government of that Kingdom; which the People there considered as a Violation of that Independency to which they thought themselves entitled by the Charters of *Henry* the Second and King *John*, and many succeeding Princes, by the Nature of their Acquisition, the Confirmation of *Magna Charta*, so often observed, and the constant Practice of all precedent Ages. But the Parliament of *England*, having at this Time reduced the Crown so low, that it could not maintain any of its Prerogatives, took to itself such Part of that Prerogative as best suited with the supposed Interest of *England*; and, among other Branches of it, this of a Superiority over that People.

THE Notion of being oppressed, contrary to ancient Privileges, being considered more than any particular Instance of Oppression, we shall therefore lay open here, and, in as few Words as possible, sum up all that we have occasionally hinted at before upon this Subject, together with some of those Arguments which were at that Time thought most material to be urged in Defence of the Privileges of that Kingdom: And these were to this Effect,

“ THAT the natural Rights of Mankind entitled  
 “ every People to be the sovereign Root of all Power  
 “ exercised upon their own Community,——that the  
 “ *Irish* Nation had submitted first to *Henry* the Second,  
 “ upon the Terms of enjoying such Freedom;——  
 “ that they were independent of every other Power  
 “ but that of the King; which appeared from hence,  
 “ that *Henry* the Second gave his Dominion of *Ireland*  
 “ to *John* his second Son, whose Issue (had he never  
 “ inherited the Crown of *England*) would have been for  
 “ ever independent Lords of that Country;—— that  
 “ the

of the House of YVERY, &c. 183

“ the accidental Union of the two Countries under  
 “ King *John* could never create a Dependence which  
 “ had no Existence before, and that both \* that Prince,  
 “ and his Son †, King *Henry* the Third, *had confirmed*  
 “ *that separate State of Liberty*, by their different  
 “ Charters,—that in the Reign of *Edward* the First ‡,  
 “ this Truth was so fully allowed, and the *English*  
 “ had so true a Sense of the Essence of Liberty,  
 “ which is to be bound by no Laws to which we do  
 “ not consent ; that the *Irish* Representatives *had Sum-*  
 “ *mons to the English Parliament* whenever it was ne-  
 “ cessary to enact Laws for *Ireland* ; and that the Di-  
 “ sturbances there could not permit a Parliament to  
 “ be held in that Country. Again §, in the Reign of  
 “ *Edward* the Third, *That they sat also in the English*  
 “ *Parliament for the same Reasons* ; ——— that in  
 “ the Reign of *Richard* the Second ||, *the Independency*  
 “ *was by Charter from that Prince again confirmed* ; —  
 “ that in the Second of *Richard* the Third |||, all the  
 “ Judges in *England* agreed in Opinion, that the  
 “ *English* Laws were of no Force in *Ireland*, because  
 “ *they sent no Members to Parliament in England, and*  
 “ *had a Parliament of their own* ; that not long af-  
 “ ter it was resolved by Acts of Parliament in *Ireland*,  
 “ viz. in the Tenth of *Henry* the Fourth \*\*, and in the  
 “ Twenty-ninth of *Henry* the Sixth ††, *That no English*  
 “ *Statute should be of Force in Ireland, unless promulged*  
 “ *by the Parliament of that Kingdom* ; ——— that this  
 “ arose from the Multitude of *English* Laws which  
 “ had been from Time to Time adopted by the *Irish*  
 “ Parliament, by which so many foreign Statutes  
 “ having

\* Red Book in the Exchequer at Dublin, Pat. 1. H. III.

† Ibid.

‡ White Book of the Exchequer at Dublin, 9 Edw. I. in 1 Par-  
 liament both of Lincoln and York.

§ Rot. Claus. 50 Edw. III. m. 23. *ibid.* m. 19.

|| Claus. 17 Ric. II. m. 12.

||| Year Book 2 Ric. III. fol. 12.

\*\* In Lib. Scaccar. Dublin.

†† Exemption in the Treasury of Waterford. Vid. Sir Richard  
 Bolton's Edition of the Irish Statutes. Stat. 10. H. VII. cap. 22.



“ having Force in *Ireland*, it was judged a proper  
 “ Precaution to make this declaratory Law, lest the  
 “ Privileges of the *Irish* Legislature should be con-  
 “ founded by it; that for the same Reason *Poynnyng’s*  
 “ Law, in the Tenth of *Henry* the Seventh, having  
 “ incorporated the whole Body of the Common and  
 “ Statute Law of *England*, antecedent to that Time,  
 “ left under this Circumstance all subsequent Statutes  
 “ might be included likewise, and that by this Pre-  
 “ tence their Freedom should be lost; \* an Act was  
 “ passed the Twenty-fifth of *Henry* the Eighth, in  
 “ the Preamble of which it is declared, *That Ireland*  
 “ *is free from all Laws but only such as have been de-*  
 “ *wised within that Realm, or such as the People of the*  
 “ *Realm had taken at their free Liberty by their own*  
 “ *Consent.*

“ Again, that the Judges †, at different Times, in  
 “ the Reign of *Queen Elizabeth* in *England*, had de-  
 “ clared, that the Privileges of the People of *Ireland*  
 “ were the same with those of *England*, as appears  
 “ by their Opinions, *That an Irish Peer* could not be  
 “ triable in *England* for that Reason.

“ THAT so late as the latter End of the Reign of  
 “ King *James* the First ‡, the Lord Chancellor *Bacon*  
 “ had acknowledged their Independency, and de-  
 “ clared positively, *That no Laws of England could*  
 “ *bind Ireland, excepting only those which their own*  
 “ *Parliament had received by Poynnyng’s Law before-*  
 “ *mentioned.*

“ THAT even at this very Time \*\*, of which we  
 “ write the Sollicitor General of *England*, Mr.  
 “ *St. John*, in his Argument before the Lords, upon  
 “ the Bill of Attainder of the Earl of *Strafford*, did  
 “ urge the Validity of those Liberties in Favour of  
 “ that People; and that their Independency was at  
 “ that

\* Vide Statutes of Ireland.

† Vide Dyer and Crompton, Jurisdiction of Courts.

‡ Vide Preface to the History of Henry VII. by the Lord Chan-  
 cellor Bacon.

\*\* Vide Rushworth’s Collections.

“ that very Time so little controverted, and the un-  
“ dermining it and its Consequences were looked up-  
“ on to be so heinous †, that it was one of the Ar-  
“ ticles of the Impeachment of the said Earl that he  
“ had made an Attempt to do it; and one of those  
“ Points for which he was adjudged worthy of Death,  
“ was the Disgust which he gave to the People of that  
“ Kingdom, by declaring publickly that they were a  
“ conquered People.”

YET after this Period, whether from Envy of the rival Greatness of the improving Fortunes of that Kingdom, or an Apprehension of its Advantages in Trade, or an Odium arising from the known Inveteracy of the Popish Faction there to the *English* Interest, the same Parliament were induced to assert a Superiority over that Nation, which it is certain they had never before affected; and the Prince himself did, through Weakness or Disregard of that People, or through the Necessity of his Affairs, in a good Measure, yield to what they aspired after.

WE have thus truly set forth the Rise and Progress of the Distempers of that State, and shewn, by an historical Deduction, the principal Causes of them, to have been the continued Injustice done them by the *English* Colonies, and a Resentment gradually riveted in the *Irish*, by the Denial of the Benefit of the Laws of *England*, for which they at first had covenanted.— Secondly, the Business of Religion, which (the other Subject of Dispute being now removed) prepared the different Interests in *Ireland* to unite.— Thirdly, the new Practice of the Government of *England* to throw all the Natives, of every Denomination, into a State of Neglect, Oblivion, and Contempt, leaving them to the Mercy of a Set of new Men, who plundered them in every Branch of the Administration. And lastly, that their Privileges and Independency were

---

† Vide Rushworth's Collections.

were now questioned, from whence Men of all Denominations foresaw great Inconvenience both to their publick and private Interests. It is no Wonder, that all these Particulars were sufficient to unite all of the same Religion. They were likewise found sufficient at least to disgust and destroy all active Affection to the *English* Government in the very Protestants themselves, who were not displeas'd to forward that Spirit of Redress which the Popish Party and their Lawyers, of whom they had many in the House, promoted violently with great Popularity, and for a long Time, without any Suspicion of those Views which they afterwards so fatally discovered.

THE Temper of the People being thus inflamed to the highest Degree, the Rebellion broke out in that impetuous Manner we have already observed upon the twenty-third of *October* 1641. Sir *Philip Perceval*\* was then in *Dublin*, and contributed in no small Degree to confirm the weak and timorous Spirits of the then Lords Justices, Sir *William Parsons* and Sir *John Borlacy*, who wholly wanted Courage and Skill to act a proper Part on this Occasion: The latter of these was little more than a Cypher in his Post; and the other had rendered himself so obnoxious to all Interests there, by his violent Measures and known Inveteracy to the *Irish*, that both his Character and Conduct contributed much to the Fury and Extension of that Flame. He was Master of the Court of Wards, of which Sir *Philip Perceval* was Register. And these two being the chief Officers of that Branch of the Administration, out of a kind of Emulation, as it usually happens, the Correspondence between them had stood for some time upon a very bad Foundation. This Coolness had its Rise in part from the Envy of Sir *William Parsons* at the Splendor of the Fortune and Reputation of Sir *Philip Perceval*, of which (whatever Pains he took for the former) he could acquire neither; but it had also another Cause, which

---

which was, the Violence of the Proceedings of Sir *William Parsons*\* in the Execution of his Office in the Wards, which was such, that it touched the Property of almost every Man in the whole Nation, his Aim being to vacate as many Titles as he could, without Distinction or Reserve, in order afterwards to make a Profit, by the re-granting them again: In which he carried himself, for the most part, without the least Regard to Honour or Justice. Sir *Philip Perceval* was a severe Check upon him in these Courses, and, being a Man incapable of acting upon such inglorious Motives, or concurring in so base a Part, naturally grew very obnoxious to his Collegue.—The Collections of Papers at that Time in this Family plainly shew the Difference of the Men, nothing occurring more frequently than the Application of the greatest Men of those Times to Sir *Philip Perceval*, to defend them against the Violence and Rapine of Sir *William Parsons*.

AND yet, as it often happens that Persons, who in easy and safe Stations, insult and quarrel with all the World, upon the least Reverse of Fortune, court those in the most servile Manner whom they have injured most; so Sir *William Parsons*, now conscious of his Danger, and his Need of better Council than his own Genius could afford him, was forward enough to consult Sir *Philip*, whose generous Spirit inclined rather to Contempt than Resentment against Men of that Stamp, readily contributed his Advice and Assistance with a Cheerfulness that never betrayed the least Remembrance of the former Differences which had passed between them.

BUT it was still more owing to the Interest of Sir *Philip* with the Council, where the Majority were tied to him by Blood, as well as by Respect and Inclination, that he was able to influence to any good Purpose. And still the Lord Justices, by virtue of their Station, would sometimes confound the best Resolu-

---

\* Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond.

tions ; especially when they had secured *Dublin*, and began to be less apprehensive for themselves : So that he was, in reality, little consulted by them after the first two Months, all his Labours, in Concert with those Sir *William St. Leger*, then President of *Munster*, being insufficient to overcome the Obstinacy of these Ministers ; who, having a little recovered their Fright, and expecting Succours from the Parliament of *England* timely and powerful enough, as they imagined, to conclude the Rebellion\* whenever they pleased, now only laboured to increase and diffuse the Desolation, by driving such as were in Rebellion to Despair, and by dealing with those who were yet quiet with such Severities and Threats, as must necessarily provoke them to engage in the same Distraction, pursuing those Measures out of a barbarous Policy to cause as many Forfeitures as they could, of which they expected afterwards to reap the Profit themselves upon the Restoration of the Publick Peace.

SIR *Philip Perceval*, blessed with a better Head and a better Heart, observed this Conduct with Horror and Detestation : Besides the shocking Villany of this Proceeding, he plainly saw that they manifestly hazarded the Loss of the whole Realm, to acquire the Chance only of recovering a Part in future Times to their own Profit.

IN this, and all other Measures of Violence, he gave his utmost Opposition to them. Several Letters are still extant in the Collection we have so often quoted between Sir *William St. Leger* and Sir *Philip*, expressing in both of them their Anxiety at this monstrous Behaviour, which was such, that notwithstanding all the Remonstrances from the Province of *Munster*, made by these two Gentlemen in the most pressing Manner, that Country was wholly neglected, when the smallest Assistance had effectually preserved it, if it had been afforded in any reasonable Time, no Disposition to rebel at all appearing in that Province, though

---

\* Vide Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond.

though left in this defenceless State till above two Months after the utmost Violences had been committed in the North, to which indeed it had been confined for a considerable Time; nor does it appear, with any Certainty, that there was any Participation of Councils between the *Irish* of *Ulster* and the other three Provinces upon the first Commotions, which had never spread so far, or become so general, but for this abominable Conduct in the Lords Justices, of which we have so fully spoken.

THE disaffected and discontented Party, invited by the Impunities thus offered to them, did at length, as these Gentlemen so often foretold (and as every common Judgment must have concluded they would do) take up Arms the first or second of *December*; at the Beginning, in small Parties, and without any Leaders of Distinction, plundering and pilfering where they met with no Resistance. The first Body formed there, was under the Command of Mr. *Philip O Dwyer* of *Dundrom*\*, whose Men, to the Number of one hundred, in a licentious Manner ravaging the Baronies of *Eliogurty*, *Killemana*, *Middlethyrde* and *Clanwilliam*, in the County of *Tipperary*, did infinite Damage to the Estate of Sir *Philip Perceval* in those Parts; besides which, they carried off a Stock of Cattle, which the Captain of his Castle there, in his Letter the Day after, *viz.* the seventeenth Day of *December*, 1641, valued at Three thousand Pounds. The Garrison also run great Risk of being taken by Assault; but it was bravely defended by the Commander, Mr. *Richard Stokes*, who had been lately entrusted with it; for, not long before the said Mr. *Philip O Dwyer* had been possessed of it, the Care and Management of that Estate having been long confided to him by Sir *Philip Perceval*; nay, the very Building and Reparation of the Castle had been carried on under the Direction of that Gentleman, whose Troops had committed this Outrage. Yet, upon this Occasion, this Justice is due  
to

---

\* Carte's History of the Duke of Ormoud.

to the Memory of that Gentleman, that he was no wife to blame in that Action; it is wholly to be ascribed to the lawless Violence of that undisciplined Mob over which he presided, rather than commanded.

—The Letters of Sir *Philip Perceval*\* are full of Gratitude to Mr. *O Dwyer* on this Occasion, he having acted with the utmost Friendship and Zeal for him, exerting himself to his own manifest Hazard in the Redress of this Injury, of which he knew nothing till it was past: He even came Time enough with another Party to punish the mutinous Proceedings of the former; and, by his Authority, and some Force, preserved eleven hundred Head of Cattle, which this ungovernable Band had not Time to share among them. These he conveyed to his own Lands, to secure them better for Sir *Philip*. He likewise directed many other valuable Goods and Things of Consequence to be removed into the Custody of some neighbouring Gentlemen, on whom he could rely; of all which he gave an honourable and faithful Account.—Nor did he rest here, but undertook to procure a Restitution of what had been imbezzled, though his Endeavours in this Particular proved ineffectual, notwithstanding the Trouble he took in it, and the Displeasure he incurred from his own Dependants.—Acts of this sort are rare in any Times of Disturbance. And we think it would therefore be unpardonable to omit this Testimony, which may probably induce some Descendant of this Family of which we write, to return the like good Service to the Posterity of that Gentleman, (if there should any remain) at some Conjunction, when they may stand in need of friendly Offices in their turn.

SIR *Philip Perceval* finding the Government so remiss in their Care of *Munster*, in which Province much of his Fortune lay, was resolved to apply the greatest Part of his Revenues in that Country to defend the State †, wisely judging, that to expend the  
Produce

---

\* Family Collections ut supra, Vol. 9. N<sup>o</sup>. 291.

† Ibid.

Produce of his Estates in their own Protection, would be not only a public Service, but the most likely way to preserve his Lands, which, if once in the Possession of the Enemy, might be with Difficulty, if ever, recovered from them. — He was wise enough to perceive likewise, that without this Step, they could not long continue to support him, and would inevitably add to the Power of the other Party, in a high Degree, not only from their Extent, which was very great, but, as a very large Part of them lay upon the Frontiers of the County of *Corke*, in a rich and fertile Country, and naturally so strong as to form a very defensive Barrier for several Miles, the River *Obeg* running on the Northern Border, and causing a Morass the whole Way of its Course. — On the left of this Line rose the wild and mountainous Country of *Slewlogher*, through which the Enemy could not pass, without a great Detour, and where they must meet with many Difficulties in their March, besides the little Invitation or Accommodation to be found in that wild, and almost desert Country. — On the right, the Line was bounded by the great Mountains of *Ballaghowra*, under which the same River making a great Bend, continued the same Obstructions.

IN those Passages which were most likely to be attempted, stood, in the following Order, first, the Castle of *Lisscarrol*, on the western Side; then the Castle of *Annagh*; and next to these, those of *Welchestown*, *Templeconila*, and *Ballincurry*, all standing in or upon the Borders of this Morass. The Castle of *Ballincurry* was without the Line, upon the very Mountains of *Ballaghowra* before-mentioned, and was at first thought proper to be maintained; but this, with the new Works raised about it, being found afterwards to require a greater Garrison than could well be spared, after having been taken by the *Irish*, and recovered by the *English*, was demolished, by order of Sir *Philip* himself. — The Places forming thus, as we have said, a very strong Barrier, were all garrisoned and main-



maintained by Sir *Philip Perceval*, being first repaired and fortified, by Intrenchments and others Works, in the best manner that was possible, and they enclosed a large Tract of a very beautiful and rich Country, which they defended the greatest Part of the whole War\*, and which, in Gratitude, repaid abundance of Provision, for the Use both of the Horse and Foot, maintained under the Command of Sir *Philip's* Stewards, *Raymond* and *Fisher*, of which the former commanded in *Lisscarrol*, the latter in *Annagh*, as the two most important Stations, from whence they issued out their Orders to the rest, for the Government of their Wards, and the Economy of their Provisions produced from the Estate.

BESIDES the Garrisons here mentioned, Sir *Philip* had placed a Body of Men in *Logbert-Castle*, in the same County†, which was afterwards surprized by the *Irish*; and another at *Castle-Warden* in the County of *Kildare*, which was taken from him, and totally destroyed, though within a few Miles of *Dublin*, in 1646.——He likewise placed a considerable Force in that Castle in the County of *Tipperary*, under the Command of *Richard Stokes* before-mentioned; to which we must also add another, situated upon the Sea-Coast, in the western Parts of the County of *Corke*, called *Dundeady*.——This latter § Place was of very extraordinary Strength, being a Peninsula, situated in the Sea, and joined to the main Land only by a little Point, wholly occupied by a strong Castle, and cut down to a prodigious Depth, in such a manner, that the Sea at every Tide had a Passage round it. But none of these being of equal Importance to the two first, and the last, though so strong by Nature and Situation, being of little Consequence to succour any thing but itself, we shall say nothing farther of them in this Place.

THE

---

\* Family Collections, ut supra.

† Ibid. N<sup>o</sup> 685, Vol. V.

§ Family Collections, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 685.

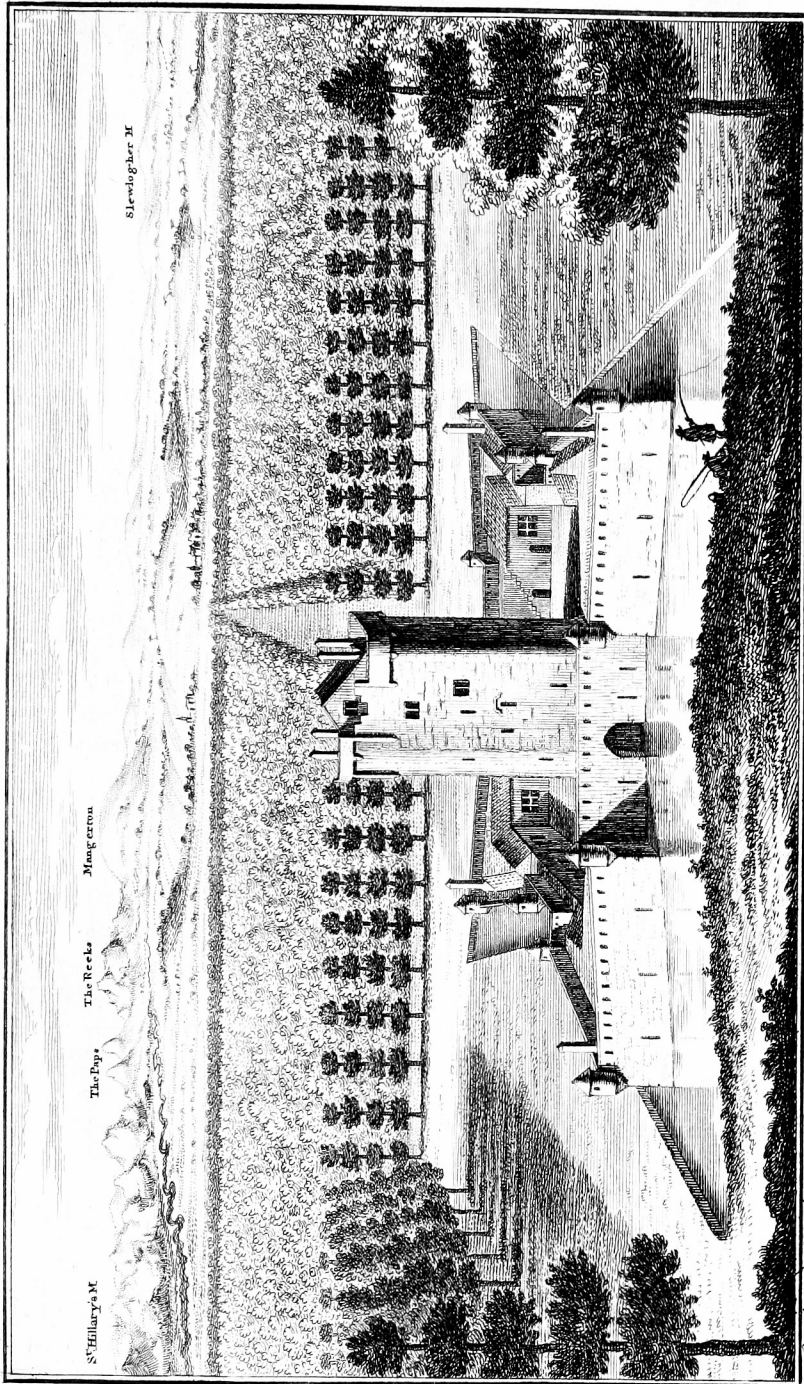
S. Hillary's M.

The Paps

The Reeks

Mang extra

Slewlogher M.



Donohart Castle near Malton in Ireland belonging to John O'Connell Earl of Egmont — This Castle was garrisoned in the  
 Rebellion 1641 by Sir Philip Perrenell with 150 men — It was surpris'd by 4 Irish and conquer'd several years on their  
 possession and garrison'd with 300 by them — S. Margreth's Waller in 1650 by the help of Cannon reduced it in four Days —  
 In His letter to the Parliament He calls it a place of greete strength.

W. G. Stone del.



## of the House of YVERY, &c. 193

THE generous Spirit which animated Sir *Philip Perceval* in this manner, shewed very early in the War its Importance to the State ; we know not whether we may be thought to arrogate too much to it, when we affirm it to have been a principal Means of the Preservation of that Kingdom.

FOR about this Time, the Catholics of the County of *Tipperary* and *Kilkenny*, invited by the little Opposition they were likely to meet, confederated together, under the Command of the Lords *Montgarett*, *Ikerin*, and *Dunboyne*, and advanced into the County of *Corke*, where, joined by the Lords of *Brittas* and *Castle-Connell* †, and the Followers of *Macdonnogh*, they made up a very formidable Army : they advanced to the very Mountains of *Ballabowra* before-mentioned, part of which are the Estate of this Family ; but here they stopped, obstructed by the Difficulties they met with there. Divisions afterwards arose between the Leaders last mentioned, and the Lord *Roche*, who pretended to the Command of the Forces of the County of *Corke*, which there united with the rest ; these Diffensions grew at length to such a Height, that they utterly broke the Measures of that Body ; and the Army dispersed, without making any considerable Attempt at that Time in that County.

THE Check so early given to that Body on this Side, (at a Time when the *English* Forces in the Province of *Munster* were in no Condition to take the Field) was of the utmost Importance, as it gained Time, and produced that Dissention which broke up this Army of the *Irish*.——Without this, the Province of *Munster*, in all Probability, had been lost.——And *Munster* being lost, there is no Ground to imagine that the Kingdom could have failed falling intirely into the Hands of the *Irish*, who were already so far Masters of the rest.

DURING

---

\* Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond.

† Family Collections, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 685.

DURING these Transactions in *Munster*, Sir *Philip Perceval* still remained at *Dublin*, where he commenced Prosecutions against three thousand of the Gentlemen and Freeholders concerned in the Rebellion; and by Virtue of his Office of Clerk of the Crown, carried the Process to an Outlawry against two thousand of that number. The Violence of the Lords Justices forced him to pursue this Work farther than he, and most of the rational and moderate Protestants, thought just or necessary; but he was a ministerial Officer, and his Share in it was no more than Matter of Form and Expence, the Charge of the whole Affair falling intirely upon him, together with much Odium. His Resentments were very great, to be thus made the Tool of the Barbarity of Men whom he despised, and to find himself loaded with a great Expence, in the Execution of Orders, which being given without any just Distinction, he followed with great Reluctance.—— But it was too dangerous at that Juncture to disobey, and surely fatal to have it done in such an Instance, when it had certainly been urged as a Mark of Disaffection in him, and had proved, in all Probability, the Loss both of his Life and Fortune.—— How much Reason he had to act with Caution in this Particular, will sufficiently appear hereafter, when, notwithstanding all his Circumspection, all his real Services against the Rebels, and his great Losses by them, he was more than once accused before the Parliament of *England*, the then Sovereign Tribunal of all these Nations, as having been an Abettor of that Cause, though nothing could be alledged to prove it, but the Humanity and the Honour of his Actions, in which, indeed, he widely differed from many of his own Party.

BUT at the same Time\*, he had an Opportunity of shewing his Humanity of Temper, in a singular Manner;

---

\* Sir Philip Perceval's Representation to the English House of Commons, 1645, penes Com. Egmont. Vide Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond.

ner ; for the City of *Dublin* swarming with Multitudes of unhappy Wretches, who flocked thither for Shelter, after having been stripped of every thing, and were utterly void of all Means of Subsistence, he generously took three hundred of them under his own Protection, and maintained them at his own Expence; which he continued to do for one whole Year; taking Care to provide for them during his Absence, when the public Affairs called him over into *England*, which was in the Month of *December*, or beginning of *January*, the same Year.

THE Occasion of his going thither, was to hasten the Supplies, which came from that Side in very small Proportions, to any Part of the Kingdom, and hitherto, in no Degree at all to *Munster*, where, notwithstanding the providential Diffipation of the Forces under the Lord *Montgarret*, of which we lately spoke, there still appeared a general Tendency to revolt, the leading Men being all upon the point to declare, and the Rabble every where out in small Parties, plundering and thieving, and ready to gather into a formidable Body upon the first Notice from their Chiefs, which was hourly expected.

THOUGH his Business chiefly lay with the Parliament of *England*, who had taken the Prosecution of the War upon themselves, yet the War not being commenced between them and the King, he had a Recommendation from the Council, to which the Lords Justices also signed, with a Direction to the then Secretary of State, Sir *Henry Vane*, to introduce him to his Majesty ; which being a handsome Testimony of his Services, and coming from some who had no Affection for him, may be properly inserted here.

\* *To the Right Honourable Sir Henry Vane,  
Knight, his Majesty's Principal Secretary of  
State.*

S I R,

“ THIS Gentleman, Sir *Philip Percevalle*, Knt.  
“ being to repair to *England*, We hold it fit to  
“ make him known to You, as a Person serving his  
“ Majesty in this Kingdom, for many Years hath done  
“ his Majesty many good and acceptable Services, and  
“ hath travailed with so much Industry in the Public  
“ Services of the Crown, as well in his particular Em-  
“ ployments as otherwise, with forward Affections to  
“ his Majesty, and good Satisfaction to the State, as  
“ renders him worthy of extraordinary Favour and  
“ Encouragement; and therefore We crave Leave,  
“ by You, humbly to recommend him to his Majesty,  
“ as one of his very well deserving Servants here.  
“ And so we remain, from his Majesty's Castle of  
“ *Dublin*, 15 ———, 1641,

*Your very assured loving Friends,*

Ormond Offory.

W<sup>m</sup> Parsons,

Jo: Borlase.

Dillon, Adam Loftus, John Temple,  
Charles Lambart, Francis Willoughby,  
Robert Meredith.

S I R

---

\* Ex Chartis Familiæ.

SIR *Philip Perceval* was no sooner landed at *Chester* \*, than he found Occasion to exert in a particular Manner, his Talent of Friendship, which he always carried to a scrupulous Nicety of Honour. There could not subsist a greater mutual Regard between two Men, than there did between the Earl (soon after Marquiss) of *Ormond*, and Sir *Philip Perceval*; the beginning of their Acquaintance was upon occasion of those Hardships which were inflicted upon that Earl's Father and himself, by the avaricious Endeavours of the Court Favourites of that Age, who both in the Reign of King *James*, and the beginning of that of King *Charles*, grasped at the great Possessions of that House. It was by Management in the Court of Wards, and by the active Oppression of Sir *William Parsons*, then Master of that Court, that they proposed to succeed in these Attempts: and such Success they had, that they put the Earl to great Difficulties, and drove him into such Expences to secure his Fortune, as long lay heavy on him. Upon this Occasion, Sir *Philip* made use of all his Authority and Skill, to serve that injured Nobleman; he exerted himself in a Manner even dangerous to himself, and acted such a Part as secured the Affections of the Earl to him, and to his Family; for ever after.——Of which there are extant many Monuments in his Letters, long after his own Advancement, and Sir *Philip Perceval*'s Decease: and on the other hand, there passed no Occasion in which the Person, Advice, and Fortune of Sir *Philip* were not at the Service of the Earl.

THE Earl of *Ormond*, however provoked at the ill Usage which his Family and himself had received, was so entirely gained by the Earl of *Strafford*, during his Administration in *Ireland*, (who had thought it a worthy Service to the King to secure, in those unsettled Times, a young Nobleman of so large a Fortune, and of a Spirit so proportionable to his Quality) that forgetting all his former Resentments, from that Time forward he

---

\* Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond, Vol. I. fol. 281.



he embarked heartily in the Cause of the Crown, from which he never afterwards departed.——He came at length, as it is well known, to be entrusted with the sole Government of that Kingdom, during the Heat of the Rebellion, and long after the Restoration, when he was advanced to the highest Honours, and obtained the highest Rewards that could be bestowed upon a Subject. But at this Time, which was in the Commencement of his public Employment, he was entrusted only with the Command of that small Army which the State there was then able to raise; he had then only the Title of Lieutenant-General, and laboured as well under the Disadvantage of never having served before in a military Capacity, as under the Odium of an *Irish* Birth and Extraction, which, though originally *English*, was still a Matter of Objection to him, with those who were merely so, and who have at all Times, with a strange and absurd Inveteracy, fought to undervalue their Countrymen in that Kingdom; a Practice, which has doubtless first obtained from the Avarice of the mean *English*, who laboured by these Means to engross the whole Profits of that Kingdom, to the entire Exclusion of the Natives, which Evil has since been blown up into the fiercest Heat, from the mutual Reproaches and Injuries that have proceeded from these Measures.—— But this was not the only Objection to that Lord, his Family having almost ever been of the Popish Religion, and most of his Relations being so at that Time, and in actual Rebellion, as were even his second Brother, and his Brother-in-law the Lord *Murray*, who was General of the Rebel Forces. Both his Religion and Fidelity were somewhat suspected, and by many it was thought, that he shewed too much Tenderness in the Prosecution of the War; which, though the Result of his Humanity, and possibly agreeable to his Compassion for many of his former Friends, was yet the Method most wise and politic, and to which may be ascribed the Preservation of that Kingdom, when the violent Exasperations of a less moderate, or worse designing Set of Men, had  
driven

driven those already engaged into more desperate Measures, and strengthened their Party, by a vast Accession, not only of revengeful Spirit, but of effective Numbers, who, though not sufficiently animated by their Religion, were thus hurried by their Passions to embark in that pernicious Cause.

WHILST many crude and unjust Suspicions of the Truth and Integrity of that great Nobleman thus passed abroad in secret, a more public and daring Attack was made upon his Honour\*, by one Mr. *Wisbart*, a Son of Sir *John Wisbart*, a Scotch Gentleman settled in the North of *Ireland*; who having been a Prisoner with the *Irish Army*, was at length released from them, and was at *Chester* when Sir *Philip Perceval* passed that City in his Way to *London*. This Man affirmed there, with the greatest Confidence, to Persons of the first Distinction, and indeed to all who happened in Discourse with him, that the Lord *Gormanstown*, and other Lords of the Pale then in open Rebellion, had assured him, that they held a Correspondence with the Earl of *Ormond*.

HE went so far as to declare, that he had seen Proofs of this Correspondence with the Earl of *Ormond*'s own Hand.——Sir *Philip Perceval* warmed with the utmost Resentment, at so base an Injury done to his Friend, endeavoured to the utmost of his Power to find the Wretch, that he might obtain an adequate Satisfaction from him; but the Man absconded for some Time, till Sir *Philip*, pursuing his Point with the same Ardour, discovered him at last, and brought him before the House of Lords at *Westminster*, where he was obliged, in the meanest manner, to give himself the Lie, and to recant all that he had thus basely forged, against one of the most noble and most useful Subjects that any Age has produced.——The Consequence of this well-judged Service was, that the Lords and Commons both found themselves necessitated to vindicate the Reputation of the Earl in a public manner, which many of them had a much better Dispo-

---

\* Carte's History, ut supra.

Disposition to see more blackened, if they could have suffered it with any Decency. For this great Act of Friendship, he received the strongest Acknowledgments from that Lord ; but he had still a greater Satisfaction, which was, that he preserved to that Kingdom, by this Step, the Service of that able Man ; and frustrated the Attempts of a Party in *England*, who sought eagerly to remove him from a Command of that Importance, where they wished to have placed some Creature of their own, in whom they could have assured themselves of that explicit Obedience in all Events, which they neither then promised themselves, nor afterwards found in the Earl of *Ormond*.

AT this Time he waited upon the King †, with his Letters of Recommendation from the Government of *Ireland*, and was received in a very favourable Manner ; the King being so well pleased with him, that he kept him long in his Remembrance, in so much, that upon a public Occasion afterwards, he summoned him over in particular, to consult him upon a Matter of great Importance, as we shall shew hereafter in its Place.

BUT he found evidently, that notwithstanding this honourable Reception, nothing could be expected from that Quarter, for the Service on account of which he came.

FOR the King having left the Management of the *Irish* War to the *English* Parliament, had by that Step much disabled himself from interfering in it. Besides this, the prevailing Party having much loaded him with the Imputation of being privy to it, it certainly wrought in him such an Effect, that he was ever after more favourable than he would otherwise have been, to the Rebels there ; to which, the Influence of a Popish Queen, and Popish Counsellors, contributed not a little ; but above all, the Professions of the Rebels there, whose Views were no less dangerous to him, than those of the Parliament, yet appeared the less so to him, as they were always violent against the Parliament, and were

---

† Family Collections, ut supra.

were, in this Respect, united in a common Cause with the King himself.

SIR *Philip Perceval*, therefore, very soon applied himself to the Leaders of the House of Commons, among whom Mr. *Pim* and Mr. *Holles* were his intimate Friends; the former on account of a near Relation that subsisted between them, and the other from a Resemblance in Principles, which afterwards kept him in a close Correspondence as long as Sir *Philip* lived.

It was with great and unwearied Diligence that Sir *Philip Perceval* employed near three Months in the Execution of this Charge. His Representations had Weight and Credit beyond those of most Men, not only on account of his Fortune and Character, but as he was himself an *Englishman*, and established in a great Acquaintance, even before his Father had taken him over into *Ireland*; and made use of those Advantages to so good an Effect, that he procured a considerable Supply to be sent over particularly into *Munster*, under the Lord *Inchiquin*, Sir *Charles Vavasour*, and Colonel *William Jephson*; so seasonably, that it enabled the *English* to take the Field in the beginning of the Year in that Province \*, and to defeat the Enemy, as will presently appear.

SIR *Philip Perceval* returned soon after this again to *Dublin*, which he reached the last of *April*, 1642 †, but some time before, without his own Desire, the Employment of Commissary-General of the Army in *Ireland* was conferred upon him, by a Vote of the *English* House of Commons; and by other Resolutions of the same Day, his Salary was settled, with Allowances for his Clerks, &c. at 3*l.* 7*s.* 6*d.* per diem, with a Power for the farther § Employment and Payment of such Officers as might be afterwards found necessary to him, and should be warranted by the Lord Lieutenant-General,

---

\* Family Collections, ut supra.

† Sir Philip Perceval's Representation to the House of Commons in England, Autograph. penes Com. Egmont.

§ Journal of the House of Commons, 23 March, 1641.

General, and other chief Governors in that Kingdom. — After which, having received his Instructions from the Earl of *Leicester*, the Lord Lieutenant, then in *London*, dated the sixth of *March*, and a Letter from the same Lord to the Lords-Justices in *Ireland*, to notify his Appointment to that Office, he left *London*, and reached the other Kingdom before the End of *April*, as we have said; where the first Salutation he received was, the Account of the Surprize of his Seat called *Castlewaring*\*, near *Dublin*, by the Rebels, who destroyed and plundered every thing they could find there, to a great Value. This was seconded immediately by an Account sent him by *John Hodder*, one of his Agents in the County of *Corke*, of his Losses by the War in that County alone, since the Rebellion first broke out †, which were comprehended under these two Articles:

	<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
In Stock, <i>viz.</i> Cattle, &c.	2,866	00	0
In Rent, —————	2,587	14	0
Making in the whole,	5,453	14	0

BUT the Circumstances of the Public were such, that he had hardly Time to reflect upon his own private Losses; and he had now a Multiplicity of Affairs upon him, the Office of Providor-General of the Horse being added to his other Employments.

AT this Juncture, the King having given the Earl of *Ormond* Authority under his Signet, dated *May 11*, 1642, to appoint all the inferior Officers in the Army, as often as their Commands should become vacant, during the Absence of the Lord-Lieutenant, and as long as the Rebellion lasted; a Power which was at first kept secret, left the Lord-Lieutenant should be displeas'd at it, who had not intirely devoted himself to the Parliament Interest §. — But that Lord appearing

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. IV. N<sup>o</sup> 335.

† Ibid.

§ Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond, Vol. I. fol. 335.

pearing every Day more duped, or biaſſed to the Meaſures of that Party, the ſame Caution was no longer uſed with him; and the Earl firſt exerciſed that Commiſſion in conferring a Troop of Horſe upon the Lord *Dillon*, Son to the Earl of *Rofcommon*, and a Company of Firelocks upon Sir *Philip Perceval*, which produced great Reſentments between the two Lords.

THE public Service in thoſe Times, made it neceſſary to keep ſeveral Out-Garrifons in convenient Places, and many of theſe requiring Supplies from *Dublin* by Land, ſeveral Inconveniencies were found in ſending them, when the Convoys were appointed out of ſeveral Companies, particularly Difficulties in the Command, and Danger of want of Secrecy in the Execution. To prevent theſe Evils, the Earl of *Ormond* conferred this Company upon the Commiſſary-General, Sir *Philip Perceval*, who had already, upon ſeveral Occaſions, ſhewn the Advantage of this new Regulation to the public Service; he had been already at a great Expence in arming and ſupplying this Company, and was beſides, as the Author of the Duke of *Ormond's* Life obſerves, (who relates this Affair at large) a Perſon of the greateſt Merit, and univerſally eſteemed; yet the Earl of *Leiceſter* complained highly of this Step, as a Slight of his Authority, and ſent over a Commiſſion to his Son, the Lord *Liſle*, then in *Ireland*, for one Captain *Denn* to command that Company: but the Lords Juſtices and Council interpoſed on behalf of Sir *Philip Perceval*, and prevented the Lord *Liſle* from the Execution of his Father's Orders. And thus he kept his Poſt, till he was farther and abſolutely confirmed in it by the King, in a Letter dated *Auguſt* the twentieth, from *Stoneleigh-Abby* in *Warwickſhire*, a Houſe of Sir *Thomas Leigh*, where he had then his Head Quarters.—— This Affair, though in itſelf a Matter of no great Importance, ſo piqued the Lord *Liſle*, who ſaw both himſelf, and his Father's Authority, extremely ſlighted on this Occaſion, that he never forgave Sir *Philip Perceval*, and

was afterwards an Instrument of great Trouble to him on the other Side of the Water.

THE Rebels in *Ireland* improving and encreasing every Day, in Order, Discipline and Supplies, nothing seemed possible to aggravate the miserable Condition of the *English* in that Kingdom, but that which now fell out: and this was the War between the King and the two Houses of Parliament in *England*, which after several Years Duration, at last ended in the Loss of that Prince's Head, and the Establishment of one of the Parliamentary Officers, in the same uncontrolled Authority, to destroy which in the Crown was the Motive of this great Event.

It is a great Misfortune, that Men are not as able to foresee the Train and Consequences of those Springs which move the Minds of Nations, before they reach their Crisis, as they afterwards are to trace them to their proper Sources; had this been possible at that Time, the Crown had never then vainly aimed at that despotic Power, on which it seemed to doat with a peculiar Madness, beyond even the common Rage and Lust of Power in Princes. During the Reign preceding, and that of which we speak, the divine and uncontrollable Authority of Kings had been talked up so much, that there was no other Language within the Reach of the King's Ear; it echoed back to him from his own Mouth, and those of his wretched Ministers, so loudly, that he mistook it for the Voice of the whole People; and what was a worse Mistake, he took it for the Sense of the same People likewise.

IN tracing the Causes of this Revolution, we need to go no farther back than to the Reign of *Henry* the Seventh, when the Commons first, by Permission given to the Nobility to alienate their landed Estates, (before not to be done without a Licence from the Crown, which was generally obtained with Difficulty) received the first Push, that rolled them towards that Point of Power to which they have since arrived. Another Accident likewise happened in that Reign, which was the Discovery of the *West-Indies*, from whence flowed

in a mighty Tide of Wealth, and that falling generally into the meanest Hands, enabled them gradually to purchase out the old Nobility, who then grew necessitous when Money grew plenteous, because they then first found the Means of contracting Debts.

IN the ensuing Reign, King *Henry* the Eighth, by the Dissolution of the Abbies, threw a great additional Weight of Property into the Hands of the Commons, the greatest Part of those Church-Lands, then, or soon after, falling into them.

FROM that Time to the End of the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, the growing Wealth of *Europe*, and increasing Commerce of *England*, which drew in a large Share of that Wealth to this Kingdom, entirely overturned the ancient Ballance. These new Riches coming entirely to the Commons, the Lords and ancient Gentry never concerning themselves in those Hazards or Occupations by which they were acquired.

THE Property in the Reign of King *James* the First, being now in this great Proportion turned into the Channel of the People, it is evident that the Power was essentially in the People, and that this necessarily created a stronger Disposition towards a popular Government, than ever had been seen before. — Power and Dominion must ever follow Property. — It may be questioned, however, whether that Property was yet so much diffused, as to effect a Change so sudden and violent, if other Causes had not concurred, to provoke and animate the People to exert their new acquired Authority; and these were found in the arbitrary Measures then pursued by the Crown, and in the bigotted Proceedings of the Clergy. These Causes if properly distinct, had still so much Dependance on each other, that it is not necessary to make any Distinction between them.

THE State of Prerogative had never been high in *England*, for any considerable Time after the *Norman* Conquest: however, artful Men employed to preach up Chains and Fetters, have sought to convince the People of it, knowing how powerfully the worst of Pre-



## 206 *A Genealogical History*

Precedents affect the Minds of Men, who seldom seek for more in Government than what they think their Ancestors enjoyed. The Conqueror himself acted neither as a Conqueror, nor as a Tyrant; many of the *English* were, indeed, dispossessed of their Estates, yet not till they had rebelled against his Government, and only those that did; but the *Normans* still continued free. — The *English* and the *Normans* quickly became one People. — And *Henry* the First, who had not a legal Right to the Crown, his elder Brother still living, was obliged to confirm the Liberties of that blended Nation, to secure his Title.

*KING John* was the first who attempted openly to carry the Power of the Crown to any great Excess, but with an Issue as wretched and fatal to himself, as glorious and happy to his Subjects, who forced the *Magna Charta* from him. — *Henry* the Third, his Son, pursued his Father's Steps, and suffered greatly for it; yet he prevailed at last, and enjoyed, but could not establish to his Posterity, a Power more than was his Due: in contending for which, he had been imprisoned by his Barons, and had been often forced to the Confirmation of his Father's Charter before-mentioned. — Till this Time, whatever were the Condition of the Populace, the Condition of the Crown was low, that of the Nobility being ever able to restrain it. — At the Close of the Reign last spoken of, the Crown impaired that Power in the Lords, by a great Confiscation of the ancient Baronies; yet was still unable to carry its own beyond the Bounds of Reason, with Impunity. The Prince who next endeavoured this, was the Grandson of the last, who, by supporting Favourites against the Laws, caused Disorders, which ended in his own ignominious Death. This Tragedy restrained the like Attempts for many Years: they were at length revived by *Richard* the Second, his Great Grandson, who likewise made a Reparation to his People at the Expence of his Life and Crown. The Advancement of *Henry* the Fourth to the Place of the Prince last mentioned, established that

Division of the two Houses of *York* and *Lancaster*, which, though it could not prevent all Attempts, and every Instance of that unlimited Authority, yet effectually hindered its Continuance. The Change of each Family for the other, as they abused their Trust by Turns, affording from Time to Time a frequent Relief against such Injuries. Thus we are brought down to King *Henry* the Eighth, in whom, as all Pretensions centered, so was the Prerogative exalted beyond what had ever been known, almost in any Age, in these Dominions. ——— The Lords had long been losing and impairing those immense Estates, which were the sole Foundation of their Power; they had lost their Leaders, by the merciless Carnage of the Princes of the Blood: and the Commons had not, as yet, discovered the Force of that Wealth, which gradually flowed into their Channel. Thus by the Weakness of the first, the Ignorance of the last, and the single Pretensions of the Prince, he maintained himself in great Authority during his whole Reign, though not without that Deference to Parliaments which his Successors, with less Abilities of every sort, vainly thought unnecessary for them to shew.

THE Grounds on which the Princes mentioned formerly proceeded, when they aimed at this Prerogative, were generally, either the Merits of their Ancestors, who had endeared their Posterity to the People, an illustrious Train of Progenitors, ever educated and derived among them, the Influence of their own Revenues, or the Assistance of some of the Nobility, whose great Authority and Interest they purchased by Favours and Honours, always to be furnished of the Crown, in every Age, to the Gratification of a few. ——— But in the Times to which we direct our Discourse, the Princes who thus aimed at arbitrary Power, were destitute of every one of these Supports: Their Family was of a foreign Extraction, taken up suddenly upon the Throne, out of a Nation to which the *English* had an utter Aversion, on account of the continual Quarrels with them, and an equal, though unjust Contempt

tempt, on account of the Poverty of their State. The very Alliance by which they claimed the Crown, was with a Female, whose Marriage was as obsolete as the Distance of one hundred Years could make it. The Crown Revenues were now exhausted, and the Prince had nothing to depend upon, but what he annually begged of his People, or endeavoured to ravish by Force from them, to exercise which, he had no Army, nor Means to raise one, or to maintain it. What little could be collected by either of these Means, was vainly and distastefully lavished upon needy Favourites of his own Country, or drawn from him by the base Flatteries of the Refuse of the *English*, who paid their Court by rendering themselves odious to the whole Nation, in which, in Proportion as they succeeded, in the same Proportion they secured their own Advancement: And yet, had this Income, thus mispent, been either much greater, or better employed, the Crown had been still incapable of buying any considerable Assistance with it.—The Public was not to be bought, but at the solid Price of Liberty, and the Service of Individuals was not worth the Purchase, a few being no longer able to do what they could formerly do, the Power of the Nobility being by this Time wholly reduced and broken.—What then could be the Grounds on which they proposed to build this unlimited Sovereignty, may well deserve our close Enquiry.

KING *Henry* the Eighth having, as we have before observed, dissolved the Abbies, and made an Alteration in the Religion then established. This Reformation was still pursued in the following Reigns, excepting only the short Time that his eldest Daughter *Mary* sat upon the Throne.—At the beginning of this Change, the new Clergy, who had been advanced upon the Ruins of the old, made it their principal and earnest Business to support the Power of the Crown, from which they derived their Preferments.—This Change, however necessary and advantageous to the State, was doubtless in its first Steps illegal and arbitrary; they reasonably thought this the surest Way to maintain

maintain this Alteration, upon which their own Grandeur depended, by preaching the People into a conscientious Opinion, that the Crown had an absolute Power to dispose of the Properties of any of its Subjects, in what Manner it should please, and that the People had no Right to resist. With those Views, the Canons, Homilies, and standing Sermons of the Church were formed, insinuating such divine Rights in the Persons of our Princes; and such a magical Virtue in the holy Oil with which they were anointed, as utterly destroyed all Liberty in the People, by taking away the Power and Principle of their Defence, and such as never was paralleled in any State, but that of the *Roman Empire*, where the same impious Practicē of the Deification of their Princes prevailed in the last Stages of their Government.

THESE Doctrines, levelled at first against the Papists, whose Party remained in the beginning very strong, upon the Diminution of that Set of Men, were soon converted against another, who were now become more dangerous to the Protestant Clergy than their first Enemies had been; these were that Class of Men who thought the Reformation imperfect, and the remaining Power and Revenues of the Church still too considerable, who endeavoured farther to pare away those Supports of Pride and Vanity, which render the Clergy of all Religions but too resemblant to each other; and to deprive them of that great Remnant of ceremonious Pageantry, Pomp, and Superstition, with which they enthralled the ignorant Vulgar by a strange Enthusiasm, and kept them in a blind Obedience to themselves.—— These Men, who from an Affectation of the most rigid Virtue, and Purity of their Manners, obtained the Name of *Puritans*, had doubtless a Multitude of hot and bigotted Spirits in their Party, very extravagant in their Way, but their was in general better Sense, and a more open Understanding in these of that Denomination, and they plainly comprehended the natural Tendency of that Ecclesiastical Power, and its Economy, into Popery again, to which they thought

the Clergy of all Religions inclined, and which they judged to be essentially little more, than that Form of Church Government in spiritual Matters, which subdues the Minds of Men in the greatest Degree, and raises the Spiritual Order to the highest Share of Power in the State. Reason alone created this Opinion in them, Experience, her Assistant, has given Proof of it to us, the Protestant Clergy having of later Years been ever found the main Support of the Pretensions of a Popish Prince to the Throne of these Kingdoms, from whose Government they can expect nothing but a Change of that Religion which they themselves pretend to follow, in Opposition to the other. The same Men foresaw likewise how great an Union had been formed by these Doctrines between the Crown and the Clergy; a Circumstance extremely dangerous to Liberty, and never before observed in any such Degree in all the History of *England*.

THE Prudence of Queen *Elizabeth* moderated Matters tolerably well between these different Parties, during her long and glorious Reign; but upon the Accession of King *James* the First, a Prince of a very different Capacity, the Mischiefs were in themselves not only grown older and stronger, but they became inflamed by his imprudent, passionate and contemptible Conduct, his Hatred to the Puritans, who had reduced his Authority in *Scotland* to a low Ebb, threw him headlong into the Arms of the *English* Clergy, with whom he concurred in the Heat and Desire of Persecution of Men of that Denomination; on their Parts, they used their utmost Endeavours, in return, to gratify their Prince in his greedy Thirst after an absolute Power, independent of his Parliaments. Thus a visible Bargain was struck between the Clergy and the Crown, the Conditions of which were evidently the Establishment of the Prince in this formidable Independence, on the one hand, and on the other, the Ingrossment and Management of all temporal Affairs, as well as spiritual, in the Hands of the Church.

THE

THE Consequence of this Conjunction was very natural; it was a Coalition of the popish Party with the Church and Crown; the former flying eagerly for Protection to those who had no Aversion to them, unless when they were their Rivals for Preferments in the Church, which was now the Case no longer, and were united with them in the common Sentiment of raising the spiritual Power to a Point as high as possible.

ANOTHER Conjunction as natural, was that of the Puritans with the Dissenters of all Denominations, who now came to endure the same common Sufferings, from the united Power of the Crown, the Clergy, and the Papists, to which Party also adhered all who had any Spirit, or Principle of Liberty, and desired to preserve their Country from that abject Slavery, which the former Conjunction threatened to introduce among them.

THE whole Nation thus became divided into two Parties, composed each of Interests united without Affection, and joined together wholly, to what they perhaps all hated, or feared, by a common Opposition to something which they hated or feared still more.— From hence, a Latitude for prodigious Inflammation opened, each Party reviling and characterizing the other, under that Denomination which they judged most unpopular and most galling; the one Party acquiring the Scandal of Popery, while the other was reproached with Fanaticism and Irreligion, because the Persons of which it was composed, consisted of such a Variety of different Persuasions in these Matters, that no one Opinion, as to Religion, could well be said to predominate at first among them.

THE Ferment to which the Minds of Men were now raised, sufficiently portended some great and general Calamity. The Clergy, and their Party, were the least sensible of their approaching Danger; their narrow and confined Education, and little Practice of the World, exposed them easily to create, by their Ambition and Obstinacy, the most terrible Disorders, but deprived them of the Means to effect their Ends, or to foresee the Consequences of their own Measures.

They had laboured, indeed, with great Effect, to preach the Consciences of Men into Submission to the Prince, and had, with amazing Assurance, inculcated this Absurdity as a Divine Commandment; and they urged it further, from the Canons of the Church, which, once established by what they pretended to be the proper Authority, they affirmed, in effect, to be as valid as the Gospel itself.

THE Women, the Old, the Weak, and the Unfortunate, are ever prone to Superstition; these form the most numerous and clamorous Part in all Societies, and they were greatly influenced by these Impressions, whilst the Clergy, from a Disposition in human Nature which often imposes on us all, believed their Success much greater than it was, because they wished it greater: They flattered themselves in this Imagination, and fixed the Measure of their Influence upon the Numbers they infected, without considering their Quality or Interest. From hence they formed a Computation of their Strength, fatal to themselves, and to the Prince their Master, whom they deceived, as they had been deceived themselves, and who now began to think himself secure in the Exercise of any Prerogative he should please to assume, depending on the slavish Bigotry introduced among his People.

WE are by this time able to discover that new Power which arose, when all other Powers that our Princes formerly enjoyed were lost; and it was upon this alone that they founded all their Hopes to succeed in those Attempts which their Predecessors had hitherto made in vain: And though it has not proved sufficient to compleat their Views, it is a miserable Truth, that it has nearly done it upon several Occasions since that Conjunction. The same Spirit still breathes among us under the different Appellations of *Tory* and *Whig*, each of which are still much in the same manner fired with the same Impressions, and actuated by the same Principles, (without being in general sensible whence they are derived, what they mean, or whither they lead;) yet sufficient to plunge us a new into Blood and Confusion,  
upon

upon many Incidents that may very possibly happen to this Kingdom.

KING *Charles* the First, bred up in the constant Observations of these Politics in his Father, obtained his Father's Crown at a Time when the latent Mischiefs arising from them was just ripened; and when he thought, on the contrary, that they had subdued all Power of Opposition. Upon this Presumption, he governed his Subjects of every Condition from the Beginning of his Reign with a very harsh and absolute Authority: But, being willing to soften the Rigour of Reflection upon a Prince, who paid so dearly for his imprudent Conduct, we shall not enter into a Detail of those ungracious Actions by which he lost the Affections and Opinion of his People.

It is sufficient, therefore to observe, that these were the Circumstances of the Nation, this the Power on which the Prince depended, these the Methods of his Government. King *Charles* discovered enough how much he had mistaken every one of these; but he discovered this too late: He yielded, in many Particulars, when his yielding only discovered the Incertainty of his Temper, and the Weakness of his Resolution. So that in the Extremity to which Things were reduced, he could not reap the Benefit which Concessions much less important would have given him at the Beginning.——He only confirmed the Party that oppressed him in their Measures of Opposition. These Men discovered less Danger from persisting against a weak, than from confiding in a treacherous Prince, as they imagined him to be.——And thus began that formidable domestic War, which for so many Years rendered this Nation one universal Scene of Blood and Desolation.

THE Rebels in *Ireland*\* now growing very formidable by this Situation of Affairs in *England*, (having settled several Disputes among themselves, appointed  
Colonel

---

\* Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond.



Colonel *Garret Barry* to the Command of the *Munster Forces*\*, as an Expedient to prevent the Mischiefs of that Emulation which appeared in the Lords *Roche, Mountgarret, Muskerry*, and other Noblemen of that Party, for the supreme Conduct of the War) entered into the County of *Cork*, and besieged the City of that Name, yet without Success, though their Numbers were so much superior, that the *English* Army could not keep the Field against them. But, finding the Loss of Time spent before that City, prejudicial to their Cause, they raised the Siege, and, for the present, quitted that Country, returning into that of *Limerick*, which borders on it, where, in a short Time, they over-ran the whole Country, taking the City of *Limerick* itself: There they became Masters of much Artillery and Provisions for Sieges, with which they were not before so well furnished; after which, having reinforced their Army with Men, and strengthened it with all necessary Provisions of War, they resolved to march in the Flush of their late Successes, to make a second Attempt upon that County, which they had lately quitted from its Situation and Extent, and the Strength of its *English* and Protestant Establishment, the greatest Bulwark of the contrary Cause.

Pursuant to this Resolution, they entered the County of *Cork* again upon *Tuesday* the twentieth of *August* †, 1642, with a Body of Seven thousand Foot and Five hundred Horse, under the Command of the Lord *Muskerry* and General *Barry*, bringing with them a large Train of Artillery; and, among the rest, one † Piece of Battery of so large a Bore, that it was drawn by five and twenty Yoke of Oxen. With this Force they sat down before the Castle of *Liscorrol* the same Day. The Importance of the Situation of this Castle, and of that Line which Sir *Philip Perceval* had made upon his Estate, was  
now

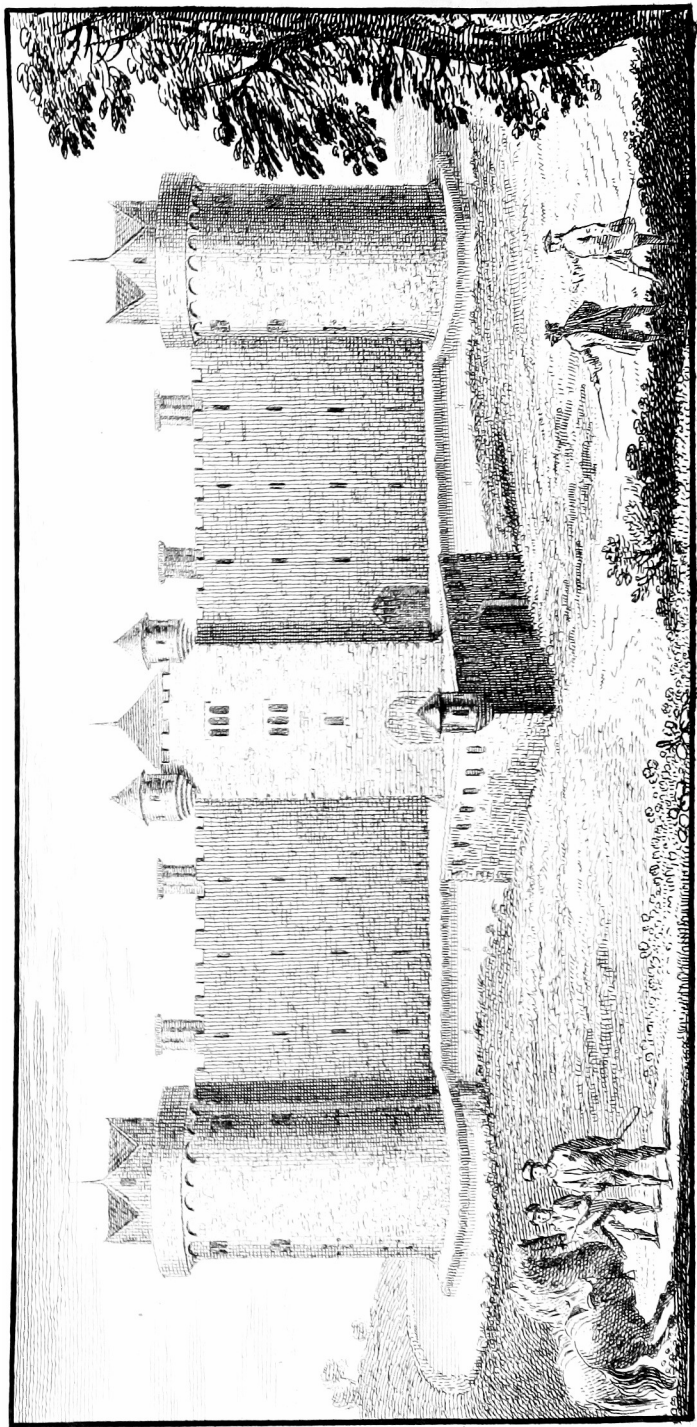
---

\* Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond.

† Ibid.

‡ Ibid.





The Castle of Liscarrow, in the County of Corke, in Ireland; belonging to the House of Perceval, long defended against a Numerous Army of the Irish by that Family, during the great Rebellion . 1641 . —

now discovered plainly. It was impossible to pass in any Part of this Line, which, as we before observed, extended several Miles, but through a Morass, which nothing but the Season of the Year, and particular Drowth of that Summer, could have rendered practicable to Men or Horses, and which was still impassable to any Wheel-Carriage. This obliged the *Irish* to dismount all their Cannon, and to lay them in hollow Timbers, in which they dragged them through the Mire with wonderful Difficulty, and such a Loss of Time, as proved fatal to them in the Issue. From the important Situation of this Place, upon the first Entrance of the Enemy into that Country in the Beginning of the Year, they had been obliged to make a painful Turn out of the direct Road, which lies through the Passes to the Left, over the Mountains of the *Roches* Country, which were then extremely difficult from the Woods and Bogs with which they were covered, and so to leave these Castles behind them in their Advance to the Siege of *Cork*; an Error, for which they suffered much, the Country being kept in Awe by the Garrisons of these Castles, and their Convoys continually taken and interrupted by Parties detached from them.

To correct this Error, they determined in this second Attempt to begin by taking in these Castles of Sir *Philip Perceval*, which had galled them to such a degree before. *Liscarroll* was then commanded by *Thomas Raymond*, one of the Seneschals of Part of Sir *Philip's* Estate, and garrisoned with a sufficient Body of Men, and provided with as good a Proportion of Ammunition and Provisions as the ruined and almost desperate Condition of that Province could then afford.

† THIS Place was situated in a fine and fertile Country, and strong both by Art and Nature.

IT was a Parallelogram, or oblong Square (if we may use the Expression) the Area of which, in the Clear,

---

\* Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond.

† Ibid.

Clear, was an hundred and twenty by two hundred and forty Feet\*.——The Walls were thirty Feet high, and of great Thickneſs, flanked by four round and two ſquare Towers, much taller than the reſt of the Building.——This Caſtle is ſaid to have been built by King *John*, when he firſt entered *Ireland*, and was in a manner impregnable before the Uſe of Cannon had ſo much changed the Art of War.——To add farther to its Strength†, Sir *Philip Perceval* had ſurrounded the whole by a ſtrong Covered-Way, well flanked and pallifadoed, according to the modern-ſtile of Fortification. Before the great Gate of the Caſtle he erected a Ravelin, and on the oppoſite Side caſt up a very ſtrong Intrenchment, in the nature of a Crown-Work, which took up a large Extent of Ground, and preſerved the Cattle and Proviſions of the Garrifon; by all which it was rendered ſo defenſible, that the Lord *Inchequin*, General of the *Engliſh* in *Munſter*, in a Letter to Sir *Philip*, affirmed it to be the ſtrongeſt Place in that Province: And this was verified fully by the Defence it made, which was ſo vigorous, that, after the utmoſt Efforts of the Enemy's Army, it ſurrendered at laſt upon honourable Conditions, not till *Friday* the ſecond of *September*, having ſuſtained a Siege of thirteen Days with the utmoſt Bravery and Reſolution.

THE obſtinate Reſiſtance of this Place, which was but one of four Caſtles, in Prudence, to be taken before they advanced farther (and of theſe, that of *Anagh*, commanded by one *Fiſher*, another Steward of Sir *Philip Perceval*, was far more difficult to be attacked) diſconcerted wholly the Meaſures of the *Iriſh*, who thought the Number of their Troops and Terror of their Succeſſes, would have procured Admiſſion into every one of theſe upon the firſt Summons, and gave Time to the Lord *Inchequin* to call in all his Forces there

---

\* Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond.

† Ex Chart. Famil.

there, from the Scarcity of Provisions, dispersed into very distant Quarters, by which Means he was rendered capable to take the Field upon the same second of *September*, when, setting out from *Cotk* with a Body of near two thousand Foot and four hundred Horse, he came before the Castle of *Liscarroll* the next Morning; whereupon that famous Battle ensued, in which that Lord, with so great an Inequality of Force, totally defeated the Enemy; by which Victory the Province of *Munster* was tolerably freed from the Incursions of the *Irisb* for the Remainder of that Year, and the Castle of *Liscarroll* immediately recovered, and restored again into the Hands of its Owner, Sir *Philip Perceval*, under the Conduct of the same Officer who had defended it so well.

GREAT Part of the Supplies intended by the Parliament of *England* for the Relief of *Ireland*\*, being never employed, out of a Jealousy in the King; that they would be used against himself, and the rest diverted to the immediate fitting out of the Army under the Command of the Earl of *Essex*, who was appointed General of the Parliamentary Forces against the King, that Country was left a Prey to the worst Ravage of Rebellion; and neither Party in *England* having Time or Means to spare towards the Assistance of the Protestants in *Ireland*, the Confederate Catholicks had Leisure to settle a regular Plan of Government, which, in the first Hurry and Confusion, had been omitted, and without which it had been impossible for them to have proceeded to any great Effect.

THE Deputies of every Province in *Ireland*\* assembling the twenty-fourth of *October*, 1642, at the City of *Kilkenny*, having first agreed to a Declaration, that they did not assume the Authority of Parliament, and that they acted only as a Parliament during the present Confusion, formed themselves upon the Parliamentary Model, assuming only the moderate Title of the *General Assembly*, the Bishops and the Nobility sit-

\* Carte ut supra.

† Ibid.

ting together, and the Commons by themselves, though in one great Room, the inferior Clergy forming a House of Convocation in another Part of the Town.

THE Proceedings of the *Convocation*\*, as they called it, growing violent and furious, and claiming a Restitution of the Church-Lands and Privileges of their Order, which affected as well the Properties and Liberties of the *Roman Catholics*, as of the Protestants, fell quickly into great Contempt.— But the *General Assembly* proceeding upon wiser and more prudent Grounds, first declared the *Magna Charta*, and the Statute and Common Law of *England*, so far as it did not extend to destroy the *Roman Catholic Religion* and the Independency of *Ireland*, to be the Basis of their Constitution. They then appointed a *Judicature* for each County, composed of a Deputy, or two, from each Barony, requiring the *Sheriff* to be chosen out of three Persons nominated by these County Councils respectively, and confirmed by a Council of Twenty-four, which was called the *Supreme Council*. This Council of Twenty-four was to be chosen by the *General Assembly*, and was authorized to transact the current Business of the State, to receive and determine Appeals from all other Courts, and to direct all Military as well as Civil Powers; *twelve* of these to be always resident at the Helm of the Government, with equal Voices; *two Thirds* to conclude the rest; never less than *nine* to make a *Quorum*, and of the nine, *seven* to be a legal Majority; with a President, chosen by the *General Assembly* out of the *Supreme Council*, to be resident with that Council; and, in case of Absence, Sickness, &c. the Majority to chuse a Vice President out of their own Body: This Council to be confirmed, or a new Election of them to be made, upon the meeting of every General Assembly, which was to be annually chosen, and convened.

HAVING formed this provisionary Settlement, they determined that no Suits should be commenced for Lands which had been quietly possessed for three Years before these Troubles, and provided against the

Mis-

---

\* Carte's History, ut supra.

Mischiefs of any Distinctions or Comparisons between the ancient and modern *Irish*, or new *English*, all whom they wisely endeavoured to unite, by imposing severe Penalties on those who should promote these invidious Distinctions. After which, they proceeded to appoint their Generals; *Preston* for *Leinster*, *Garrett Barry* for *Munster*, *John Bourke* for *Connaught*, and *Owen O Neil* for *Ulster*.

THE *Supreme Council* entered upon the Exercise of their Authority about the latter End of *November*, 1642, when the *General Assembly* broke up; and it must be said, to the Honour of the Chiefs of the Confederacy at that Time, however odious the first Actions of this Party were, that, from the Period of this Regulation of their Government, they behaved with as much Moderation and Justice as any People under such Circumstances are found in the Histories of any Time to have done; and more, in the Methods of a War carried on between different Nations, than with that bloody and merciless Rage which generally attends all Civil Contention, especially where Religious Differences inflame the Quarrel.

THE faithless Proceedings into which some of the same Party fell afterwards, in the Course of the War, are not to be ascribed to them, but to a factious and bigotted Clergy, who, under the wild and rash Direction of the Pope's Nuncio, did afterwards destroy this Settlement which the Leaders of that Time had wisely made; and, to the extreme Discontent of all the reasonable and leading Men, subverted these prudent Provisions, and frustrated that Peace which the others had established, in such a Manner, and at such a Juncture, that they had, in all Probability, obtained a permanent Settlement of their Religion, if the Perfidy and furious Driving of that ambitious Set of Men, who aimed at engrossing the whole Government of that Kingdom, and at recovering all the old Revenues of the Church, had not involved that Kingdom again in a new War; confounded all the moderate Councils, both of their own Party and of those they fought against;



necessitated the Marquis of *Ormond* to throw the Government into the Hands of the Parliament of *England*, to which he was, in his Nature, utterly averse; and brought on those severe Scourges upon their Party and their Country, which drove them into universal Beggary and Ruin, and reduced them, within a little, of being cut off from the Face of the Earth, and of being no longer found a Nation.

SIR *Philip Perceval*\*, having left his Lady and Family in *London*, continued labouring in the painful Exercise of his new Employment; in which, assured partly by the Votes of the House of Commons in *England*, who appropriated several thousand Pounds to him, and farther confirmed, by the Honour and Interest he had in supporting the State to the utmost of his Power, he involved himself into prodigious Debts upon the Publick Account. The Parliament continuing still to vote him Payments in considerable Sums, but never bringing those Votes into Execution, or furnishing any material Supply, nor even paying any of his Appointments, not so much as the Sum of two hundred Pounds, which they voted towards the immediate Support of his Wife in *London* †, out of the Money due to him for the bare Salary of his Post, of which he never received one Farthing.

He remained, however, constantly with the Earl of *Ormond*, then General of the Forces, with whom he continued in the most intimate Friendship; as a Proof of which, that Lord, being taken extremely ill, he entrusted Sir *Philip Perceval* to write, as he imagined, his last Requests to the King ‡, and also appointed him *Executor* of the Will which he then made. And this Regard might have reasonably been expected from the *Earl*; for, besides the former Services we have mentioned even in the Heat of these Calamities, Sir *Philip* had most readily supplied him with many thousand Pounds,

at

\* Family Collections, ut supra.

† Representation of Sir Philip Perceval to the English House of Commons, penes Comit. de Egnont.

‡ Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond, Vol. I. fol. 365.

at a Juncture when the Earl could neither raise any Money on his own Estate, nor borrow any considerable Sum from any other Person.

IT is not necessary for us to pursue the Train of those Transactions which happened during the Remainder of this Year, 1642. No, very extraordinary Events occur, but the same wretched Scene of Distress overspread the Country; and all that is to be admired, during this Period, is, that it was possible for the *English* Forces to maintain themselves against the *Irish*, who were in want of nothing, being secretly supplied, as we have shewn, with Arms and Ammunition, both from Cardinal *Richlieu*, then first Minister of *France*, and from the zealous Contributions of the *Roman* Catholics abroad, particularly out of *Italy*, where the Pope (who was very assistant to them,) publish'd a Bull to warrant and justify the most violent Measures of their Party. In the mean time the *English* Army, totally deserted by the King, and, in a manner, unassisted by the Parliament, were reduced to the utmost Extremity of Want, being half naked, and never certain of Subsistence for one whole Month together.—— During these Extremities, it is easy to judge the terrible Condition of Sir *Philip Perceval*\*, upon whom the sole Labour lay to obviate these Distresses, as Commissary General of the Army; in which he performed his Part with so much Dexterity, that, by the general Voice of all the Officers and of the whole Army†, he was the only Instrument, under Heaven, of their Preservation: And this they certified in a solemn Manner to the Parliament of *England* in 1645.

THIS Concurrence of so many Opinions, and this wonderful Popularity with such a Set of Men, under Necessities so pressing, carry with them much higher  
Proofs

---

\* Vide Family Collections, ut supra.

† Certificates and Evidences of the Earl of Inchequin, Sir Thomas Wharton, Knight of the Bath, Sir John Giffard, &c. in favour of Sir Philip Perceval, delivered to Parliament 1645.

Proofs of his Integrity and great Abilities than any Pen can express. Armies are naturally jealous of those who preside in Posts of this nature, and are ever ready to attribute even the necessary Hardships they endure to the Corruption or Negligence of Officers, who are employed to discharge any Trust in which Money is concerned.—But, to the eternal Glory of Sir *Philip Perceval*, this Army acknowledged his publick Virtue in the strongest Terms of Gratitude; and, even after he quitted this unhappy Post, such was their Dependence on him, that they devolved the whole Direction of their Interests upon him in the *English* Parliament, as we shall shew in its due Place.

THESE Evidences of his admirable Conduct in this Station, need no further Corroboration; and yet there was a wretched Author, who had the Impudence to arraign his Behaviour, even in this Particular, though he did not dare to use his Name, and reflected upon him (speaking of the Management of the *Irish* Affairs in the Committee appointed for that Business, which sat in the Star-Chamber in *England* in 1645,) in these Words.—“ That few in that Committee understood the Business of *Ireland* besides two Gentlemen, (meaning Sir *John Clotworthy*, (afterwards Viscount *Maffareene*) and Sir *Philip Perceval*) “ whose Interest leading  
“ them to several Provinces, much injured the equal  
“ Management of the whole, and he (*viz.* Sir *Philip*)  
“ to whom the Provisions were entrusted, ordered them  
“ at that rate, as that the Complaint was great.”—  
The Malice of the Man was very apparent, and equally ridiculous in this Suggestion, for the Army was in a manner supported by Sir *Philip*'s private Purse, he having spent above two thousand Pounds in the Discharge of that Trust, and contracted a Debt of above eleven thousand Pounds for the same Service, which the Parliament had never answered. Moreover, they had never paid him one Farthing of the Appointments of his Place, which were swelled to a large Sum, and his Accompts were, in *Terrorum*, kept unpassed, to the Amount of  
above

above eighty thousand Pounds, to oblige him to continue his Employment ; which, though he laboured to be acquitted of, finding (as he says in his own Representation to the House of Commons some Years after) *that he should be ruined by it*, yet he could not obtain that Favour, *merely because of the great Services he did the Army, which no body else either could or would have undertaken to have served in that Juncture.*—— But this Author, as on many Accounts he deserves but little Credit, so in this Particular he deserves none ; his apparent, Partiality to the Lord *Lisle*, and his Tool Sir *John Temple* (the inveterate Enemies of Sir *Philip Perceval*) being the sole Occasion of these absurd Reflections.

It was by the Endeavours of this Cabal, and their Adherents, that Sir *Philip Perceval* was thus severely treated by the Parliament of *England*. We have already shewn the Reason of the Lord *Lisle's* Resentment, which took its Rise from that trivial Victory which he obtained over the Earl of *Leicester*, the Lord *Lisle's* Father, in the Affair of the Commission for the Company of Firelocks before-mentioned, and was aggravated afterwards by Sir *Philip's* Opposition to him during his Lieutenancy in *Ireland*, and by their Difference in Principle as to public Affairs. Sir *John Temple's* Rage was grounded upon other Motives\* : He had enjoyed in the Beginning of the War the Post of Commissary General of the Army, of which he made an exorbitant Profit, till the King thought fit to dismiss him, and the Parliament placed Sir *Philip* in his Room.——The Difference of their Conduct in this important Charge was apparent to all the World, and brought as much Glory and Applause to the one, as it reflected Scandal and Disgrace upon the other. Another Cause arose soon after to heighten and aggravate this Subject of Uneasiness, Sir *John Temple* had, by his Attachment to Sir *William Parsons* and the other Lord Justice, obtained (among other Favours  
shewn

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. I. fol. 400.

shewn to their Creatures) a *Custodium* of the Mills and Fishery of *Kilmainham*. \* These *Custodiams*, generally granted under a Pretence of providing for the Necessities of the Officers and Soldiers, when the State was unable to afford them a regular Pay, were a very great Abuse: They were Portions of the Enemies Lands allotted to particular Men to draw their Subsistence from; but it was soon found, that they were looked upon in another Light, and the Service grew strangely neglected, the Army being taken up in the Improvement of these Lands, which they considered as their own Estates, and were consequently brought with Difficulty into the Field when the Publick Service called them. This is sufficient, as to these *Custodiams* in general; but in particular, as to that which Sir *John Temple* had obtained, it was of notorious Prejudice to the State; for, all the Corn for the Use of the Army being ground at those Mills which he had thus obtained, and he receiving the sixteenth Part for Toll to his own Use, it is evident that he put into his own Pocket, once in sixteen Days, the full Value of what would supply the Army for a Day.—This scandalous Advantage, made by a private Person in a Time of so much public Indigence, was intolerable, and gave the Army so much Discontent, that it was much feared some terrible Consequences would have followed from it. Sir *Philip Perceval*, now fixed in the Employment of Commissary General of the Army, and Provadore General of the Horse, having a full View of this enormous Abuse, could not in Duty permit the Continuance of it. He was sensible of the Odium he should draw upon himself from many Persons then in Power, by endeavouring to oppose this Grievance; but he had Virtue and Courage adequate to any Undertaking, and he accordingly made a Representation of this Affair to the Lords Justices, who being more interested in the Support of these Practices than concerned for the Publick Good, refused to remedy the Evil they had themselves created.

SIR

---

\* Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond.

SIR *Philip Perceval* was not a Man easily deterred from any Pursuit, which he thought himself in Honour obliged to undertake, he persisted therefore in his Resolution to deprive Sir *John Temple* of that unwarrantable Perquisite, and accordingly referred the Case to the King in *England*. The King still retained in *Ireland* the Power of disposing of Preferments, the Quarrel not being upon the same Footing there as it was in *England*, and no Party being yet formed either in his Favour, or in that of the Parliament, the Protestant Part of the Nation being hitherto sufficiently embarrassed to maintain themselves against the *Roman Catholics* alone, without engaging in any new Disputes.—Private Men, therefore, however inclined in Principle, preferred their Suits to the King, without incurring any Resentment for that Conduct from the *English* Parliament, Things being still permitted to run in their usual Course in that Kingdom. Sir *John Temple*, though a violent Man of that Party, and linked in private Engagements with the Lord *Lisle* and Sir *William Parsons*, both Independents, had yet made no Scruple to apply for the Confirmation of this *Custodium* to the King himself, and had at first obtained it\*.——But, upon this Information from Sir *Philip Perceval*, his Majesty resumed his Grant with great Indignation; and, being further made acquainted with his Practices, to model the Army, and to draw the Management of Affairs there into the Hands of the Parliament, in Concurrence with the Lord Justice, Sir *William Parsons*, and several of the Privy Council, he sent over an Order to secure the Persons of Sir *John Temple*, Sir *William Parsons*, Sir *Adam Loftus*, and Sir *Robert Meredith*, who were accused upon several Articles of High Crimes and Misdemeanors in that Kingdom.——But the Time not serving then for the Exercise of any great Severity on the King's Part, with relation to such Matters in *Ireland*, the Prosecution was carried no further;

---

\* Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond.

ther; and those Gentlemen being discharged some time after, Sir *John Temple* retired to *England*, where, being considered as a Sufferer for the Republican Cause, he was well received, and had a Seat in Parliament soon after provided for him.— We shall leave him there for some time, endeavouring, by all the worst and most malicious Arts, to revenge himself upon Sir *Philip Perceval*, who had wounded both his Interest and Reputation in so deep a Manner; the first, in having deprived him of this *Custodium* in the Way we have shewn; the latter, in having obtained the same *Custodium* himself\*, and in rejecting absolutely at the same time all manner of Profit from it, delivering out the whole Quantity of Corn, which was brought in to be ground at the Mills before-mentioned, to the Use of the Army, not even deducting the Charge of the Labourers employed in the Grinding, or the necessary Expences incident to the Reparation of them; all which was very considerable, and a generous and voluntary Contribution to the Public Service, among many other great Disbursements, which he so largely made to the same disinterested Purpose.— The Issue of these Endeavours of Sir *John Temple* will have their Place hereafter in this Work. But we now turn ourselves to a very important Point in the History of that Time, which is the Affair of the Cessation concluded between the *English* and *Irish* in the Year 1643, which requires our Attention in a more particular Manner, as Sir *Philip Perceval* was much concerned, and suffered very severely for his Share in that Transaction.

To understand thoroughly the Grounds of this Measure, we must consider a little the Condition of the Parties in *Ireland* at that Juncture; — the *Presbyterian* Interest in the North; the Church of *England* Interest every where else, though divided into Parties different as to their Inclinations with respect to the contending Powers, still worked together, without any  
 apparent

---

\* Family Collections.

apparent Breach among themselves against their Common Enemy the *Papists*, in the Management of the War, till the Beginning of the Year 1643; yet, during that whole Time, both the King and the Parliament had respectively endeavoured to propagate their Principles, and to engage the *Irish* Officers and Army in their Interests.—Neither Party, at the same time, contributed any thing considerable to the Support of these Armies; as an Instance of which, we may mention here what Sir *Philip Perceval* advances himself to the House of Commons, in his famous Representation\*, That the Army in *Munster*, which consisted of Seven thousand Men, had received both in Provisions and in Money, from the Beginning of the War to *September* 1643, no more than the Value of Twenty-three thousand Pounds. The Reason of this Neglect on either Side was this, both the King and Parliament believed the Attempts of the Rebels less important than they were, and thought whenever the domestic Broils should cease, and the whole Force of *England* should be re-united, that the *Irish* must be certainly subdued, however great their present Advantages might be;—and both were so hardly pressed by each other, that they could not afford any material Supplies, without weakening themselves in *England*. The Parliament, indeed, faintly strove to maintain the War (which they had no Leisure at that time to terminate;) but chiefly upon account that they saw, upon a Conclusion of it, the King would draw over great Supplies from thence, particularly from the *Roman Catholic* Party, which, for many Reasons formerly given, were less inveterate to the Royal Cause than to the other: They all perceived plainly, that the Protestant Armies would likewise afford a considerable Body of Men upon such an Event in Favour of the same Party. The Earl of *Ormond*, Commander of the *Leinster* Ar-

---

\* Representation of Sir Philip Perceval to the House of Commons in England, ut supra.



my, was wholly devoted to the King, and had diffused the same Sentiments among the Troops under his Command.—The Lord *Inchequin* had an Army in *Munster*, composed of different Complexions, and very hardly to be determined upon how far they would adhere to the other Cause; as was their General himself, who was little known in *England*, being an *Irish* Nobleman of *Irish* Extraction, but thought to be ambitious, and therefore likely to be moved by these Advantages of Honour and Preferment, which were Matters more in the Disposal of the Crown than of themselves.—The little Body of Troops in the Province of *Connaught*, together with the Influence of the Earl of *Clanrickard* there (he being of the *Romish* Religion, though a moderate Man) were judged to be dedicated to the Cause of the Crown; and even the *Ulster* Army, under the Command of General *Monroe*, composed chiefly of the *Scotish Irish*, had a Mixture in it of another Leaven so strong, that they could not entirely rely upon their Assistance in the Case of a Conclusion of these Troubles. They likewise knew enough of the Nature of military Men, to be very sure, that in troubled Times, and as long as any Action subsisted in any Parts of these Dominions, if the *Irish* Armies should be disbanded upon a Conclusion of their Work in that Kingdom, they would inevitably concern themselves again in the Disorders still left undetermined on the *English* Side. And thus we see that the Parliament could not well avoid a Neglect of that Country; nor were they perhaps so criminal in this Omission, since the Event did plainly discover, that any Efforts they might have made to quiet that Rebellion, would have turned out less to the Protestant Advantage, than to the private Profit of the King and the Party engaged with him.

THE King, on the other hand, surrounded by a Crowd of Papists, who were well received at Court on the Queen's Account, seemed to be much less animated against the Authors of these Disorders than could have been expected of him.

WE have already shewn how far they had reconciled themselves to that Party by a common Detestation and Apprehension of the other, and how that strange Conjunction came to be effected between the Church of *England* and the Professors of their Religion. There were even some of the *Irish* in near Posts about the Persons of the Royal Family, who, being Men of great Cunning, and possessed of all the subtle Arts of Insinuation, in which that People, with a proper Education, are inferior to no other, had continually inculcated the good Intentions of their Countrymen, and their Ability to serve the King at this Juncture; a Circumstance, which qualified their Business to receive the best Varnish they could put upon it. And such was the Effect of the continual Industry of these People, that they, by insensible Degrees and imperceptible Measures, such as usually work the great Changes in all Courts, quickly made an Impression upon the King's Mind, not a little favourable to that Party, the Leaders of which were wise enough to improve this Disposition in the King, so fortunate to them, by many Offers of Submission, and Professions of Attachment to his Person and Government, which they most earnestly desired to manifest in a full and general Assistance of his Majesty to recover his just Rights and Flowers of the Crown, provided only (as they said) that there might be a Treaty concluded upon such Terms, as might not violate their Consciences in the Matter of their Religion (which they pretended had been resolved to be totally extirpated;)—that they might be protected against the chief Governors of that Kingdom, who had lately ruled them with an Iron Rod;—and lastly, that their Liberties might be secured, by an Independence upon the *English* Parliament, which, they said, had lately assumed an unusual Power, by interfering with the Legislative Business of that Kingdom.

THE Parliament could not be long ignorant of this Tendency in the King to treat with the *Irish* Rebels, and could not be much longer dubious what the Issue

of any Treaty with them might prove.—— They dreaded, as we have already observed, the Leisure of so many Armies, and they consequently prepared to defend against the Event, by alarming the Publick, by appealing to the *English* Nation upon it, and by setting forth the dismal Consequences of the Introduction of an Enemy so formidable, on account not only of their Religion, but of those deadly Feuds which had been fermented more than ever of late Years, by the severe Treatment of that People. By this Conduct, they proposed either to deter the King from taking a Measure so unpopular, or, if he should take it, to animate and inflame the Public as much as possible to assist them against this Addition to his Power.—— To all this they added shrewd Reflections upon the Terms which they supposed the King would grant that People for their Assistance, with respect to their Religion.—— Whether they had this from an Intelligence of the King's Intentions, or whether their own Sagacity prompted them to these Conclusions, from the perfect Knowledge of the Temper of the Court, and the Distress of the King concurring with the Successes of the *Irish*, which must naturally induce them to expect high Terms for their Assistance; be this as it will, they were very prophetic in all they advanced to the Publick, and they reaped so much Advantage from this Proceeding, that they obliged the King, with the strongest Professions of Horror and Detestation against that Party and Religion, to renounce, for the present, several Steps which he quickly after took, and to make the most solemn Affirmations, that his Conscience would never suffer him to consent to certain Points, to which, in no long Time after, he submitted in the most ample Manner, and to which he gave the Sanction of a public and formal Treaty.

It is evident enough, that the King had early entertained the Notion of bringing over the *Irish* to his Assistance against the Parliament; for the War between him and the two Houses commenced only in the Summer

mer 1642, and in the beginning of the very next Year 1643, he commissioned the Earl of *Ormond* \* to conclude a Cessation with the opposite Party, upon that Plan.—It appears also very plain, that the Earl of *Strafford* had formerly insinuated this Method, of restraining the Spirit of Liberty which appeared in *England*, before his Impeachment, and the breaking out of the Rebellion.—And one of the Crimes for which he suffered Death, was his Endeavour to make the King absolute in *England*, by the Means of Force out of the other Kingdom; a Scheme too obvious not to occur to any violent Minister, or arbitrary Prince, so long as the Imprudence of the English will engage them to persevere in those Methods of Hardship and Oppression, and Denial of the same common Constitution and Liberty to that Country, in which they have hitherto injudiciously persisted. Nations thus refused the common Benefits of Nature, and the more exasperated at the Want of them, by seeing the Enjoyment of them so perfect, and so advantageous, in a neighbouring Country, must be easily drawn to support the Endeavours of any Prince to enslave the People by whom they are themselves enslaved; and Time will inevitably bring on Conjunctions, when their Assistance will be sought, and when Men of Figure in such Countries will have Sense enough to perceive themselves, and Address enough to convince the Publick, that they should gratify their Interest, as well as Revenge, by concurring in such Measures.

THERE is no wonder, therefore, that the King should be now Master of so plain a Lesson, first taught him by so able an Instructor, and brought more frequently into his Thoughts by the Condition he was then in. His Majesty having well received the Agents sent over by the *Roman Catholics*, viz. the Lords *Costello* and *Taaf*, whom he protected from the Violence of the Parliament, by whom they had been imprisoned in way to the King, and from whom they had made their

---

\* Vide Carte's History, ut supra.

their Escape; and these Lords having behaved very handsomely in several Actions during their Stay there, at length dismissed them, after such a Reception as he thought would give high Contentment to the *Irish* Confederates, though it drew severe Reflections upon himself from the Parliament of *England*.

HAVING thus prepared the Way, and created the Earl of *Ormond* a Marquis that he might appear with greater Credit.—— Upon the twenty-third of *April* following, 1643, the King first wrote to that Lord to enter into a Treaty with the *Irish*, and to conclude a Cessation of Arms with them for one Year, giving him no Restriction whatsoever, as to Religion, or any other Particular. This Latitude, together with the strict Injunction of Secrecy, and an Order at the same Time to send over the Protestant Army to the King's Assistance, was looked upon by the greatest Part of both Nations, to be a fatal Step to the Protestant Interest in general, and it was the more exploded, because upon the Commencement of the Rebellion, the King had solemnly engaged to both Houses of Parliament, that he would never conclude a Peace with the *Irish* Confederacy, without their Concurrence and Consent.—— And in the Opinion of all Men, who did not rather consider Words than Things, a Cessation for one whole Year, under all these Circumstances, was likely to have full as evil Consequences, and was doubtless as much comprehended under the original Intention of that Engagement, as any Peace could be.

THE Marquis of *Ormond*, though as much attached to the Court as any Man, and in truth so much that he incurred, for some Time, the Character of being dedicated to it in all Events, in order to advance himself by that Means, had yet so great a Stake, and so much Reputation to lose, being in no respect inferior to any Subject then in that Kingdom, that he did not care precipitately to enter into this Measure, which he knew would render him obnoxious to the Parliament, and to the whole *English* Nation, and which would probably prove his Ruin, if there should follow

follow a Miscarriage in the King's Affairs. As much, therefore, as he was disposed to an implicit Obedience to the King, he was not able to effect this Matter with any Prudence. The Hindrance to this Scheme was first, the Opposition of the Privy-Council and the Lords Justices in *Ireland*, who were not yet modelled to the Purpose, Sir *William Parsons* being still in the Government, with several others of the Parliament Party. In the next Place; the *Irish* themselves, elated by the prosperous Condition of these Affairs, and proud of the Favour shewn them particularly by the King, were scarcely manageable by the wisest of their Leaders, and valued themselves at such a Rate, that they were hardly to be treated with upon any Terms; to which their Clergy greatly contributed, being very sensible, that the Care to be taken of their particular Interests would not equal their Expectations, from the Continuance of the War. But the principal Difficulty sprung from the Zeal and Activity of Sir *Philip Perceval*, who obviated, in a most miraculous Manner, the immediate Distresses of the Army, beyond the Hopes of all Men, by a new and desperate Engagement of his Estate, to the Value of 10,000*l.* which yet remains unpaid by the Crown; by this Means he had taken away the present Plea of Distress, without which the Marquis could not venture upon a Treaty\*, nor could the King's Affairs possibly admit of that Step, since it would have totally alienated from him the Party of the Protestants, which adhered to him in *England*; a Loss no way to be repaired by the precarious Assistance he proposed to draw from thence.

THE King, however sensible of this Mischief, was yet so warmed with the Imagination of the Success of this Project, that he pressed the Conclusion of the Treaty with great Earnestness; and his Orders were so positive, that the Treaty, which had been interrupted

---

\* Representation of Sir Philip Perceval, ut supra,

† Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond.

ed by the Causes we have mentioned, was at length again renewed †, upon the twenty-sixth of *August* of the same Year. The King, to prevent all Obstructions to it, as far as in him lay, having now removed such of the Council as he knew were likely to oppose it, and recalled the Earl of *Leicester*, still Lord-Lieutenant, (who waited at *Chester* only for a Passage,) as knowing that Lord would never have concurred in this Measure, and that the Marquis of *Ormond's* Commission would have determined immediately upon the landing of the chief Governor.

THE Marquis of *Ormond*, who had been by his good Understanding so long deterred from taking this dangerous Step, without the utmost Precautions, having now the Council modelled in such a manner as to approve the Transaction, and having received a Commission for that Purpose under the Great Seal upon the thirty-first of *August*, proceeded in good earnest in that Work. — He had waited till the Distress of the Army was greater than it had ever been; and he artfully proposed to the City of *Dublin*, either to accept the Cessation, or to furnish 10,000*l.* without which he said the Army could not possibly subsist; well knowing, that he should receive a Refusal of that Contribution, which they were no longer in any Condition to raise, and consequently, obtain thereby a farther Justification of this Proceeding. — He contrived also, that several of the principal Officers, and Men of first Consideration in the Kingdom, should be commanded to attend the Treaty, that he might receive the greater Countenance, and that he might not bear the Load of that important Affair alone.

SIR *Philip Perceval* \*, who was a ministerial Officer, and was positively commanded by the Lords Justices and Council to assist the Marquis in this Treaty, did his utmost to avoid it, and even repented the Marquis's Endeavours to bring him thither, in such a manner, as caused a Coolness between them for a long Time

---

\* Family Collections, ut supra,

Time after. He was very sensible of the Danger he incurred in this critical Negotiation, and laboured, to the utmost of his Power, at least to be dismissed his Charge, and to have his Accounts passed, (which amounted, as we have occasionally observed in another Place, to above eighty thousand Pounds) before he entered upon it; prudently judging, that he might be otherwise exposed to utter Ruin, if the Parliament should take Offence at him for his Engagement in the Treaty. A Foresight which fell little short of the Truth, as will appear hereafter. He urged all this in vain, and his Requests were denied him; nay, such was the unwarrantable Zeal of the Ministers on that Side, to forward this Transaction, that he was threatened, that these Accompts should be disputed to his Destruction, if he did not actively concur to bring it to Effect.

THESE Threats and Dangers did not \*, however, deter him from opposing the Demands of the *Irish* Commissioners to the utmost of his Power, both by Writing and Speaking, in such a manner, that the Terms were rendered much the better in that Treaty by his Endeavours, than they would otherwise have been, though he had not Influence sufficient to prevent the Conclusion of it, nor was he, indeed, absolutely against any Treaty, the Affairs of the Protestant Side being extremely desperate; but finding this Method of treating likely to be very pernicious, he would not give his Assent to it; and the Cessation was accordingly concluded without his Concurrence.

THE Articles were no sooner signed, than he desired to be quit of his Employment, which he at length obtained, and passed Part of his Accounts, to the Amount of fifty thousand Pounds: yet he was obliged, in order to get his Business executed, to sign a Paper, with many other Persons of Distinction, importing an Approbation of this Step, and a Justification of it, drawn

H h 2

from

---

\* Evidence of Sir Thomas Wharton, and the Earl of Inchequin, penes Comit. Egmont.



from the Necessities of the State: which Paper, though it implied an Approbation of the Articles before the Treaty was concluded, was, notwithstanding, never signed by him till the Treaty was actually compleated, and then, (as he afterwards acquainted the Parliament in *England*, before whom he was accused for having signed that Paper) he thought he had done no Crime in that nominal Concurrence, without which he absolutely affirmed, he could not have lived there, and without which he had been utterly ruined.

SIR *Philip Perceval* made no Scruple to own every where the Compulsion that had been put upon him, and to expose the Folly of this Measure; but he was much shocked to find, that the Cessation (which, as much as he disliked it, he never thought would have been improved to that Purpose) was now actually confessed to be the Foundation for an absolute Peace, to conclude which, the principal Men of the Confederates were preparing, by his Majesty's Consent, to go to *Oxford*, where he then lay.——It was not from any inveterate Hatred to the confederate Catholics; among whom he had many personal Friendships, and particularly with the Lord *Muskerry* and General *Barry*, but it was from an Apprehension, that the Necessities of the King's Affairs, and the Solicitations of those about him, who favoured that Party, concurring with his Majesty's little Acquaintance with the Constitution or State of *Ireland*, would lead him into such Concessions as would prove absolutely ruinous to the Protestant; and to the *English* Interest in that Kingdom.——

Without being a Favourer of the Parliament, he had so much public Spirit, that he dreaded the Consequence of the Introduction of the full Force of the *Irish*, as well as the *English* Troops, employed against him, in the King's Service, on the other Side; which would have inevitably, in his Opinion, overthrown the Constitution, and destroyed the Liberties of *England* to all Eternity: He was the more alarmed likewise, as were all others, (even indifferent Men) to find that the King had been so imprudent, as to commission the

Earl

Earl of Antrim to raise for his Service 10,000 Men of the *Ulster Irish*, who had begun the Rebellion, and had been guilty of almost all the shocking Barbarities, which reflected so much Odium upon the whole Confederacy. The King had issued Commissions of the same Nature to the Lord *Taafe*, and other considerable Leaders of that Religion; all which were so contrary to the Professions he had formerly made, that it did him a mighty Injury in *England*. And indeed, it grew plain enough, that the Case was, (as Lord *Digby*, the King's principal Secretary about that Time \*, wrote to the Marquis of *Ormond*) "*he had given over all*" "*Regard to what the opposite Party should say or think*" "*of his Measures.*" At this Time likewise all manner of Care was taken to oppose the *Irish* to the *Scottish* and Protestant Army in the North, who would not submit to the Cessation; and the same Lord charged the Marquis to leave a sufficient Number of that People to stop the Progress of that Army, which had already done considerable Service against the confederate Catholics, and had probably terminated the Rebellion there in a different manner, if they had not met with these Obstructions. It is strange to see what a Spirit reigned in the Court at this Time, and the Clergy were strongly infected with it, as may be seen in all their private Correspondencies. We have now a Letter before us, from the Archbishop of *York* to the Marquis of *Ormond*, dated from *Oxford*, the seventh of *March*, in this Year 1643, in which he says †, — "*If you could rid that Island of those venomous Men of the North, as Nature hath done it from venomous Beasts, you might live happily among yourselves, and be the most blessed Neighbours that ever this Kingdom had.*" And about the same Time §, Sir *Philip Perceval* received a Letter from the Bishop of *Raphoe*, dated from *Oxford* the twenty-third of *February*, 1643, wherein he treats those  
Northern

---

\* Carte's Appendix to the History of Ormond, — Letters.

† Ibid. Vol. III. Letter 243.

§ Family Collections, ut supra, Vol. IV. N<sup>o</sup> 394.

238 *A Genealogical History*

Northern *Irish* with the same Inveteracy, and even says in so many Words, *That he had rather be a Papist than a Presbyterian.* Let it ring, adds the Bishop, *through all Ireland, what is as clear as the Sun, that the Irish Nation must stand or fall with King Charles; all their Safety, under God, is their Adherence to their Sovereign, and all their Honour in their future Loyalty. A Protestant, or rather Catholic Christian I am, and Popery I know, but from this Gallimawfry of so many new Religions, good God deliver me.*

WE have already explained the Mystery of this strange Partiality to the former in this Class of Men; and we only mention these two Letters as corroborative of what we have before advanced upon this Subject.——For a meer Politician to consider Matters of this Sort with some Latitude, may admit of some Defence; but for two of the greatest Prelates of the Protestant Church, one of them to speak with that Inveteracy against the great Bulwark of the Protestant Religion, and to say, that if *Ireland* was wholly Papist, they would be the most blessed Neighbours that ever *England* had: the other, to prefer the Popish Religion, which differs so fundamentally in Matters of Faith from their Profession, to the Presbyterian Opinion, which was only somewhat more rigid in Discipline, and less formal in Ceremony, discovers something of the Temper of the Church at that Time, which is perhaps more prudent to be observed, than to be farther enlarged upon.

SIR *Philip Perceval* was no Bigot in Religion, no Slave in his Politics, no Republican in his Principles: he wished well to the Protestant Religion, both because he thought it more consistent with Reason, and because the Clergy derived less political Influence from it over the Minds of the People.——He adhered to the King, because he was the legal Magistrate of his Country; and he kept at great Distance from the Parliament, because he doubted whether they had it not in view to change the Constitution, which he thought a Work of Difficulty, and great Hazard.——In this Method

Method he steered, with universal Reputation, till the Time of this Cessation, when his Eyes were more opened, and he was forced to see, what he was unwilling to see before.

BUT now he began to alarm his Friends and Relations, and to use his utmost Interest to oblige the Government to the Allowance of having Agents deputed also on the Protestant Side to the King, to oppose those who were already appointed for the Catholics. This was a Circumstance which gave much Trouble to the Court, as they were sensible how great an Obstruction it would prove to the Conclusions they intended to draw with the confederate *Irish* alone: they foresaw that it would be impossible to make the same Concessions to them, if these Commissioners from the Protestants appeared at the Treaty, because they would fully lay open all the Dangers and Inconveniencies to which, without their Presence, the Court might have pleaded Ignorance, and Want of Information, after the Treaty was once concluded, and the Business past a Remedy.——But the Thing was in itself so reasonable, that it was impossible to refuse it.——It is to be believed, that the Marquis of *Ormond* was himself very uneasy at this extraordinary Countenance then shewn to the *Irish* Party, though he was so far embarked with the Crown, and so involved in Difficulties, that he could not openly discover his Concern, and was obliged to concur in it; for it is certain, that after *the King himself had nominated Sir Philip Perceval to be one of those Commissioners\**, the Marquis was so far from obstructing that Choice, that he gave it the utmost Applause, and endeavoured to strengthen his Credit in that Employment to the utmost of his Power, though no Man living was better acquainted with his real Principles than himself.

THE Commissioners of neither Party being ordered to attend his Majesty till the Spring following, we shall have Leisure to speak of the Consequences of the Cessation, during that Interval.

THIS

---

\* Carte's History of Ormond, Vol. III. Appendix, 1644.

THIS Treaty had been concluded without the Satisfaction of either Party, the *English*, and the Protestant *Irish*, considered it as a Breach of the King's Faith with the Parliament, and as a Ruin of the Adventurers, who, upon the Act passed in *England* to engage their Subscriptions, had been invited by Assurances of Satisfaction out of the Lands to be forfeited by the *Irish*, which the King had taken no Care of in this Treaty, all being left to them which was in their Possession at the actual Conclusion of it. It was likewise considered as utterly ruinous to the Protestants of *Ireland*, who knowing that the principal Intention of it was to draw over the Forces of their Party to the King's Assistance, perceived that they should now be left wholly to the Mercy of their Enemy, against whom they had no Security or Defence, but what should arise from their Truth and Faith, upon which they seemed to have but a very slender Dependance. In general, the whole Nation entertained very desperate Apprehensions of the Consequence of this Measure; and most Men thought it better to have struggled in the Continuance of the War through all their Difficulties, than to have thus compounded with the *Irish*, who were left in quiet Possession of near three Fourths of the whole Country by this Agreement, and obtained Leisure to strengthen themselves from abroad, and to settle their Affairs among themselves, in a better manner than they could ever have done without it. — They said, that the King might at least have afforded, on his Part, as the Parliament had done on theirs, some little Assistance, which, had it been never so inconsiderable, would still have enabled them to have stood their Ground; and that their Distresses were purely created to serve as a Justification of, and to induce a Necessity for this Measure: in which they appeared to have some Reason, from the Supplies which they received, in a pretty good Proportion, as soon as the Treaty was concluded, in order to enable the Troops to go over to the King.

On the other hand, the confederate *Irish* in general, and their Clergy in particular, were equally violent against it; *the latter*, because there was not so total and ample a Provision for their joint Interest, as they had flattered themselves to expect; *the former*, from a general View of their Affairs, which carried, doubtless, a better, and more promising Aspect, than they had ever borne before. The Vulgar, who judge superficially of things, considered little farther than their present Condition. — They found the *English* weak, divided, and unprovided of all Necessaries, penned up in a narrow Corner in *Munster*, confined almost to one City in *Leinster*, themselves, in a manner, Masters of *Connaught*, and able enough, with a small Part of their Force, to make Head against the Army in *Ulster*, under the Command of General *Monroe*. All this created Discontents among them, and even some Distrust of their Commanders. — But their leading Men, the Lords *Mounigarret*, *Taaf*, *Muskerry*, *Dillon*, and *Castlehaven*, &c. had both their public and their private Reasons, which indisputably engaged them to enter upon this Treaty. As to the Public, they had Sense enough to know, (though the People had not) that the Disparity was such between the Force of the *English* Nation, and their own, and that Force so firmly united, both in Principle and Interest, against them, that nothing could prevent their Ruin, if they did not make their Peace before the Conclusion of the Troubles in *England*. — They well understood their singular good Fortune in the present favourable Disposition of the King to them, who was more propitious, both to their Cause and Nation, than any of his Predecessors had ever been, or would probably ever be again. They saw his Affairs reduced to that Degree, that they absolutely required all the Assistance they could give him, and they foresaw their own Destruction in the Victory of the Parliament; they thought by so meritorious a Service at this Juncture, to secure the Prince for ever to their Interest, and to engage him both in Gratitude and Honour, at least to con-

firm the Concessions they had extorted from him, if not to grant them every thing they should afterwards desire. — On the other hand, they saw that by persevering in the Rebellion, and by refusing to comply with those Overtures the King had made, they would exasperate him against them, in an equal Degree with the other Party : and that they should thus be sure to unite all Interests against them on the other Side, the Weight of which they were sensible that they should certainly feel, upon a Conclusion of the Civil War in *England* (whosoever prevailed) and against which they rightly concluded, that their most prosperous Success in the Continuance of that War, could never protect them. — As to their private Interests, they were most of them well known to the King himself, and had received personal Civilities from him, during his Expectation of this Service, and they thought that they could not fail of great and particular Advantages to themselves, by so eminent an Undertaking for him, at such a Conjunction.

THE Interest of these Lords was sufficient to carry their Point so far, that the Treaty was concluded, as we have shewn, yet it was not in their Power to enforce a strict Obedience ever after upon that wilful People, who, inflamed by hot and ignorant Spirits, poisoned by the Emulation and Jealousy of some of their Leaders, who found themselves too unknown, or too obscure, to receive so much Benefit from this Step as the Lords we have mentioned would have done ; and being finally corrupted by a bigotted Clergy, were incapable of attending to any of the solid Arguments, which were offered by these wiser Men. They meditated still upon that chimerical and impracticable Project, of engrossing all the Lands, and all the Power of the State, of being independant of the *English* Crown, and of establishing their Religion in all its Pomp and Pageantry ; a Religion, eminently ill calculated for a trading Country, for a poor Country, a Country that wants Inhabitants, or Liberty, and consequently very ruinous to that in particular of which we speak. —

The

The Number of Holidays enjoined by it, is a mighty Loss of precious Time in Manufacture ; their religious Houses create a Multitude of Drones, who live upon the Labour of others, and are neither useful in Generation, in Improvement, or in Defence of the State. Thus it becomes singularly prejudicial to their Country, which wants the Hands and united Hearts of all its People.—And its Consequences are still more fatal, in filling the Minds of Men with narrow Notions, which beget the same poor Tendency of Thinking in all Particulars, the very essential Requisite to enslave Mankind.

BUT it has long been the predominant Folly of the Roman Catholics of *Ireland*, to hope to maintain their Religion; a thing impossible, against so vast a Force as will ever be brought against them upon Contentions of that Nature.—The People of *Ireland* amount in the whole, at the utmost Computation, but to *two Millions*, of which *five hundred Thousand* hold a different Persuasion, who being possessed of all the Lands and Arms, Provisions of War, and Places of Defence, are more than able to support themselves against the remaining Number; and were they not alone able, would not fail to engage to their Assistance the whole *British* Nation, united in an opposite Persuasion, and well disposed, upon the least Pretences, to engage in any Service in that Kingdom, where their Countrymen have ever thriven so well.—They want nothing better than the Harvest of a new Rebellion, in which they could not fail, as they have formerly done, to reap immense Quantities of Land, at an inconsiderable Price. And were these Advantages of private Profit not to be considered, it cannot be supposed in Policy, that *England* would ever permit so fine and great a Country, a Neighbour so near, and so important in its Situation, to remain in the Possession of those of a Persuasion which everlastingly begets so severe an Enmity.—Another principal Absurdity in their Expectations, relates to their ancient Estates; many, nay perhaps all Nations, have suffered in this Particular,



at some Period or other, under the same Circumstances: the *Romans* seated Colonies in their Dependencies, and ravished from the People of those Countries the best of their Lands.—The *Goths* assumed to themselves the Possessions of the *Aborigines* in *Spain*; the *Franks* subdued the *Gauls*, and reduced that Nation into abject Beggary and Servitude; the *Saxons* treated the *Britons* with the same Severity; the *Normans*, in the latest Instance, came in upon the same *Saxons*, and made a Forfeiture, almost general, of the whole Nation, in their own Favour.—To pass by all the rest who acquiesced under this Hardship, the *English* prudently submitted to this Evil, which they could not remedy, they became speedily incorporated into one People with their Conquerors, and in less than one Century, enjoyed the same common Privileges, and were undistinguished from them. In like manner the *Irish* would have acted long since, if they had acted prudently; and they would be found the truest Patriots of that Party, who would endeavour, instead of keeping up these invidious Distinctions, which, both in Religion and Politics, they still so much maintain among them, to hasten an absolute Union with the *English*, to destroy the Remembrances of those Pretensions, which continually prompt them to hazard the Remainder, in hopes of recovering what is already lost, and by a sincere Coalition of all Interests, to obtain the common Benefit of the Laws, which would enable them by their Industry, their Alliances, and other Means of a like Nature, to recover more, in a secure and happy Way, both to themselves, and to the whole Country, in one Century, than it is morally possible for them to recover to all Eternity, by the Means of Violence, in any Conjunction whatsoever.

WHETHER these Reflections may now have any Weight with that People, we cannot say; but it is certain they had very little at that Period of which we write; for having (as we have already shewn) received the News of the Cessation with great Disgust, the common People were every where very unruly upon it,

coms

committing great Disorders, and violating the Articles in a very unjustifiable Manner in many Instances, and giving infinite Uneasiness to their principal Leaders, who laboured, to the utmost of their Power, to restrain their Madness.

AMONG those who were most injured by the Breach of these Articles, Sir *Philip Perceval* was one \* ; he had suffered sufficiently by the Conditions of the Treaty, which had left 2000 £ *per annum* of his Estate in the Possession of the other Party.— Some of whom having hid themselves in Bushes and Bogs all the Day upon which the Cessation was to take Effect, construed this to be a Possession of those Lands, and proceeded with an high Hand to take the Profits of them, as warranted by that Plea.— About the same Time, they surprized the Castles of *Ballingile*, *Ballinegrab*, *Templeconila*, *Ballimacow*, *Lisgriffin*, and *Breagogue*, all belonging to Sir *Philip Perceval*, and entered upon that large and fertile Tract of Country which is dependant on them ; they endeavoured also to gain the Castle of *Liscarrol*, bringing before the Gates a great Number of the Garrison, whom they had by Stratagem made Prisoners, there threatening to put them to Death, in the Sight of their Fellows, unless the Castle should be surrendered to them, which Barbarity while they were preparing to execute with great Solemnity, the Constable *Raymond* sallied out with his whole Force, and made so vigorous an Attack upon them, that he defeated that whole Body, relieved many of his Men, and took a Number of Prisoners, which he afterwards exchanged for those of his own Party, who still remained in the Hands of the Enemy.

UPON this Occasion Sir *Philip Perceval* made very vigorous Representations to the supreme Council at *Kilkenny* †, the Lord *Muskerry*, their General in *Munster*, and other leading Members of that Party, who treated him with great Civility and Respect, and issued repeated

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. IV. N<sup>o</sup> 429.

† Ibid.

246 *A Genealogical History*

repeated Orders to the proper Magistrates, to restore those Places, and to make Satisfaction for the great Ravages they had unjustly committed in those Parts. — The Marquis of *Ormond*, then Lord-Lieutenant, wrote in the highest Terms of this Violation of the Treaty, and Injustice, to the *Irish* Commanders, to quicken the Execution of their Orders. But such was the Licence of the Commons of this Time, that they despised all Commands of their then Superiors, nor could any Redress be had, till the Lord *Muskerry* (who had a great private Friendship and Esteem for Sir *Philip*, notwithstanding their Difference in Party) prevailed upon the Supreme Council to employ Lieutenant-General *Purcell*\*, with their own Troops, to re-establish Sir *Philip Perceval* in these Lands and Castles, which they at length effected, about the latter End of *March* of the same Year.

AND now the Time approaching when by his Majesty's Command, Sir *Philip Perceval* was appointed to take upon him the Part of a Commissioner at the Treaty to be held between the King, at *Oxford*, and the Deputies of the *Irish* Confederates. Sir *Philip* went over thither, and the Marquis of *Ormond* wrote a preparatory Letter relating to these Affairs †, upon the eighth of *March*, 1644, to the Lord *Digby*, then Secretary of State, in which he referred that Lord to be instructed in all that was necessary by Sir *Philip Perceval*, of whom he speaks in his manner, “ I most humbly and earnestly propose, that the Supplies for *Munster* be made good, according to the Proportion designed, those for this Place enlarged, as your Lordship shall find needful, upon Discourse with Sir *Philip Perceval* (who can best of any Man inform you of our Numbers and Wants) and that from that Side timely Care might be taken of, and plentiful Supplies sent to *Duncannon* Fort, which is at present much distressed by Want, and the most important  
“ Place

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. IV.

† Carte's History of Ormond, Appendix, N<sup>o</sup> 244.

“ Place to be surely kept that I know in this King-  
“ dom. And now that I have mentioned Sir *Philip*  
“ *Perceval*, I may not pass by him without a very par-  
“ ticular Recommendation, as of a Man exceedingly  
“ knowing in all the Affairs in this Kingdom that  
“ hath been before in the War, in the Treaty, and  
“ since the Cessation, extremely industrious to ad-  
“ vance the King’s Service, particularly, in providing  
“ with great Dexterity, Labour, and frequently, upon  
“ his own Credit, Provisions for the Men which at se-  
“ veral times were sent hence, who else could not go  
“ on so seasonably or well furnished. The only Thing  
“ I particularly move for him is, that if in this Voyage  
“ which he undertakes by his Majesty’s special Com-  
“ mands, he should die, or otherwise miscarry, he  
“ may be favourably dealt with in his Accompts,  
“ which are many and great.”

NOTWITHSTANDING this extraordinary Recom-  
mendation from the Person the King most trusted, and  
though his Majesty had himself made choice of him,  
yet it is evident some Jealousy was entertained of him  
on that Side; and it seems to have been rather the  
Opinion of the People of *Ireland*, and a Desire to  
act a popular Part with the Protestants there, than  
a Confidence in his entire Attachment to that Cause,  
which induced the King to distinguish him in this emi-  
nent Manner: For though the Lord *Digby*\*, in an-  
swer to the Marquis of *Ormond*’s Letter last mentioned  
upon the 29th of *March*, 1644, did assure him, *that*  
*particular Care should be had of Sir Philip Perceval*†,  
yet his Accompts were only in part confirmed, and no  
Security given or Means propounded for the Payment of  
the Balance due to him, which was settled by all the  
proper Offices before he left *Ireland*, and amounted  
to *Eighteen thousand and three Pounds thirteen Skil-*  
*lings and one Penny*; which Sum (with a much greater  
afterwards contracted) remains a Debt from the Crown  
to his Posterity to this Day‡. Neither were his Ac-  
compts

\* Carte’s History, ut supra. N<sup>o</sup>. 259.

† Family Collecuons, N<sup>o</sup> 415.

‡ Ibid.

compts then taken for all the Sums he had expended out of his Pocket between the fifteenth of *September*, 1643, the Day of the Cessation, and the fifteenth of *March*, 1644, when he left that Kingdom, which amounted to several thousand Pounds, though he had been prevailed upon with the utmost Reluctance to continue in the Exercise of his Charge till that Time.

SIR *Philip Perceval* continued some time at *Oxford* before the Commencement of the Treaty, but it was not long before Ministers there, discovered his Principles and Temper not to be such as would entirely suit with the Projects of the Court at that Juncture.—Great Endeavours were used to engage him in the same Measures, and to make him a Promoter of them. The Case being, as my Lord *Digby* wrote to the Marquis of *Ormond* about that Time\*, “*That every Minister there apprehended the Necessity of a Peace with the Irish for the Support of their Affairs there ; but every Body also was seeking, as the Ape did, to pull the Chestnuts out of the Fire with the Puppies Foot, and to cast off the Counsel of granting the Irish any thing at all to his Neighbour.*” They went so far in this Matter, as to intimate the Offer of an *English* Peerage, and other Preferments of a very profitable Kind, to Sir *Philip*, as he relates himself in his Letter of the fifteenth Day of *May*, 1644†, to the Earl of *Ormond* ; but neither his Conscience or Prudence would suffer him to do all that was expected of him, so that a great Coolness grew to him in these Quarters ; and those Difficulties relating to his Accounts were laid in his Way, either out of Revenge, or to induce him farther, for his Security, to fall into those Measures.

NOTWITHSTANDING this, the outward Shew of Civility and Respect was well maintained, though the greatest Vigour and Resolution was exerted on the Side of

---

\* Carte's History of *Ormond*, Appendix, No. 285. *Oxford*, May 9, 1644.

† Family Collections, ut supra.

of Sir *Philip Perceval* and his Collegues, who behaved with great Courage in opposing the Demands of the *Irish*\*, which, by their Consequences, tended to throw the whole Power of the State into their Hands, and to render the Protestant Religion and Protestant Party more dependant and subordinate to them than they ever had themselves been to the other. The solid and noble Arguments used by Sir *Philip Perceval* on this Occasion†, are of very great Force and Beauty; but these Debates are too prolix and numerous to be inserted here. In this Transaction he bore the principal Part, as his Writings and Papers shew; and he had so much the Advantage of the opposite Party in his Method and Manner‡, that the King's Privy Council, who wished Success to the *Irish* Commissioners, and the *Irish* Commissioners themselves, both conscious of it, shortened their Debates, and contrived that their Meetings should be as few as possible.

It is more than probable, that the Marquis of *Ormond* and Sir *Philip Perceval* acted in Concert upon this Occasion§; for, in the Lord *Digby's* Letter last mentioned to the Marquis, he complains there, *That the Marquis had never given his Opinion any Way upon the intended Peace, though much sollicitated to it*; and, at the Time of the Treaty, Sir *Philip* corresponded with the Marquis in a very free Manner. The following Extract of one of his Letters, dated from *Oxford* the 23d of *May*, 1644, may be properly enough inserted here, as it shews not only the Friendship of Sir *Philip* to the Marquis, but a little of the Nature of the Proceedings of the Court in that Transaction.

—“ At our first Coming, says he, we kissed the  
 “ King's Hand ||, and received noble Usage, as I for-  
 “ merly wrote. After a while, we were put three  
 “ Queries

\* Borlaey's History of the Irish Insurrections.

† Family Collections

‡ Carte's History of Ormond, Appendix. Letter from Sir Philip Perceval to the Marquis of Ormond, N<sup>o</sup>. 296.

§ Ibid. N<sup>o</sup>. 296.

|| Ibid.

250 *A Genealogical History*

“ Queries by Sir *John Colepepper*, the Earl of *Bristol*,  
 “ the Earl of *Portland*, Lord *Digby*, Mr. Secretary  
 “ *Nicholas*, and Sir *Edward Hide*, upon the Propo-  
 “ sitions of the *Irish*;—the Unusualness and Dan-  
 “ gerousness whereof, the strict Injunction of Secrecy  
 “ (while the others took Liberty to discourse the Par-  
 “ ticulars in Question, and to shew the Reasonableness  
 “ of their Side to divers of both Sexes) together with  
 “ some strange Reports, (which I forbear to mention)  
 “ gave us, first, Cause to be more wary in our written  
 “ Answer, conceiving, (not altogether without Ground)  
 “ that we should, in due Time, have been acquainted  
 “ with what the *Irish* most insisted on, what they  
 “ waved, and what they inclined to grant, that we  
 “ might come to closer Fight.

“ On *Saturday* last the *Irish* were dispatched, and  
 “ two of them gone to *Exeter*. On *Tuesday* the rest  
 “ went away unknown to any of us.—\* The Agents  
 “ of the Protestants observed the *Irish* high, and  
 “ courted by divers, and themselves, even by their  
 “ Acquaintance (as they thought) neglected, and us  
 “ so reserved towards them, that they seemed not to  
 “ take it well of us, or others. Afterwards they took  
 “ Counsel, such as they could find here, and made  
 “ Propositions more diluted, yet warranted (as they  
 “ say) by their Instructions, approved by the Board,  
 “ and by most of the Lords, conceived to be, in them-  
 “ selves, more just than others, if the Times were rea-  
 “ sonable: The Copies of all, I am confident, are  
 “ sent to your Lordship.

“ THE King, seeing that at this Time he could  
 “ not make a Peace with any Security, and without  
 “ granting such Things as scarce any of his Council  
 “ durst advise, resolved to continue the Cessation,  
 “ as the least Danger, and was pleased to let me know

“ as

---

\* Note, that these *Protestant agents* were distinct from the *Com-  
 missioners*, who were either summoned by the King to attend the  
 Treaty, or sent by the State.—The Agents were private Persons,  
 who were sent by a busy Party of the Protestants, without any regular  
 Authority, to disturb the Proceedings of the rest, and took upon  
 them to interfere in this Treaty, as Persons of great Consequence.

“ as much ; at which Time he did tell me too how  
“ abundantly he was satisfied with your Lordship, and  
“ I made bold to acquaint his Majesty, what extraordi-  
“ nary Burthens you have borne for his Service, whereof  
“ he did protest he was very sensible.

“ ON *Wednesday* this was approved by almost eve-  
“ ry one of the Council, consented to by the Lord  
“ *Muskerry* (as the King did tell me) and ordered to  
“ be the Debate of the next Day.

“ THE next Day his Majesty was advised to go  
“ to *Reading*, and at the same Time the same Party  
“ did (as I doubt) advise to cast Part of the Burthen  
“ of this Business on your Lordship. I confess, I did  
“ express a greater Sense of it in your Lordship’s Be-  
“ half than perhaps became me ; and did let them  
“ that rule most, know, how much easier it would be  
“ for them to give the *Irish* Content *here*, than for  
“ your Lordship *there* ; how you had, for his Maje-  
“ sty’s Service, already gained the Envy of the *Scottish*  
“ Nation, and of the Parliament ; and that they would  
“ put you into the same Danger with the rest of the  
“ Nation of *England*, and of the *Irish* too, who pro-  
“ bably will demand, or do something that your Good-  
“ ness would not brook.

“ THEY scarcely ever conferred with the Agents  
“ from *Ireland*’s Protestant Party, or us, to see how  
“ things might be moderated ; but were glad, as some  
“ say, of any Occasion to put the Burden (which is  
“ dangerous,) on others ; and yet they seem to have  
“ granted the things most opposed. ———

THUS ended the famous Treaty at *Oxford* with the  
King and the *Irish*, in which his Majesty suffered  
manifestly in a high Degree ; for, to the great Con-  
fusion of his Ministers at *Oxford*, there arose an Im-  
possibility, from the nature of the Demands of the  
*Irish*, to comply with them ; though the Scruple was  
not, whether they were proper to be granted (a Mat-  
ter, as their Affairs then stood, little considered ;) but  
whether any Man could publicly own himself the  
Adviser of such Methods, which none had the Hardi-



ness to do.—In the next place, the Troops which the King had already drawn from *Ireland* soon after the Cessation, were all dispersed or cut to-pieces upon their very first Landing in *Cheshire*, and elsewhere: and those formidable Bodies of the *Irish*, intended to be raised under the Marquis of *Antrim* and the Lord *Taafe*\*, were brought to nothing, by the Difficulties created by the supreme Council of *Kilkenny*, who, jealous of the Merit which those Lords would claim, and, meditating still further Confusion, by the Instigation of the Bigots among them, refused their Concurrence to this Project: So that, in reality, the King obtained nothing by many extraordinary Measures, and the Negotiations of one whole Year, but what was the Result of his having proved to the Publick the Truth of all the Scandal which the Parliament had thrown on him upon this very Account.

ONE of the first, and most immediate Consequences of this Affair, was the Defection of the Lord *Inchequin*, together with all the *Munster* Army, from the King to the Parliament; for which that Lord assigned, as his Reason, the manifest Partiality of the King's Party to the *Irish*, and the ruinous Measures they evidently strove to take for their Exaltation, and for the entire Ruin of the Protestant Party there; his Enemies have, indeed, assigned another Motive for this Conduct, drawn from a Disappointment which he met with in relation to the Presidency of *Munster*, which he much desired; yet so many took Disgust at the same time at what they discovered at *Oxford* during this Treaty, and left that Party, which, till then, they had faithfully served, without any personal ill Usage on that Side, or Prospect of Advantage on the other, that this Step may well deserve a more generous Construction.

SIR *Philip Perceval*†, now looked upon at *Oxford* as a *Roundhead*, as Sir *George Ratcliff* says in his Letter to the Marquis of *Ormond*, dated the eleventh of  
June;

\* Carte's History of the Duke of *Ormond*.

† Ibid. Appendix, N<sup>o</sup>. 305.

June, 1644, for no other Reason, but that he had refused to assist in the destructive Projects of the Court in one Instance, where neither his Conscience, Reason, or personal Safety, could permit him to join with them, grew very uneasy at his Stay there; and, finding every Day new Matter of Offence, and discovering much less Principle and Justice than he had expected in those Quarters, he determined to alter his Situation. In this Dilemma, he was obliged to retire to the Parliament, having rendered himself so obnoxious to the *Irish*, by his Opposition to them on the Treaty, that he found it particularly unsafe to return to *Ireland*; so that, privately leaving *Oxford* about the Beginning of *August*, 1644, he made the best of his Way to *London*, deserting all his Estate in *England*, which then lay in the King's Quarters, and which was presently employed to the Use of the Royal Army\*; and, having settled his Wife and Children at *Annables*, in *Hertfordshire*, he returned to the Parliament the seventh of the same Month.

As soon as he arrived there, he was received with open Arms by Mr. *Hollis*, Sir *Philip Stapleton*, Mr. *Pierpoint*, and the rest of the Leaders of that Party, which was called the *Presbyterian*, in Opposition to the *Independants*, who now began to raise a more inveterate and desperate Faction about this Time.—— These Gentlemen, with whom he had been long intimately acquainted, pressed him much to accept a Seat in Parliament, which, notwithstanding his Refusal of it, they still kept vacant, till he was afterwards prevailed upon to take the Charge upon him, as we shall come to shew hereafter.

HE remained attending the Publick Affairs †, though in a private Station, in eminent Confidence with those Gentlemen, who hitherto directed all Affairs, and found himself much more capable than he had ever been before to assist the Publick Service, to which he indefatigably applied himself; and, as a

Proof

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 557.

† Ibid. N<sup>o</sup>. 557.

Proof of the Credit in which he stood, we cannot omit to mention, *that he attended, by a general Order, at all the Committees of the House of Commons relating to the two Kingdoms*; a Fact so extraordinary, that we should scarce give Credit to it, if it were not positively affirmed in an original Draught of the Evidence of *Sir Thomas Wharton*, given into Parliament in his Favour, when he was there accused in 1645.

WE must now return to the Affairs of *Ireland*, which we left yet quiet, in a good measure, by means of the Cessation concluded, as we have before shewn, in *September, 1643*.——But upon the Return of the Commissioners from *Oxford*, which was in the Summer, 1644, the Year being pretty far advanced, it became necessary to think of continuing the War, or of entering upon some new Treaty to prolong the Truce, or to effect the Peace.——And here, the ungenerous Management of the Court to their faithful Servant the Marquis of *Ormond*, was very notorious, the Ministers then endeavouring all they could to engage him to conclude a Peace with the *Irish*, though they knew it could not be done without an entire Sacrifice of the Protestant Interest, and to put himself at the Head of the Popish Forces to reduce the *Scottish Irish* Army in the North, who still held out against the Confederates, without giving him any Command for it.——The Marquis well knew the Hazard he must run by such an extraordinary Measure taken without a legal Warrant; and his Danger was the more visible, the more impossible he found it to get any positive Instruction or proper Authority for the Step to which he was pressed\*.——Besides, he was averse in his Nature to the Consequences of that Measure; so that by a very judicious Steadiness and prudent Conduct in this Conjunction (though the Lord *Digby*, Secretary of State to the King, wrote him very earnestly to be less scrupulous, and artfully pressed him into it) he had Address enough to steer safely out of this Danger. In one of these Letters, dated at *Ilchester*

---

\* Carte's History of Ormond.

*chester* the twenty-second of July, 1644, that Lord writes to this Effect\*.——“ I am not more sensible  
 “ (says he) of the hard Task which is put upon your  
 “ Excellence, by referring the Business of the Peace of  
 “ Ireland unto you, than his Majesty himself is; but  
 “ his Majesty being necessitated unto that Course by the  
 “ Condition of his Affairs here, which would not per-  
 “ mit him, without great Hazard, to act any thing  
 “ himself in that Business in this Conjunction of Time,  
 “ it is the Part of a gallant Minister to serve his Ma-  
 “ ster in great Streights and Difficulties, by easing him  
 “ of those Burdens which would be heavy upon him.”—  
 In the same Letter he likewise presses the Necessity of  
 a Peace with the *Irish*, and an Union with them  
 against the Presbyterians in the North of *Ireland*, whom  
 he calls *those Traitors of the Covenant*, so much more  
 dangerous than any other, as they are more firmly linked  
 to the *Rebels* here. These Passages open a good deal  
 the mean and treacherous Ways of acting on that Side,  
 which we mention (not with a View to blacken that  
 Party) but to strengthen the Justification of *Sir Philip*,  
 in his Desertion of it.

THE Marquis of *Ormond* having at length received  
 positive Orders from the King to renew the Cessation,  
 prolonged the Term from the fifteenth of *September*,  
 1644, till *December* following; and thence continually  
 from time to time till the thirtieth of *July*, 1646.——  
 When a Peace was concluded between the King and  
 that Party, of which, both as to its Nature and Con-  
 sequences, we shall come to speak again, when we  
 have done with the Transactions of the intermediate  
 Time.

THESE Negotiations related only to the Provinces  
 of *Connaught* and *Leinster*, and such Parts of *Munster*  
 and *Ulster* as were in the Possession of the *Irish*; but  
 the *Scottish Northern Irish* still rejected all Accommoda-  
 tion with the *Rebels*, and maintained their Ground  
 against them, and the Protestant Army under the  
 Lord

---

\* Carte's History of Ormond, Appendix, No 313

Lord *Inchequin* in *Munster*, had given themselves up to the Parliament soon after the Cessation.—Thus the *Irish* became enabled to turn their whole Force upon these two divided Bodies of the Protestants, who were so remote from each other, that there was no Possibility of Communication between them. It is almost a Mystery, in this sad Conjunction of Affairs, how these Armies could subsist, against the whole united Power of the *Irish*, and of the Protestants of the Royal Party, under the Marquis of *Ormond*. And it is equally strange, that a Prince so desir'd for his Zeal to the Established Religion of his Country, should have given his Approbation to such a Measure, and even endeavoured to unite the *Irish* with his own Troops, to destroy the Protestant Army of that Kingdom.

BUT, from this imminent Danger, the Protestant Interest there was miraculously preserved by the treacherous and furious Practices of the *Romish* Clergy, and the Officers they had gained to command their Troops, as we shall come to shew hereafter.

THE latter End of this Year pass'd off in Treaties and Negotiations, and there was very little Action, particularly in *Munster*, till the Beginning of the following Year, 1645, when the Earl of *Castlehaven*, at the Head of five thousand *Irish*, took in most of the principal Strong Holds of that County, as *Capperquin*, *Mitchell's Town*, and *Ballybooly*, the Lord *Inchequin*, with the *English* Army, being oblig'd to stand upon the defensive. The Terror of this Success had such an Effect, that the Castle of *Liscarrol*†, which had been before so well defended against a much more considerable Force, surrendered without firing a Shot, though then in the best Posture of Defence, and commanded by the same Officer, *Raymond*, before-mentioned, who, for his Cowardice or Treachery, was condemn'd afterwards to Death, though pardon'd by the Indulgence of Sir *Philip Perceval*.

The Castle of *Annagh*, another Garrison of Sir *Philip's*‡, commanded by *Fisher*, another of his Stewards, was besieged

---

\* Family Letters, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup>. 514. † Ibid. ‡ Ibid.

besieged at the same time. This Castle was, by Nature, almost impregnable, being situated at the Entrance of a kind of Island two or three Miles round, environed by a Bog a Mile over, and utterly impassable but by a Causeway artificially made, and defended in such a manner, that although the Castle was almost beaten into Ruins by the Enemy, and they had made several Assaults, in which three hundred of their best Men perished, yet were they in no Prospect of prevailing, the Defence continuing as brisk as ever, and being esteemed the best that had ever been made of any Place in *Ireland*, till at length, the Constable\*, less wise than valiant, consenting to a Conference, with two or three of his Officers, was treacherously taken, and barbarously put to Death, in the Sight of his own Men, who being thus deprived of their Commander, imprudently surrendered, upon Promise of Quarter, notwithstanding which, they were all murdered in cold Blood, partly out of a brutal Policy, to discourage the like obstinate Resistance for the future, and partly to satisfy the Resentment of the Lord *Castleconnell*, who was then in the *Irish Army* †, and had sworn a bitter Revenge upon all that belonged to Sir *Philip Perceval*, because he had refused to give him his eldest Daughter in Marriage, before the War.

THE Castles of *Welchestown* and *Templeconila* §, Places of less Consideration, fell into their Hands with more Ease; so that in this Year his whole Estate in those Parts came into the Possession of the Rebels.

DURING all these Transactions Sir *Philip Perceval* remained in *England*, doing every thing he could to support the Interest of that Country, and labouring with so much Industry and Skill as to acquire very great Esteem and Confidence from the leading Men of that Time; but this Situation was not exempt from those Inconveniencies which ever attend superior Merit and Esteem.

SIR

\* Family Collections, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 515.

† Family Papers, Bundle 4.

§ Family Collections, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 515.

SIR *John Temple*, of whose Animosity to Sir *Philip* we have already spoken, was at this Time in the *English* House of Commons, whither he had been preferred by the Lord *Lisle*, whose Creature he was, and whose Hatred to Sir *Philip* was equally virulent, from the Obstruction he had given to his Endeavours in depriving the Earl of *Inchiquin* of his Command, which that Lord most ardently endeavoured, as well from private Animosities between them, as on account of the Independant Cause, which the *Earl* by no Means favoured.——In that Circumstance, Sir *John Temple* was employed by that Lord, (who was lately made Lieutenant of *Ireland*) as a kind of Manager of *Irish* Affairs, in which Station he took upon him, in a very odious Manner, and in a Way very destructive to that Country.——It is easy to conceive, how a Man of an imperious and revengeful Nature, not governed by much Judgment, must agitate himself, with the Introduction of the Person he most hated, in the same Employment with himself, and by the daily Observation of his own waning Interest, and the rising Credit of his Antagonist.——Being a Man of a base Character, he scrupled not the basest Means to prejudice Sir *Philip Perceval*, and actually endeavoured to suborn, and offered Money to several who had served under Sir *Philip*, in his Office of Commissary-General, to give some Evidence of Male-Practice †, in Execution of that Charge.

So harsh a Character as what we have given of this Man, seeming to be more virulent and criminal, than the Motive we have assigned for it can in any Degree justify, requires likewise a farther Proof than we have yet given.——In order, therefore, to support what we have asserted of him, as we do every Circumstance of this Work, with pregnant Evidence, we shall offer some Extracts of Original Letters, which will sufficiently confirm the Truth of  
what

---

\* Family Letters, Vol. V.

† Ibid. Vol. IV. N<sup>o</sup> 462.

what we insinuate, since they express the Sentiments of the very Time itself, and of very eminent Men, who were concerned in the Events here spoken of, and were the living Witnesses of his Conduct.

SOON after Sir *Philip Perceval's* Accession to the Parliament \*, he received the following Letter, together with others to the same Effect, dated *November 1644*, from Mr. *Savage*, one of his Stewards, and Managers of his Affairs in *Ireland*.

*Right Worshipful Worthy Sir,*

“ ——— I thought it my Post to acquaint you,  
“ that since your going thither, I find some say that  
“ have been employed by you, that 15 *l.* was private-  
“ ly offered, (by a secret Agent of Sir *John Temple*)  
“ to one of them to make some Certificate, which, at  
“ first Sight, they think might lessen your Merit in  
“ the Service here, and that being refused by him,  
“ with Answer that it was most unjust, it was offered  
“ to another under Clerk, who, I believe, took it.—  
“ In Discourse with me he told me, that no Certificate  
“ could hurt you, who all Men knew had contributed  
“ more towards the Maintenance of the Army, when  
“ the State were at a *Non-plus*, than could be expected  
“ of any private Man, or than any other Man could  
“ do, and engaged yourself so deeply to keep off the  
“ Cessation; but he is poor, and has a Charge, and  
“ we have been able to give him little since you went,  
“ and discharged him some time since, and he was  
“ discontented.—

*Your faithful Servant in all Humbleness,*

Valentine Savage.



260 *A Genealogical History*

SIR *Philip Perceval* writing to Major-General *Jephson*, upon the fourteenth of *February*, 1645, expresses himself in this Manner\*: — “ For my own Particular, “ I could tell you, that the old Malice of Sir *John Temple*, and his Independant Brethren so continues, “ and takes such a Rise from the new Preferment of “ the Lord *Lisle*, and other Friends of the same Stamp, “ that among four or five of them a Council was held, “ and Preferments and Money offered to any that “ would say aught against me, either of Words or “ Actions. ——— A godly Course, is it not? and it “ was on a Fast-day too.—— But that God that hath “ preserved me hitherto, will, I hope, preserve me “ still.”——In answer to which Letter, *Jephson* returns this Paragraph\*: ——— “ What you tell me “ of the vile Proceedings of that Wretch, and of “ the Party whose Engine he is, gives me no Sur- “ prize, neither Apprehension for your Safety.—— “ Your Abilities and Integrity are a Coat of Mail; not “ penetrable by the Bolts of these Men’s Malice.—— “ But I do profess, that if God had given him so “ much of his Wisdom, as the Devil of his Intentions, “ both you, and all of us; would have good Cause to “ betake us to our Prayers.”

AGAIN, upon *February* the twelfth, 1646, the Lord *Montgomery* (after Earl of *Mountalexander*) writing to Sir *Philip Perceval*, to acquaint him that the Army in *Ulster* had elected him a Commissioner to conduct their Affairs with the Parliament of *England*, to this Effect: ——— “ We removed, on your “ Behalf, the only Objection made against you, viz. “ that your Estate being in *Munster* and *Leinster*, you “ would little mind *Ulster*; which we affirmed, you “ would never balance with the Credit to discharge “ faithfully the Trust by our Army reposed in you, for “ the Relief of our Forces in *Ulster* and *Connaught*, “ whereof

\* Family Letters, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 554.

† Ibid. Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 713.

“ whereof all are now confident. ——— Cousin, it is  
 “ said by some eminent Persons, that there is such  
 “ Differences and Animosities between you and Sir  
 “ *John Temple*, who has so great Power with the Par-  
 “ ty, that it might prejudice your Agency; but I  
 “ hope your Judgment and Discretion will guide you  
 “ so, as that you will more heartily manage your Af-  
 “ fairs.—Sir *John Clotworthy*, (afterwards Viscount  
 “ *Massareene*) hath an high Esteem of, and com-  
 “ mended me for electing you, as the only Person  
 “ that he thinks capable to check and frustrate the ill  
 “ Intentions of that ill Man and his Associates.”

Montgomerie.

*ARTHUR ANNESLEY*, (afterwards the famous Earl of *Anglesey*) Son to the Lord *Mountnorris*, who was so cruelly treated by the Earl of *Strafford*, being a young Man of very considerable Parts, which carried him afterwards to so high a Station in the Government of *England*, was even at that Time actively employed, though then only in the Affairs of *Ireland*. This Nobleman, in a Letter to Sir *Philip Perceval*, dated from *Dublin* the twenty-first of *July*, 1647\*, after acknowledging his great Friendship, particularly in his Care to defend him from the Venom of this Sir *John Temple*, whose greatest Skill (as he says) lay in traducing, adds farther, “ I find that this Party leaves  
 “ no Way unassayed to render you useles to the Pub-  
 “ lic; but take a right Christian Course, and submit  
 “ your Cause to God, who never yet failed to make  
 “ revengeful Persons (though upon the fairest Pre-  
 “ tences) feel, that he judged them to touch upon his  
 “ Prerogative.”

IN the same Collection we find another Letter of the fourteenth of *August*, 1647 †, from *Francis* Lord *Mountnorris* before-mentioned, then Viscount *Valentia*,

\* Family Letters, Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup> 854.

† Ibid. Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup> 870.

*tia*, to Sir *Philip*. ——— In which, speaking of the Affairs of the other Kingdom. ——— “ To what End (says he) “ do I speak of *Ireland*? when I see those, “ who, I am confident, were most zealous for the “ good of it, endeavoured to be ruined for their being “ so, and how the Votes pass for *Munster*; and so “ long as Sir *John Temple*, and his Motions, may be “ credited, and they who support him; I speak plain “ *English*, and I care not who knows it; I look for “ no Good for *Ireland*, for I know how he and his “ Confederates came to their Places; and they who “ buy, must sell. If I am not deceived, Sir *John Temple* “ would be another *Radcliffe*, but he wants his Capacity, and I hope shall never have such powerful “ Support to do Mischief. ——— Pray present my Service to Mr. *Holles*, and Sir *Philip Stapelton*, and “ tell them, I pray God to defend them and myself “ against the Malice of these Enemies of the Commonwealth.

Fran. Valentia.

WE could produce Authorities almost innumerable to the same Purpose, if what we have already mentioned were not sufficient; but we shall not load this Work with any farther Quotations of this kind, since we have fully justified what we have advanced with regard to the base and inveterate Character of this Man, and his Adherents. Let us, therefore, now return to the Thread of our Narration.

THE Lord *Lisle* and Sir *John Temple*, finding themselves unable, notwithstanding all these wicked Arts and low Endeavours, to procure any material Evidence to the Prejudice of Sir *Philip Perceval*, now changed their Plan, and laboured another Point, which was to prejudice very many of the House against him, for the Part he acted in the Cessation; a Transaction so odious to the Parliament, that the very bare Mention of it, was sufficient to raise the greatest Rage and Violence, against any Person supposed to have been concerned in it.

it.—This was long insinuated, before it was thought a proper Time to digest the Malice into a formal Charge against him, upon which Occasion he published, and gave into the House of Commons, that famous Vindication of himself, which is since incorporated, in part, into the History of those Times\*.—Wherein, after having set forth at large the great Distresses of the Army at that Time, and shewn how their Necessities led most Men to judge a Cessation necessary at that Juncture; and having strongly shewn, how far he was from creating those Necessities, with a View to induce that Step, he concludes in the following Manner:— “ And if any Plot or Design there  
“ were in any, to draw on a Necessity, whereupon to  
“ ground a Cessation, or an unjust or dishonourable  
“ Peace, the same was altogether unknown to me,  
“ who abhorred any such Thought at all Times, and  
“ did use all possible Means in my Power, to the ut-  
“ most Hazard of my Life and Substance, to sustain  
“ the Armies in all Distresses, in the Way of the War,  
“ and to prevent any such Necessities; in which pub-  
“ lic Services, I really spent eleven thousand Pounds  
“ of my own Estate, besides divers Goods of my own,  
“ and what Money or Goods I could procure of others,  
“ contracted an Arrear of four thousand Pounds, and  
“ upwards, for Entertainments, due unto me by the  
“ Parliament for several Employments in that War,  
“ appearing to be the Muster-Master’s Accounts. I  
“ engaged myself for more than one thousand Pounds  
“ for Provisions for the Army, (having never refused  
“ to engage myself, or any of my Estate, for them,  
“ upon any Occasion.) I have lost twenty thousand  
“ Pounds personal Estate, by the Cruelty and Rapine  
“ of the Rebels, with the Lives of divers of my  
“ Friends, Kindred, and Servants, in Time of full  
“ Peace, without any Provocation, before any Army  
“ was on Foot against them, besides a large Part of  
“ my Estate in Lands of Inheritance, of two thousand  
“ Pounds *per annum* more; and been at great Charge  
“ in my Office of Clerk of the Crown of the King’s  
Bench,

\* Carte’s History of Ormond, Vol I fol. 454.

264 *A Genealogical History*

“ Bench, to record Indictments of High-Treason, (ac-  
 “ cording to the Laws of the Land) against three thou-  
 “ sand of the Rebels, and these, for the most part,  
 “ Noblemen, Gentlemen, and Freeholders; and (ac-  
 “ cording to the Duty of my Place) proceeded to the  
 “ Outlawry of two thousand of them, for all which  
 “ it cannot be reasonably conceived I should expect to  
 “ receive Satisfaction or Recompence, by any such  
 “ Necessity.— I did also, without Charge to the  
 “ State, raise and arm a competent Number of Sol-  
 “ diers, Horse and Foot; and to this Day have main-  
 “ tained two Castles of my own in *Munster*, viz. *Lif-*  
 “ *carrol* and *Annagh*, in the most remote Parts, or  
 “ Out-bounds of the Quarters of the Protestant Party,  
 “ and most subject to the Incursion of the Rebels, and  
 “ thereby continually much annoyed the Rebels; in  
 “ which Castle I relieved several hundred *English* for  
 “ almost twelve Months of the War; until my Provi-  
 “ sions grew very scarce; and that by the Help of an  
 “ Army marching that Way they were fetched off. —  
 “ Besides three other Castles, viz. *Templeconilla*, *Wel-*  
 “ *chestown*, and *Bregogue*, which I maintained during  
 “ the War, until two of them were, by the *Irish* trea-  
 “ cherously surprized, about the Time of the Cessation;  
 “ they having made it a Design, upon Notice of my  
 “ Aversion to the Treaty. — And also with little  
 “ Charge to the State, maintained one other Castle,  
 “ nine Miles from *Dublin*, called *Castlewaring*, lying  
 “ in the most open Way of marching of the Armies,  
 “ where they usually reposed upon all Occasions, where  
 “ also I mann’d the Lands adjoining, which few o-  
 “ thers in our Quarters did, and paid Contribution to  
 “ the Army thereout. All which will, I hope, in  
 “ due Time be taken into Consideration; the raising  
 “ and maintaining of Forces against the Rebels, be-  
 “ ing invited and encouraged by Promises of Reward,  
 “ by Order of both Houses, printed the twelfth of  
 “ *November*, 1641. And having performed my Du-  
 “ ty in all that is before-mentioned, I could not con-  
 “ ceive how any Blame could be cast upon me, or  
 “ upon

“ upon any of those unhappy Protestants, whose Blood  
“ the *Irish* yet thirst after, and who were not privy to  
“ any Design, (if any Design there was to work or  
“ draw on a Necessity) or had any Design of the said  
“ Cessation, but consented, or submitted unto the same,  
“ only because they had no Means to avoid, or with-  
“ stand it, or could not otherwise hope to subsist, or  
“ survive the then instant Danger; but I hoped that  
“ all Means would have been used to encourage and  
“ cherish us, by whose Means or Designs soever our  
“ Miseries or Necessities were wrought or brought up-  
“ on us.”

THE Truth of all the Particulars in this Remon-  
strance can admit of no Dispute, (as the Author of the  
History of the House of *Ormond* observes, who has  
given a large Extract of this remarkable Paper) being  
delivered into the House of Commons, at that Time  
prepared to take Advantage of any Error, much less  
of any Falshood, delivered in this Account; and the  
Persons who moved this Trouble were all then present  
to have confuted him in his Facts, if they could have  
had the least Pretence to do it. — But his Merit was  
so extraordinary, and his Sufferings so great, that the  
Malice of his Enemies retorted upon themselves,  
and the Prosecution was quashed for that Time, Sir  
*John Temple*, and his Adherents, not venturing to own  
that they had intended to bring in the Accusation,  
finding that his Integrity, Understanding, and Servi-  
ces, were Obstacles too great for them (as the House  
still continued to be modelled) to surmount.

YET, notwithstanding this, the House growing  
more of the Independant Stamp, to which Party Sir  
*Philip* had ever been averse, and the Lord *Lisle* being  
appointed Lieutenant of *Ireland*, as we have before ob-  
served, that Lord and Sir *John Temple* undertook again  
to bring this Charge against him, and they proceeded in  
it in the same scandalous Manner, holding Councils of  
their Cabal to regulate the Method of it; and continu-  
ing to offer Money and Preferments to any who would

266 *A Genealogical History*

furnish Matter of Accufation againft him \*, either as to his Words or Actions.

THE Accufation was at length reduced to thefe four Articles †.

I. THAT he was long acquainted intimately with the Earl of *Ormond*, and privy to all his Plots and Defigns, and his Majefty's in favour of the *Iriſh*, and acted all he could at the Ceffation in favour of them.

II. THAT being ſent to *Oxford* upon the King's Letter, dated in *October*, 1643, as a Commiſſioner with the Treaty of Peace between the King and the *Iriſh*, he aſſiſted the King's Ends there.

III. THAT he did come thence with the King's Leave, and acted for him here ever ſince.

IV. THAT he never owned any of the Proteſtants of *Ireland*, nor appeared with them till after the Battle of *Nafeby*.

SIR *Philip* knew how determined his Enemies were at any Rate upon his Ruin, but his Integrity ſupported him in this difficult Situation §, ſo that he made a bold and noble Defence.——In answer to the firſt Article, of his being concerned in the Ceffation. ——  
 “ He ſhewed firſt, the great Neceſſities that ſubſiſted at  
 “ that Time for taking that Step, which nevertheleſs he  
 “ brought Certificates from the Earl of *Inchequin*, and  
 “ many great Officers of the Army preſent at the Trea-  
 “ ty, beſides many Evidences of diſtinguiſhed Charac-  
 “ ters, to prove that he oppoſed, both by writing and  
 “ ſpeaking, in ſo diſtinguiſhed a manner, that he had  
 “ in-

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 554. —— Sir P. Perceval's Letter to Col. Jephſon, 14 Feb. 1645.

† Ibid. Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 551.

§ Ibid.

“ incurred the most inveterate Odium of the *Irish* Confederacy in so doing : he shewed farther, that at that very Time, he had actually engaged himself and Fortune for eleven thousand Pounds, an immense Sum in that Country, and in that critical Conjunction, in Provisions for the Army ; and that the Plea of Necessity was greatly lessened by that Supply—He concluded his Defence upon this Head by observing, that he must have acted like a Madman, if he had wantonly entered into that Measure, since one of the Articles of the Cessation was, to leave all Lands in the Hands they were then in at the Time of the Treaty, and that above two thousand Pounds *per annum* of his own Estate was actually then within the Line of the Enemies Quarters, who, by Virtue of that Article, had ever since remained in Possession of it.

“ WITH respect to the Earl of *Ormond*\*, he acknowledged, that he had formerly had a great Regard and Friendship for him, and had even done him so much Service as to be bound for him in great Sums, to the Amount of many thousand Pounds, during those distracted Times ; which Act of Friendship was likely to prove very ruinous to himself, having, as then, received no kind of Security for the Sums he had so provided for him. But that after the Affair of this Cessation, he had in that, and other Particulars, somewhat cooled in his Opinion of him, thinking him too much attached to the King’s Cause, and too indulgent to the Rebels ; so that whatever private Respects he might yet retain for him, he had often declared, and was very free to do it, that he was a very improper Person to carry on the War in those Parts ; and in this that his Actions well agreed with his Words, having for some Time past, (*viz.* ever since the Parliament had declared him obnoxious to them) never corresponded with him.

“ THAT he could not deny †, nor was he unwilling to own, that he had been at *Oxford* with the King, in

\* Family Collections, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 551.

† *Ibid.*



“ 1644, whither he was employed to do his Majesty  
 “ Service, and did his Endeavour so to do, (though his  
 “ Services were not well construed there) by opposing  
 “ the unreasonable Demands of the Lord *Taafe*, and o-  
 “ ther Agents for the *Irish* Rebels. And under this  
 “ Head he brought many Persons of Note to testify how  
 “ much he resisted all those Propositions; how great Of-  
 “ fence he took at the Indulgence then shewn to that  
 “ Party by his Majesty and his Council, insomuch that  
 “ many very considerable Officers of the Army, at that  
 “ Time engaged on the Side of the King, declared that  
 “ from Sir *Philip*'s Advice and Exhortations there, hav-  
 “ ing observed the particular Conduct of the Royalists  
 “ on this Occaon \*, they had been alone persuaded to  
 “ desert that Cause, and to have engaged, as they had  
 “ immediately done, in the Service of the Parliament.  
 “ ———As to the Particular of his having Licence from  
 “ the King to leave *Oxford*; That without that Licence  
 “ he could not have left that Place; and that it was hard  
 “ to have that alledged against him, when he made no  
 “ other Use of it, than to come immediately to the Par-  
 “ liament, with whom he had continued ever since, and  
 “ been as active as any Member that was most forward  
 “ to accuse him.

“ IN the last Place †, as to his being an Abettor of  
 “ the *Irish* Rebels, he said, that if he had so been, he  
 “ must have shewn a Temper much more charitable than  
 “ those who drove on this Prosecution with so much Vi-  
 “ olence. ———And here he gave the Deduction of his  
 “ Sufferings by that unhappy Rebellion, in which he  
 “ shewed, that he had lost the Profit of an Estate of four  
 “ thousand Pounds *per annum*, then in Possession of the  
 “ Enemy, or wholly wasted by them. ———That he had  
 “ been at the Charge of maintaining Garrisons in several  
 “ of his Castles, for above five Years successively: that  
 “ he had lost by the Destruction of his Woods, Houses,  
 “ and Rents not received during the War, at a mode-  
 “ rate

---

\* Family Papers, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 556.

† Ibid.

of the House of YVERY, &c. 269

“ rate Computation, no less at that Hour than sixty  
“ thousand Pounds, besides the Benefit of Places for  
“ Life, of greater Value than three thousand Pounds  
“ *per annum*, as well as several others, which he had  
“ likewise enjoyed before the War, in Value not much  
“ inferior, though upon another Tenure.—To all  
“ which he desired Leave to add two thousand Pounds,  
“ which he had spent of his own Money in the Exercise  
“ of his Employments, six thousand Pounds Arrears still  
“ due to him on the same Account, and eighteen thou-  
“ sand and thirty Pounds, which he had contracted for  
“ Provisions for the Army, not including the Sum last  
“ mentioned, for which he had engaged himself, on Ac-  
“ count of the Cessation, for which he had not so much  
“ as received any Security from the Public.—After  
“ this Account of his great Losses, he called upon any  
“ Man to disprove any Fact he had advanced; and re-  
“ ceiving no Answer, observed, how incredible it was  
“ that he should be so quickly reconciled to those, who  
“ had drawn so much Distress and Injury upon him.”

THIS noble Vindication of himself, together with the warm Support of his Friends, Mr. *Holles*, Sir *Philip Stapleton*, Mr. *Pierpont*, Sir *William Lewis* \*, and the rest of that Party, defeated once more the Malice of his Enemies, who had the Mortification to find the Enquiry dropped, and to discover, that the House did not by any Means approve of these malicious Endeavours, which they took much Pains to extenuate and excuse, and with much Difficulty preserved themselves from the just Censure of the House, by a resolute Denial of the base Methods they had used in the Prosecution, and by the falsest and meanest Professions of a perfect Reconciliation with Sir *Philip Perceval*, but how well these Professions were observed will be shortly seen.

THE Crisis of this Affair happened between the fourteenth of *February*, 1645, and the twenty-fifth of the next Month, 1646; and about this Time it appears

---

\* Family Papers, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 562.

pears that Sir *Philip Perceval* accidentally engaged in a Matter which proved afterwards of great Service to his Family § : Lieutenant-General *Cromwell* even then aspiring to the Government of *Ireland*, he was engaged to assist him in it. — And it appears by several Letters which then passed between Sir *Philip* and Sir *Hardress Waller*, their common Friend, that out of a real Regard to the Interest of *Ireland*, which he thought it would greatly benefit, he very actively employed himself to promote this Business. — Though otherwise no great Favourer of the Person, as may be well presumed from what we have said of the Independants, among whom *Cromwell* was so eminent a Leader. And this was so well received by *Cromwell*, that he ever retained a grateful Remembrance of it, which he manifested afterwards to his Posterity in a very considerable Degree, when it was no Obstruction of his Views to do it.

THE Independants now growing every Day in Power, renewed their Attempts upon him †, and so soon after as the second of *April*, in the Year 1646, he received Advice, that one *Hill*, who had been Master-Baker of the *Irish* Army, during the Exercise of his Post of Commissary-General, and whom he had discarded from Male-Practices in his Office, was privately sent for out of *Ireland*, by the Lord *Lisle*, Sir *John Temple*, and that Cabal, to raise some Information against him, with respect to his Conduct in that important Employment. — Sir *Philip* neither desired to prevent, nor could he have prevented an Inquiry into this Affair if he had desired it, so that in the *July* following the Parliament appointed certain Persons to enquire again into these pretended Articles of Accusation. — But *Hill's* Evidence was found to be so frivolous and malicious, that no Report was made upon it; notwithstanding which, Sir *Philip* could never obtain the Justice of a proper Declaration of his Innocence, which  
he

---

§ Family Papers, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 536, & 544, Decemr 4<sup>th</sup>, 1645.  
 † Ibid. Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 565.

he follicited with the greateft Importunity, for above a Year together.

ALL these private Difficulties did not discourage him from acting vigorously in the Defence of his Country †; for in the same Month of *April*, 1646, it appears that his Castle at *Castlewarning* was besieged, and that it was bravely defended by an *English* Garrison, which he there maintained.

THE Disorders in *Ireland* were now risen to a higher and more dangerous Point than ever.—For the Treaty set on foot (in Consequence of the Cessation) in 1645, as well as the Supplies which the Catholics were to send the King, being frustrated by the Subtilties of the *Irish* Clergy.—The War was again renewed, as we have shewn, greatly aggravated by the Division of the Protestants, and by the Prospect of Assistance which appeared to the *Irish*, upon the Arrival of *Rinuocini*, Archbishop of *Fermo*, who, in Quality of Legate from Pope *Urban* the Eighth, landed at the River of *Kenmare*, in *Ireland*, the twenty-second of *October*, 1645.

THE Bulls and Acts published in that Kingdom from the Pope at this Time to justify and encourage all the Violence and Barbarity proceeding from the religious Zeal of the ignorant Wretches of that Party, created so great a Spirit among the Bigots and the Vulgar, that the Supreme Council (though not extremely well affected to this new Guest, of whom they were very jealous, not only as he had abridged their Power with the People, but as he was evidently sent to push Matters, rather for the Interest of the Clergy and Church than for the Nation) were obliged, at length, to congratulate his Arrival, which, however, they did not do till the seventh of *January* following.

THE King's Affairs in *England* being now grown into so bad a State, that neither Fear of Reproach, nor Scruples of Religion, were judged sufficient to counterballance his Necessities, the Marquis of *Ormond* was commanded to conclude a Peace with the *Irish*, which was done upon the thirtieth of *July*, 1646.

The

---

† Family Papers, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 575.

272 *A Genealogical History*

The chief Condition on the Part of the *Irish* being, that they should furnish a Body of ten thousand Men, for the Service of the King, against the Parliament of *England*.

IN order to obtain which, the King consented, among other Articles :

THAT the *Roman Catholics* should not be obliged to take the Oath of Supremacy.

THAT all Acts to the Prejudice of *Roman Catholics* since 1641, be repealed.

THAT all Castles, Garrisons, and Places of Command and Importance, be equally trusted to Protestants and Catholics.

THAT *Ireland* be declared by Parliament independant of *England*.

THAT the Plantations in *Connaught, Kilkenny, Clare, Thomond, Tipperary, Limerick, and Wicklow*, be repealed.

THAT an Act of Oblivion be passed, without Restriction,

THAT a Parliament be held the last Day of *November* next, viz. 1646.

AND that Incapacities for *Roman Catholics* to sit be removed.

THE Consequence of this Treaty was of infinite Importance to the *Irish*, for they not only obtained by it an entire and absolute Oblivion, of all those Actions in which they had been concerned since the beginning of their Rebellion, some of which were indeed of a very flagrant Dye.—But by abolishing the Plantations, they rooted out the Protestant Religion; and by other Articles, particularly that of chusing a Parliament in which they were to be admitted, they were sure to put the Government of the Nation absolutely into their own Hands after that Parliament should meet; till when, by an Article in the Treaty, twelve Commissioners (or any five of them) chosen by themselves, were to share the Power of the Government with the Lord-Lieutenant.

WHAT,

WHATEVER Part the King might act in this Affair, who is said to have had so great a Zeal for the Protestant Religion, and Establishment of the Church of *England*, that it was, and has ever been the Cry of his Party, that he suffered as a Martyr for his steady Adherence to it, or however his Resignation of the Protestant Religion, and all its Professors, in so great a Kingdom, to the Mercy of the *Roman* Catholics, or his Engagement to establish his Power (or, as it was pretended, the Protestant Religion) in *England*, by an Army of *Irish* Papists, might tally with his Professions, or how far the entire and unlimited Pardon of so severe a Rebellion might agree with Prudence, we shall not take upon us to determine.—But certain it is, that never any Men acted a more artful Part, than the Chiefs of the Supreme Council of the Confederate *Roman* Catholics, who were at this Time principally led by the Influence of the Lords *Muskerry*, *Taaf*, and *Dillon*.

FOR if the Treaty took Effect, as they really intended, a very sufficient Provision was made for the Interest and Security of their Party.—The Liberties and Independencies of their Country were maintained and vindicated, and assured to them by the Prince himself.—And their Religion, without providing for the Support of Bigottry, or without the Subversion of Property, established firmly.—More could never have been expected, nay desired, by any Nation inferior to its Neighbours, after the most successful War.—Yet this was obtained by a Party of People, who had long lived under Subjection to a foreign Power, and by no Means able to finish the War in the Bowels of their Country, by Way of Arms at least, in so short a Time as was absolutely necessary that she should.—This Wisdom appeared not only in the embracing such an Occasion, but in the Conditions of the Treaty, and above all, in that Stipulation for the Troops to assist the King, who would, in all human Probability, be put into a Condition there-

by to maintain the Articles of the Treaty, which nothing but the Ruin of the *English* Parliament could ever secure to them.——On the other hand, if it should not take the Effect desired, it must still have this inevitable Consequence, that it would render the King extremely odious to the People, and embitter the Parties in *England* to that Degree against each other, that a Conclusion of these Disorders, on the *English* Side, would be rendered in all Probability impracticable, or at least extremely tedious; and this was the Point the next to be wished by the Confederate Catholics, if the first was not to be attained.

THIS was one of those critical Events which happen to States, as well as private Men, which offered once by Fortune, and if then abused, never presented a second Time.

WE have seen it hitherto embraced with the utmost Sagacity, and Measures taken upon it with so much Prudence, that the Establishment of the *Roman* Catholics, and their Religion, seemed now to be secured to them, upon a Foundation more stable and certain than could ever have been expected: we have seen a War absurdly, rashly, and cruelly commenced, now brought, in all Appearance, to a most fortunate Conclusion for the Authors of it.——As we have done Justice in naming those who so prudently brought their own Affairs in that Kingdom to this Point; so the same Justice obliges us to name another Set of Men, with a very different Imputation on their Conduct; these are the Bishops and Clergy of the Catholic Party, who in a most amazing and frantic Manner crushed this great Prospect of their Party in its very Birth, and brought about, in the End, almost the Extirpation of their Nation, by a vain and senseless Prosecution of their corrupt and private Views.

RINUECINI, the Pope's Nuncio, perceiving that his Master was not likely to attain, under this Peace, the high Degree of Authority which he hoped from the Issue of the War; and the Bishops and Clergy not having obtained any Share of the Temporal Power,

Power of the State, nor recovered the Church Lands which they had lost at the Reformation, Particulars, which they ever have in View, though they will never be gratified in them by Men of Sense of any Denomination, they jointly and unanimously resolved, if possible, to break the Treaty.——In order to which, they convened (without any Colour of Authority) a Congregation of the Clergy at *Waterford*, where they began, by inveighing against the Peace, as not having provided carefully enough for the Advancement of Religion, and by not suffering it to be proclaimed in that City.——At the same time, they sent their Emissaries to inflame the People, upon the same Account, in other Parts of the Kingdom; and soon after, the Nuncio returned. Letters of Thanks and Apostolical Benediction to one *Molliffe*, a seditious Fryar, who had raised the Multitude, abused the Herald, and almost murdered the Magistrates who proclaimed the Peace at *Limerick*.——During this Interval, they laboured, by their Agents, to engage *Owen Roe O Neal*, the General of the *Irish* Army in *Ulster*, to their Party; to which the Prospect of private Advantage to himself, from the Continuance of the Publick Confusion, made him accede without much Difficulty.——This Agreement was made with so much Secrecy and Expedition, that the Lord Lieutenant, who was gone to *Kilkenny* to receive the Congratulations of the People upon the Peace, narrowly escaped being surprized by *Owen's* Army, which marched with the utmost Privacy to intercept his Return to *Dublin*.

AFTER this treacherous Action, their Views being no longer to be concealed, and their Party being strengthened by this Army, and afterwards by that commanded by *Preston*, who was General for the *Irish* in *Leinster*, they threw off the Mask, and the Convocation declared the Peace to be void, and inhibited all Persons to submit thereto, or to pay any Taxes, Impositions, or Contributions, which had been settled by that Agreement; and such was the sottish Bigotry of



276 *A Genealogical History*

the Common People, that they delegated an entire and absolute Power of governing and commanding, as well in Secular, as Ecclesiastical Matters, to the Pope's Nuncio,—who soon after, *viz.* on the twelfth of *August*, 1646, committed to Prison the Commissioners who had made the Peace, by Order of the General Assembly, and declared the Favourers of it guilty of Perjury.—The supreme Council, scandalized at this infamous and unwarrantable Proceeding, still continued to maintain the Peace, being supported by all the moderate and rational Men of that Religion. Upon which the Clergy, upon the eighteenth of *August*, decreed a Cessation of Divine Service.—After this, having marched their Armies under *Preston* and *O Neil* to *Kilkenny*, then the Seat of the Government of the Confederates, they seized and imprisoned the Lord *Muskerry*, and all the Members of the Supreme Council, excepting two (*Plunket* and *Darcy*, who entered into their Views;) and on the twenty-sixth of *September* abolished that Authority under which the War had been, till then, conducted by the *Irish*, and appointed, by a solemn Decree, a *new Council* with the same Powers, consisting of *four Bishops*, and *eight Laymen*, the most bigoted they could find in their whole Party; yet the Opposition of the sober and honest Party of the Confederates still continuing to this extravagant Usurpation of the Clergy, upon the fifth of *October* following the Nuncio pronounced a general Sentence of Excommunication on all such as should submit to the Peace.

THE Nuncio having, by these violent Measures, surmounted all Resistance, declared himself Generalissimo of the *Irish* Armies under *Preston* and *Owen Roe O Neil*, and at the latter End of the same Year, 1646, besieged *Dublin* with an Army of Sixteen thousand Foot, and Sixteen hundred Horse.

In the March to undertake this Siege\*, *Castle-warrington*, the last of the Castles left in the Possession  
of

---

§ Family Papers, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup>. 685.

of Sir *Philip Perceval*, was taken, and totally destroyed.

The Marquis of *Ormond* was now in *Dublin* with the shattered Remains of a Party, divided between its Attachment to the King, and their Interest and Affection to the Protestant Cause.

THERE was visibly no Way left to prevent the Nuncio's Party from taking the Place, and becoming in consequence Masters of the whole Kingdom, but by giving it up to the Parliament Party, who were ready to receive it, and able to defend it. Sir *Philip Perceval*, true to the just Interest of his Prince, and to the real Interest of both Nations, laboured so earnestly with the Marquis at this Juncture\*, by Letters to his Lady (all Commerce with the Marquis being forbidden by Parliament) that he almost brought him to take that Measure, which in the *June* following, 1647, he actually did take.—But, for the present, the Marquis obtained a Respite from this Extremity of Danger, almost miraculous, through the Differences between the two Generals of the *Irish*, *Preston* and *O Neil*, and the Jealousies of the *Leinster* and *Ulster* Armies; the former of which, though engaged in the Popish Quarrel, were of ancient *English* Descent, and consequently dreaded that of *Ulster*, who were composed of the old *Irish*, and visibly discovered a Design to extirpate the whole *English* Race, in the Conclusion of the Quarrel.—This greatly confounded the Operations of the *Irish*, and the Animosities among them rose at last to such a Point, that *O Neil* marched off with his Army upon the sixteenth of *November*, and *Preston* entered into a Treaty with the Marquis of *Ormond* to support the King. It was this faint Prospect (though it quickly vanished, by the Inconstancy of *Preston*, who soon after joined the Nuncio's Party again) that induced the Marquis to alter for that Time the Resolution which he had once taken; and upon that Occasion (having obtained Ammunition and Provision from

---

\* Family Papers, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup>. 645.

from the Parliament Fleet, by amusing them with Expectations of his complying with their Proposals) departed a little from that strict Faith and Honour which was so bright an Ornament to his Reputation.— But in Justice it must be added, that this was the only Instance of his Life in which he did it.

WE shall, at present, follow this detestable Conduct of the Nuncio and his Clergy no farther, than to shew that they came at length to propose the calling in of a Foreign Prince, and actually sent Agents to *Rome, Spain, France and Lorrain*; with Offers of the Protectorship of the Nation to the Pope, or any other Power who would assist them with the most Vigour.—Till at length they obliged the Royal Party among the Protestants (who had been too often amused by them, from the Hopes of Assistance for their Master) to resign their Powers, and to deliver up all the Places they yet retained in the Kingdom to the Parliament, who, acting but with one View, soon made themselves entire Masters of that Country, which still persisted in its bigoted Attachment to these Incendiaries so far, that the sensible Part of the Confederates were obstructed from making any Head against *Cromwell*, who, in a few Months, with a mere Handful of Men, subdued them, and afterwards punished their monstrous Folly and Iniquity with a very signal Severity.—This was the Issue of that Peace, which, if religiously adhered to, would have raised that People in a few Years to a Degree of Splendor in *Europe*, which they had never known before, and will probably never now experience, at least as a separate State.

SIR *Philip Perceval*, now entirely eased of all Care, after the Defence of his Estate, his Castles and Strong Holds, being all either in the Hands of the Enemy, or destroyed by them, passed the Remainder of the Year 1646, in a close Attachment to the Interest of the two Nations\*, and being chosen Member of Parliament

---

\* Family Papers, Vol. VI. No. 857.

liament for *Newport* in *Cornwal*, was eminently serviceable in that Station, though still persecuted in a most inveterate Matter by the Attempts and false Accusations of the Independants, against which he laboured incessantly to secure himself.

NOTWITHSTANDING this excessive Animosity of that Party, the World in general had a very high Sense of his Integrity and Worth\*, which was sufficiently discovered in *February* the same Year, 1646, when he was elected by the Province of *Ulster* a Commissioner to manage the Affairs of that Province, and of the Army there, in the *English* Parliament; a Trust of the greater Honour, as it was the general Complaint at that Time, that the Portion of Supply allowed by *England* for the whole Kingdom of *Ireland* was very unequally divided, through the Partiality of the Members of the different Provinces to their respective Counties: These Differences were then carried to an excessive Height; and yet his Integrity was in so high Esteem, that he was preferred, without Sollicitation, to this Employment for *Ulster*, the only Province in that Kingdom in which he had no Estate.

THE Respect and Esteem in which he then stood, was not confined to that Province only, that of *Munster*, in no degree jealous of his being employed for another Part of the Country, soon after discovered still a greater Dependance on him.—For the *Munster* Army under the Earl of *Inchequin*, whose Interest he had strenuously and successfully supported the Year before, when the Lord *Lisle* (being appointed Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland* by the Parliament) had used him extremely ill, and would have modelled that Army in the independent Way, unanimously petitioned him from *Cork*†, upon the 28th of *May*, 1647, in a very handsome Address, to take upon him the Management of their Affairs in *England*.——This was a Commission, as Things then stood, of great Difficulty and

---

\* Family Papers, Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup>. 713.

† Family Collections, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup>. 804, 805.

and Hazard ; but he undertook it chearfully without any Consideration of Advantage, upon this Principle, which he ever professed, that he would always willingly contribute his Life and Fortune for the Publick or his Friend. \* The first Traces we find of this Transaction, are in a Letter from the Earl of *Inchiquin* to Sir *Philip Perceval* the Beginning of *May*, 1647, wherein he says ;

“ All the Officers about me having cast out Words of  
 “ the Advantage that we might derive from your As-  
 “ sistance, if we could obtain it, to sollicit the Parlia-  
 “ ment upon all Occasions, which all of them did ear-  
 “ nestly wish for : I told them, that if my Interest in  
 “ you could prevail, I would employ it to get them that  
 “ Favour ; but because I supposed that if you did un-  
 “ dertake it, their Desires being written, would give  
 “ your Endeavours in their Behalf somewhat the more  
 “ Force, it would be convenient that, along with my  
 “ Letters, I should send that which the Major General  
 “ *Jephson* will get done as soon as we meet ; and much  
 “ Fear they are in, that you will not undergo the Trouble.

† THIS Letter was soon after followed by another from the whole Council of War of the *Munster* Army, dated the 28th of *May*, 1647, in these Words :

S I R,

“ THE chief Officers of the Forces in the Ser-  
 “ vice of the Parliament within this Province  
 “ having met together, and, calling to Mind the un-  
 “ wearied Labours and Endeavours upon all Occasions,  
 “ faithfully and constantly expressed by you in their Be-  
 “ half ever since the Declaration made in *July*, 1644,  
 “ they have commanded me to return you their  
 “ Thanks in their Names, and to let you know, that  
 “ the Knowledge they have of your Integrity, Worth  
 “ and Abilities, and the great Assurance they have of  
 “ your good Affections for the Advancement of the  
 “ Parliament-Service every where, without any par-  
 “ ticular Respects, have moved and encouraged them  
 “ to

\* Family Letters, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 804, & 805.

† Ibid.

“ to entreat you, that you would be pleased to take  
“ upon you the friendly Charge to follicit the honour-  
“ rable House of Parliament from time to time for  
“ all Things that you shall conceive necessary for their  
“ Service, and the Encouragement of the Army, as  
“ you shall think fit, or shall receive Instructions or  
“ Directions from them. And so, &c.

*By Order of the whole Council of War.*

D. L.

AFTER this, we find him constantly employed in defending the Conduct of the Earl of *Inchequin*\*, and in pressing Supplies for the Army in those Parts, and not long after he presented to the House, and defended one of the most poignant Remonstrances of that Time, which was transmitted from that Army to him by a Deputation of three Officers, Lieutenant Colonel *Stubbes*, Major *Choppyng*, and Major *Elfyng*, and backed by a Letter from the General, *desiring him to engage Mr. Hollis, Sir Philip Stapilton, and the rest of his Friends in the House, to join with him in the justification of that Measure.*

FROM this Time forward, *Sir Philip Perceval* entered into private Engagements with the Earl of *Inchequin*, to bring over the Forces under his Command in *Munster* to the Assistance of the Parliament, which was every Day treated with more Indignity by the Independant Party, and the Army under their Direction. — These Engagements could not be so secretly carried, but they were suspected by the Leaders of that Side; so that, animated both by a virulent State, and by a necessary Regard to their own Security, they resolved to make another Attempt in Parliament upon him.

In order to which, upon the fifth of *July, 1647*, they obtained a Vote, that no Man who consented to  
the

---

\* See Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup> 837, 3d July 1647, from the Lord *Inchequin* to *Sir Philip Perceval*.

the Cessation should sit in Parliament.\*——What relates to this Affair, we may properly give out of one of his own Letters to Sir *Charles Coot*, after Earl of *Mountrath*, then President of *Connaight*.

July 23, 1647.

“ **T**OUCHING my own Particular†, I would  
 “ gladly give your Lordship some Account.  
 “ I was, by some Kindred of mine in the West, im-  
 “ portuned to take on me a Burges’s Place, which  
 “ was long reserved for me ; and, truly, if I had not  
 “ been over-ruled by some worthy Men of *Ireland*,  
 “ who did perss me, that I could not, with good  
 “ Conscience, refuse it in relation to that neglected  
 “ Country, I had not undergone the Burthen. Not  
 “ long after (you know the Man §) one made private  
 “ Whisperings, and at length his Friends got a Vote,  
 “ that no Man who consented to the Cessation should  
 “ sit.——The Order I send you, and I forbear to  
 “ sit until the Committee have given their Judgment.  
 “ If they make a Vote, that no Man that ever was at  
 “ *Oxford* should sit, I shall be content ; and, truly (as  
 “ Things are) however my Adversary in Malice did  
 “ think to hurt me, I believe he does me much Cour-  
 “ tesy, though he may do *Ireland* much Harm ; for,  
 “ indeed, I had no private Considerations before me,  
 “ as he had, and I am sure I have not lost in Reputa-  
 “ tion by it, whatever he has done ; and I am confi-  
 “ dent I shall have much more Quiet at last than he.  
 “ I crave your Lordship’s Pardon for this long Letter,  
 “ assuring you, that I shall ever contribute my best  
 “ Endeavours, as I always have done, for the Publick,  
 “ and for my private Friends, among whom I shall  
 “ count it an Honour to serve you. And so, with my  
 “ Service to your Lady, and Prayers for you·all,  
 “ I remain,

*Your Lordship’s, &c.*

P. P.

It

\* Whitelock’s Memorials.

† Family Collections, Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup>. 857. § Sir John Temple.

It appears by this Letter, that upon the Promulgation of this Resolution, Sir *Philip Perceval* resolved to abstain from Parliament till it was agreed by a Committee appointed for that Purpose, who were the Persons affected by it; but finding that it was solely calculated to keep him from the House, and that no further Proceedings would be had in that Affair, if they could obtain that End,—he returned before the End of that Month, and then desired that a full Enquiry might be made into his Conduct:— Upon which Occasion he made the two following Speeches, which are exactly copied from the Original, in his own Hand-writing.

\* MR. SPEAKER,

“ I HAVE seen a Vote of this House, passed the  
“ fifth of this Month, forbidding every Member  
“ of this House to sit in several Cases, and particu-  
“ larly if they be guilty of consenting to the Cessa-  
“ tion made in *Ireland*, which I used all possible  
“ Means to prevent, by providing for the Army in  
“ their extremest Wants and Discontents, to the en-  
“ dangering of my own Life and Estate; yet, because  
“ the Words may admit of a double Construction,  
“ and that I have no Desire to give any Offence to the  
“ House, conceiving the Intent of the Votes to be only  
“ to discover the Truth of Mens Actions and Affee-  
“ tions, and finding, as well by Examination of my own  
“ Conscience, as by Advice of Counsel, that I never  
“ did any thing contrary to any Ordinance, Declara-  
“ tion, or Order, of both or either Houses, I humbly  
“ desire that I may be heard with my Evidences and  
“ Proofs for clearing of my Innocence to them, That  
“ if the whole Course of my Actions (which will best  
“ testify my Conduct) do shew, that I have not only  
“ lost a fair Estate for adhering to the Parliament,  
“ but

O O 2



284 *A Genealogical History*

“ but spent and engaged the Remainder, I may stand  
 “ upright in the good Opinion of this honourable  
 “ House, which I value equal with my Life.

“ Sir, I am persuaded, it is not your Intention that  
 “ this Evil be revenged on any who were not privy to  
 “ the Design, who neither desired nor occasioned it,  
 “ who were ruined by it, and laboured to prevent it,  
 “ and to let the Soul escape who sinned in converting  
 “ the Means of the Publick to their private Purse, or  
 “ did cause Want or Discontent in that Army,  
 “ which were the Pretences for making the Cessation ;  
 “ that God knows, before whom I speak, my con-  
 “ stant Endeavours and my many Disbursements, and  
 “ many Witnesses, without Exception, I yet have to  
 “ testify how averse my Soul was to it, and how real  
 “ I have ever been in the Service of the Parliament  
 “ both there and here.

“ THIS was laid to my Charge above a Month,  
 “ ago, and a Committee appointed to examine it,  
 “ and I have very often attended many of them ; but  
 “ so great has been the Business of this House, that I  
 “ could never yet be heard.——I never sought this  
 “ Employment, nor had any Engagement upon me  
 “ therein, other than the Publick Good, and there-  
 “ fore I humbly claim it, as a Right belonging  
 “ to me as a Member of this House, to be heard ;  
 “ and, as I am able instantly to make it appear, that  
 “ the Prosecution against me is only for my Zeal  
 “ in your Service, I desire the Orders of this House  
 “ may not be prejudicial to me, or the Place I serve  
 “ for, until the Matter be examined.

“ IT is almost four Years ago since the first Cessa-  
 “ tion was made, which I attended, against my Will,  
 “ by Command of those whose Authority it was Death  
 “ to disobey.——Since my coming away, there  
 “ have been twenty, as I take it.——When, I say, the  
 “ first Cessation could not be avoided,——I was so far  
 “ from yielding any willing Consent, that I objected  
 “ all that could be urged against it ; and, as soon as it

“ was

“ was concluded, I requested that State to be quit of  
“ the Charge, and as soon as I could get the Parlia-  
“ ment’s Accompts for Fifty thousand Pounds cleared,  
“ I deserted my Fortune there, and, with the rest of  
“ the well-affected Protestants, did so use my Endeav-  
“ our, that we prevented any Peace (then daily ex-  
“ pected to ensue) and that at a Time when no Part  
“ of *Ireland* was in a Posture of Defence (the North  
“ excepted) and when it was not doubted, if the Peace  
“ had ensued, that Twenty thousand of the Rebels  
“ should have arrived in this Kingdom, to have kept  
“ a continual War here ; and I came hither, contrary  
“ to many great Invitations, when the Parliament  
“ Condition was extremely low.

“ SIR *John Borlace*, who was Lord Justice, who  
“ confirmed the Cessation, and who, by Act of Coun-  
“ cil, required Obedience thereunto by all Men, has  
“ been by the same Hand recommended to this House,  
“ rewarded and employed, so likewise Sir *George*  
“ *Skurley*, and many others.

“ NEITHER could any Man live there, but he  
“ must consent to it. The Treasurer of Wars recei-  
“ ved Money of the *Irish*, and paid the Army for  
“ the Time, so did the Commissary of the Clothes,  
“ and forty other Officers, who have been employed  
“ and rewarded by the Parliament.

“ I TENDERED my Justification to divers of the  
“ Committee of both Kingdoms, now almost three  
“ Years since, when the same Person had raised some  
“ Suspicions of me, as I have many times since done  
“ to most of the Committee of *Irish* Affairs, and to  
“ the Lord Lieutenant as soon as he was appointed ;  
“ and his Lordship, after much Time spent in De-  
“ bate, was pleased then to declare, that he could find  
“ nothing in Word or Deed to except against me,—  
“ and that it was only Animosity in others ; and now  
“ though many of my Witnesses are dead and gone  
“ beyond-sea, and when it is declared by the Articles  
“ of *Dublin*, that all Protestants of *Ireland* shall be as  
“ free

“ free as any here that never offended, I am never-  
 “ theless ready to come to a full Trial.

“ MR. SPEAKER,——if there be any well-affected  
 “ to this House belonging to that Kingdom, as there  
 “ are many, I appeal to their Testimonies,——two  
 “ or three excepted, whose Ill-will I have gained by  
 “ doing you faithful Service.

*Another Speech upon the same Occasion.*

MR. SPEAKER,

“ AS to a Certificate alledged to be subscribed  
 “ **A** by me (among others) after the finishing the  
 “ Agreement of the Cessation, I remember that there  
 “ was a Certificate drawn, and signed by all who there  
 “ attended, before I knew it, or ever heard of it, or  
 “ saw it; but whether it went to the Effect of that  
 “ now mentioned or not, I cannot remember, and it  
 “ was after that all Things were agreed on between  
 “ the Lord of *Ormond* and Commissioners of the Re-  
 “ bels (with whom he alone treated) and I remember  
 “ not that I signed it; but if I then signed it, being  
 “ commanded thereunto, and being a Ministerial  
 “ Officer then attending there, by express Order of  
 “ the Civil and Martial Power, it is humbly offered  
 “ to Consideration; first, that my Signing or not Sign-  
 “ ing could not be material, as to the farthering or  
 “ hindering the Cessation, which consequently ren-  
 “ ders that Certificate less useful any way; secondly,  
 “ that my Refusal to sign might prove penal unto me,  
 “ as well in Respect to the Circumstances of Time  
 “ and Place, being then among many Officers and  
 “ Soldiers who were then full of Wants and Discon-  
 “ tents, and resolved that Way, as also in regard of  
 “ apparent Danger of Ruin and Destruction to my-  
 “ self and my Posterity, in respect of my Accompts,  
 “ I having then Accompts and Discharges for Sixty  
 “ thousand Pounds and more. The Parliament also  
 “ might have suffered Loss and Disservice, if I had  
 “ denied any such Commands at that Time; and it  
 “ is

“ is also to be considered, that the Rebels had then  
“ almost surrounded us with a numerous Body, under  
“ the Command of *Castlehaven*, during the Treaty;—  
“ that the Treaty was held within Hearing of the  
“ Rebels Ordnance;—that the Rebels had within  
“ four or five Days before the Conclusion of the  
“ Treaty taken ten of our Garrisons within four or  
“ five Miles of the Place, so that we who attended  
“ there were in danger daily of being then swallowed  
“ up by them, while the Soldiers that yielded up those  
“ Garrisons, came daily in a starving Condition unto  
“ the Place of Treaty, begging a Supply of their  
“ Wants, and while most of the Colonels of our Party  
“ were attending the Treaty, and a small Party only  
“ of the Army Abroad making towards the Assistance  
“ of my Lord *Moore*, who was then twenty Miles  
“ off, in Opposition to *Owen Roe O Neil* and *Preston*,  
“ whose Forces were united and approaching. In  
“ fine, it is notoriously known, that I always disaf-  
“ fected any Cessation or Peace with the Rebels or  
“ their Adherents, and that I heartily desired and zeal-  
“ ously endeavoured a thorough Prosecution of the  
“ War is very apparent, as I conceive, by what I  
“ have said, and other indisputable Evidence.

“ IN all my Words and Actions I have ever ex-  
“ pressed myself well affected to the Parliament, and  
“ have always acknowledged there and here, that we  
“ had been swallowed up by the Rebels, if, by the  
“ Goodness and Wisdom of the Parliament, and the  
“ Blessing of God on their Endeavours, we had not  
“ been preserved: And I was before, and at, and after  
“ the Cessation, extremely grieved and afflicted at the  
“ making of the same, which I then expressed to  
“ many of the best affected there, some whereof  
“ are now here; and I did all that in me lay to hin-  
“ der it, by procuring Subsistence for the Army, and  
“ to keep off any Want or Necessity, that might give  
“ an Occasion or Colour for it, beyond any Means  
“ allotted me, and beyond the Expectations of most  
“ Men upon the Place.

“ IN Manifestation of my Dislike of it, I did  
 “ (when I saw the Treaty was likely to proceed) be-  
 “ fore the Meeting, collect and reduce to Writing  
 “ several good Reasons against the making of the  
 “ Cessation, expressing the Dangers which were there-  
 “ by likely to ensue to the Religion, and to the Pro-  
 “ testant Party, particularly, in that it was feared that  
 “ the Rebels would be continued in the Churches,  
 “ and also in the Estates which they had torn from us  
 “ (whereof I had then Two thousand Pounds *per*  
 “ *Annum*, and since much more in their Hands;) and  
 “ that it was also feared that the Army would be sent,  
 “ or permitted to go into *England*; which Reasons  
 “ I communicated unto Sir *William Parsons*, Sir *Samuel*  
 “ *Mayert*, Sir *Paul Davys*, Sir *William Usher*,  
 “ and many others, who were well noted in *Ireland*,  
 “ to carry good Affections to the Parliament, who  
 “ gave me their Assistance therein, and I made the  
 “ best Use thereof that I could to prevent any Cessa-  
 “ tion, or any Mischief to fall upon our Party.

“ AT the Treaty, which I most unwillingly at-  
 “ tended, I did as much as in me lay, to oppose  
 “ the particular Propositions and Desires of the  
 “ Rebels by Word and Writing, as some Persons  
 “ of Quality, then also attending there by Order,  
 “ and now here, can testify.

“ I COULD not have had any private End or Ad-  
 “ vantage by it, my Lands being then in the Rebels  
 “ Hands, which I could have no Hopes to recover  
 “ during the Cessation (which gave our Possessions to  
 “ to the Rebels) and thereof, or for any other my  
 “ Sufferings, I could expect no other Satisfaction,  
 “ but by a thorough and effectual Prosecution of the  
 “ War, which I did most earnestly desire and endea-  
 “ vour from the first Moment of the Rebellion to  
 “ this Hour, as appears by all my precedent and sub-  
 “ sequent Actions, and is notoriously known to all  
 “ those that were well acquainted with me.

“ SOON after the Cessation concluded, I joined  
“ with the well affected Protestants there in framing a  
“ Petition for Agents to be allowed them to oppose  
“ the Papists upon the then intended Peace, which  
“ then, and not till then, I understood the Cessation  
“ was intended for an Introduction unto, I did there,  
“ and at *Oxford* upon the Treaty, do and perform  
“ faithfully all that lay in my Power for opposing the  
“ Rebels, and for preserving the Interest of *England*,  
“ according to the Act of the Adventurers, and from  
“ thence I came to the Parliament almost three Years  
“ since, declining the Remainder of my own Fortune  
“ and Estate in the King’s Quarters, when Things  
“ seemed very doubtful on this Side.

“ THERE did not arrive there, to my Knowledge,  
“ or that ever I heard of, any of those Orders, Let-  
“ ters, Votes, or Declarations made by both or either  
“ Houses of Parliament, and they cited also several  
“ Precedents of Cessations made in that Kingdom  
“ and other Places.

“ IN *February*, 1643, the Honourable the House  
“ of Commons declared, that no Orders of the Lord  
“ of *Ormond* should be of any Force, and that both  
“ Houses would justify and maintain them who should  
“ oppose any Power derived from his Lordship, ever  
“ since the Knowledge whereof I never obeyed any  
“ Order or Direction of his Lordship, but opposed  
“ his Proceedings to the utmost of my Power in all  
“ Places, and all at my own Charges, now near three  
“ Years together.

“ OTHERS, who gave Orders for the Committee  
“ of Treaty of Cessation, and all Matters preparatory  
“ unto it, without which it could not have been, and  
“ for confirming and publishing the same as soon as  
“ made, commanding all sorts of People to give Obe-  
“ dience thereunto, without which it had been ines-  
“ sectual, and divers others who lived under the Cef-  
“ sation two or three Years, after departed thence,  
“ and came unto this City, received Pay there during  
“ their Stay, and are approved of as worthy Persons,

“ and some of them preferred, and some of them re-  
 “ warded for their Service, which I grieve not at ;  
 “ — it is far from me, I wish them no harm ; nor  
 “ can I doubt of receiving the same Measure, being  
 “ neither privy nor Party to any Plot or Design of  
 “ the Cessation, but having done all that I could to  
 “ prevent it before it was made, and to oppose it af-  
 “ terwards, or any Peace to ensue ; and having, so  
 “ soon as it was possible for me to make up the Ac-  
 “ counts of that Army for the Parliament, deserted  
 “ that Place, and ever since constantly and faithfully  
 “ here attended and served ; nor am I conscious that,  
 “ in the whole Course of my Life, I have been guilty  
 “ of any Failure of Duty to the Parliament.”

By this noble Method of proceeding, he so checked  
 the Fury of the Attack then made upon him\*, and so  
 baffled his Antagonists, that, notwithstanding their Num-  
 bers in the House, he was cleared with Reputation, as  
 to this Particular, so often objected to him between the  
 twenty-third of *July* and the first of *August*, 1647,  
 when he is found again established in his Seat in Par-  
 liament.

His Escape out of this dangerous Affair is the more  
 extraordinary, and infinitely to his Honour, because  
 the Independants and the Army were now in so high a  
 Degree the Masters of the Parliament, that Mr. *Hol-  
 lis*, Sir *Philip Stapleton*, and the most leading Mem-  
 bers of the Presbyterian Party (who were about the  
 same Time impeached by the Army, with a View to  
 clear the House of them) finding all Opposition so  
 very dangerous, upon the twentieth of *July*, 1647†,  
 petitioned the House to have Leave to withdraw for  
 six Months, until the Publick Affairs were settled,  
 then to return to their Trials:—— To which the  
 Army, who only wanted to free themselves from their

---

\* Family Collections.

† Whitlocke's Memorials.

their Obstruction to their Measures, immediately consented.

THEY who were esteemed the boldest and most invincible Spirits, of his Party, thus subdued, it could have been no Wonder or Matter of Reproach, if Sir *Philip* had yielded to the same Torrent.——But, in the Place of Flying, when the Publick was deserted by most other Men, he then thought it most incumbent on him to exert himself, not only by remaining in the House, and concurring in the Opposition, but by advancing into the most eminent Station among those few brave Men, who had the Resolution to act this bold and honest Part.

FOR, about this Time the Commons, being justly jealous of the Designs and Power of the Army, and thinking it might be yet possible to defend themselves against them, had new modelled the Militia, which before was of the Independant Stamp\*.——But the Army advancing nearer *London*, and its Influence prevailing, their Courage failed: The House repealed their former Order, and voted the Militia again into the Hands of the Army Faction.

WHEREUPON the City taking a great Alarm†, entered into Subscriptions and Agitations at *Skinners-Hall* to resist the Encroachments of the Army, and upon the twenty-sixth of the said Month the Lord-Mayor and Aldermen, and Common-Council-Men of *London*, petitioned the House in a reproachful Manner, to put the Militia again into the Hands from whence, for fear of the Army, it had been removed; complaining, that the Sense of their Court had not been taken since the last Alteration:——This Application was seconded by many Apprentices, and a great Mob, with these Demands.

1. That the Order for the Change of the Militia of the City of *London* be repealed ‡.

P p 2

2. THAT

---

\* *Whitlocke's Memorials.*

† *Ibid.*

‡ *Ibid.*



2. THAT a late pretended Declaration [*that those who act to get Subscriptions are Traytors*] be revoked.
3. THAT all Members of the House, particularly the eleven Members impeached by the Army, be called into the House, and act as a free Parliament.

THIS disorderly Rout forcing the Doors, entered into the House of Commons\*, and there stood, in a very violent Manner crying, vote, vote, with their Hats on, till Seven of the Clock that Evening, when they compelled the House to pass the Vote concerning the Militia in the Form that they desired.

BOTH Houses, after this great and unparalleled Violence, (which though it proceeded from a good Principle, was of a direct Tendency to subvert the Liberty of Parliament) not well knowing in what Method to direct their Conduct, having met upon the next Day, which was the twenty-seventh, adjourned to the thirtieth of *July*.

UPON that Day, to the great Astonishment of the whole Nation, it appeared, that upon the Meeting of both Houses, that their Speakers, with a great Number of their Members, were gone over to the Army, among whom were many of those most eminently active against all the late Insolencies and Actions of of that Body †.

THIS extraordinary Event is the most difficult to be understood of any in the whole History of that Time.—They left the Parliament, pretending, that the Riot of the 26th of *July* had made it dangerous to stay; but it should seem, that the real Sources of that Action could have been no other than these; first, a Fear that the Army was now upon the Point of making themselves Masters of all, and would totally  
ruin

---

\* Whitlocke's Memorials.

† Ibid.

‡ Ibid.

rain those who did not thus make their Peace in time; or, secondly, That they thought the Army was going to restore the King without them, and that they were desirous, for their own Security, to bear a Part in that Merit.

BE that as it will, it is certain, that this was a Conjunction of the most excessive Hazard\*; notwithstanding which, some of the most resolute Members, among whom Sir *Philip Perceval* was one, still remained determined to do their best and latest Offices for their Country;—the Lords chusing the Lord *Grey*, and the Commons Mr. *Pelham*, Speakers of their respective Houses for the time being.

AFTER this†, they proceeded the same Day, with all possible Vigour, to resist the Storm expected soon to fall upon them: They voted *that the King should come to London; that the Militia of the City should have Power to raise such Forces as they should think fit for the Defence of the City; that they might chuse a Commander in Chief, to be approved of by the House; and he to chuse Officers, to be approved of by the Militia.*— And such Expedition was used, that the Sheriff and Common-Council having attended the House that Morning, carried back these Resolutions to the City, who, in a Common-Council in the same Afternoon, elected Major-General *Massej* to command the Forces in Chief; and the Militia Reformadoes, Officers, &c. were appointed to appear the next Morning in *St. James's Fields*, to be ranged in proper Regiments.

NEXT Morning, being *Saturday, July 31*, the Forces mustered in *St. James's Fields*, and made a great Appearance‡.—The brave Members met again; and pursued their vigorous Resolutions, giving Orders *for staying and listing of Horses in the City, and shutting up all Shops therein*: They likewise received a Declaration from their absent Speakers and Members

---

\* Whitelocke's Memorials,

† Ibid.

‡ Ibid.

Members with the Army, who, after a very hard March, had advanced towards them that Night as far as *Uxbridge*. They likewise received Letters from the Army, in the usual Cant of their Leaders, pretending to be very tender of the City; but that they laid to Heart so much the terrible Insults offered to the Parliament on *Monday* the 20th of *July*, *That, as God shall enable them, they will use their best Endeavours for Preservation of the Parliament from Violence.*—Notwithstanding which, the City published a Declaration against the Army, and in Defence of the Privilege of Parliament, and of the King; and Major-General *Massej*, Sir *William Walley*, and Major-General *Poyntz*, lifted the Reformadoes, and prepared for the Defence of the City with the utmost Diligence.

IN all these warm and vigorous Measures\*, Sir *Philip Perceval* was most eminently resolute and active; and the next Day, being *Sunday* the first of *August*, in the Afternoon, he was appointed by the House, with Sir *William Lewes* and Mr. *Oldefworth*, to prepare Letters to be sent to the King; the Commissioners with the King, to the Commissioners with the Army, and Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, and therein to enclose the Votes of both Houses, for his Majesty's coming to such Place as both Houses should determine.

THE next Day†, being *Monday* the Second, the House, unwilling to appear Abettors or Approvers of the Riot, of which the Army complained, appointed a Committee to receive Informations, and to examine who were the Actors, Promoters, Abettors and Encouragers, or Parties to that Tumult; of which Committee Sir *Philip* was appointed one.

THIS Day the Army advanced as far as *Calnebrook*‡, within seventeen Miles of *London*, whereupon a general Panick began to seize the People§. The Borough of *Southwark* petitioned to be under no Officers

\* Journal of the House of Commons.

† Ibid. ‡ Ibid.

§ Whitlocke's Memorials.

cers but those of the Generality of their Borough. Many Thousand Citizens in like manner petitioned the Common-Council for a Composure ;—— but in such a disorderly Manner, that General *Poyntz* was obliged to fall in upon them with his Troop to disperse them, which he did, after having killed and wounded many of them ; —— The very Common-Council began to waver ; they sat late, and declared the Danger of a new War,——and resolved to write to *Fairfax*, the General of the Army, the next Day. These strong Symptoms of an approaching Desertion of the City, upon which only the Parliament then relied, were very sufficient to induce the Generality of Men to have withdrawn, as speedily as they could, for their own Security : But there were Men produced in that Age of more than common Virtue ; they kept their Seats, and attended to their Duty\* ; and this Day added Sir *Philip Perceval*, Sir *Robert Pye*, and *Robert Harley* to the Committee of Safety appointed to join the Militia of the City of London, for the Defence of the King, the Parliament, and the City.

UPON *Tuesday*, the third of *August*, the Army rendezvoused at *Hounslow-beath*, within ten Miles of *London* ; and the Terror of their Approach was such, that the Borough of *Southwark* declared for them.—A Body of the City Troops were beaten by a third of their Number, detached from the Army. The City was in utter Confusion, expecting hourly to be sacked and plundered, and fourteen Lords, and above a hundred of the Commons, retired to the Camp at *Hounslow*.—— Sir *Philip Perceval*, supported by his Courage and Virtue, remained unshaken in this great Storm, and was this Day *Chairman* of that great Committee which the House appointed to prepare Instructions for a Committee to be ordered to go to the Army, as also a Letter desiring Major-General *Brown* to attend the Service of the House.—— The Time pressing so much, Sir *Philip Perceval* reported the Instructions the same Day for  
the

---

\* Journal of the House of Commons.

296 *A Genealogical History*

the Committee to be sent to the Army, and also the Letter ordered to be written to General Brown; to which the House having assented, they were immediately carried by Sir *Philip Perceval* to the Lords for their Concurrence. — He likewise reported from the Committee some Resolutions and Proposals in relation to the settling Affairs between the Parliament and the Army, which were re-committed, and, upon a second Report, being agreed to, were also carried by him to the Lords, and received their Concurrence.

It is unnecessary to pursue this Matter so far, as to give an Account of the same Concessions of the City, and the triumphant Entry of the Army. — It is sufficient to observe, that after this Day the Army were entire Masters of the Parliament, who never thought any more to act, but under their Direction, though they were kept together for some Years afterwards, to do the Drudgery, and to bear the Scandal of the Measures necessary to support that flagrant Usurpation.

It is equally needless to add any Encomiums on the Conduct of Sir *Philip Perceval*, who thus presented himself in the Gap, against those who invaded the Liberty of his Country, and there maintained his Ground, in the signal Manner we have shewn, to the latest Gasps of the Nation's Freedom.

AFTER this fatal Turn, he left *London*, and went into the West, near *Bristol*, to see the Duke of *Ormond*, and some of his Relations in that Country\*; from thence he went to *Cambridge* to visit his Son, then established at that University; and after that remained at *Audley-End*, with the Earl of *Suffolk*, who was his great Friend, for a considerable Time, thinking by this entire Neglect of public Affairs (in which he could be no longer serviceable) to lessen the Keenness of the Malice of the Party, which he had so long, though so unsuccessfully opposed.

BUT

---

\* Family Collections ut supra, Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup> 906.

BUT they had already met with too much Obstruction from his Activity, and retained too much Fear of his Parts and Courage, not to endeavour to prevent his Return, to disturb them any more in that Station, where his Place was still open for him.—How to bring about his Ruin was then grown the more difficult, since he had been so honourably cleared; as to that important Particular of his Concernment in the Treaty of Cessation.—But the Lord *Lisle*, and Sir *John Temple*, pursuing still their ancient Virulence against him, were very active in this honourable Employment; and proceeded with so much Diligence, that during the Absence of Sir *Philip Perceval* they procured one *Richard Wine*†, who had been an Agent under *Hill*, the chief Baker of the *Irish Army*, formerly mentioned, to come up to *London*, to renew the Charge against Sir *Philip*, with relation to the Exercise of his Place as Commissary-General in that Army.

WE have already observed, that this Complaint had been referred in *July* 1646, to certain Persons, appointed by the House of Commons to make Enquiry into it; but the Depositions of *Hill* appeared so frivolous and malicious, that they could not find any Matter to ground the least Censure upon: the utmost Effects of their Fury at that Time could extend no farther, than to make no Report at all, and to leave the Matter in suspense, to be taken up again when a more favourable Opportunity should offer.

THEY imagined that this Opportunity was now come: the Independants being without Controll in Parliament, they thought \* their Numbers sufficient to carry any Point. This *Wine* was therefore directed to present a Petition in *Hill* his Master's Name, that the Examination of his Master's former Complaint, in *July* 1646, might be revived; which Petition he delivered in, both to the House of Lords and Commons, upon the eighteenth of *September*, 1647.

SIR

† Family Letters, Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup>. 912.

\* Ibid.

298 *A Genealogical History*

SIR *Philip Perceval*, alarmed at this new Attack, but fortified in his Integrity, returned to Parliament §, and took his Seat again before the twenty-first of that Month.

THE twenty-eighth of *September* was the Day appointed for the Consideration of this Petition \*. But he defended himself so handsomely on that Occasion, and the Malice of his Enemies appeared in so strong a Light, that the House, even as it was then modelled, would not proceed any farther in it at that Time.— The Persons so inveterate against him, being obliged to content themselves once more with leaving the Matter in a State of Suspence.

SIR *Philip Perceval*, conscious of his own Innocence †, and well knowing, that as Affairs then went, this Delay, (which was evidently intended to his Prejudice) would prove fatal to him, upon the fourth of *October*, with his usual Spirit, petitioned the House “ That the said *Wine*, being a Person of wretched Character, and of no Note, and his own Character being so much concerned by his vile Suggestions, might be required to give Security to be forth-coming when the Matter of his Complaint should be heard. He shewed also, that the Allegations of this Petition, and the Facts of which he was accused, had been long before sufficiently and fully canvassed by the Order of the House, to his own Honour. He likewise set forth the Malice of the Prosecution, and the Baseness of Sir *John Temple*, and the rest of his Enemies, concluding “ with an earnest Prayer to be immediately examined.”

THE House received the Petition, but proceeded not upon it ; and in this uneasy Situation he remained, unable to bring this Matter to any Issue: yet still continuing to act the same Part in Parliament that he had ever done, giving all the Obstruction in his Power to the Measures of the Independants, supporting and assisting the Interests of the Earl of *Inchiquin*, and his Army,

§ Family Collections, Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup> 912.

\* *Ibid.*

† *Ibid.* N<sup>o</sup> 913. Ex Autograph.

Army, who were now firmly resolved, upon the first favourable Opportunity, to declare in favour of the Parliament, (if they could have disengaged themselves from the Influence of *Cromwell*, and the *English Army*) or in favour of any Party that was most likely to preserve the Constitution, in Opposition to a Body of Men, who, under the public Profession of Liberty, had enslaved the three Kingdoms. — These Principles and Resolutions not long after shewed themselves, when the Earl and his Army quitted the Parliament, as they still called themselves, and went over to the King's Interest, in the following Year. — Sir *Philip Perceval* had, by his Conduct, Counsels, and Interest with that General and Army, the whole Merit of this Change, but he did not live to see the Effects of it. — He continued, however, as long as he could act at all, to persevere in the same Views, and acted upon the same Plan; which is evident from the following Letter from the *Irish Army*, transmitt'd to him but a few Days before his Death †.

*From the Army in Munster.*

\* S I R,

“ WE having formerly emboldened ourselves to  
 “ recommend unto your Care and Favour the  
 “ Representation of our Condition and Affairs, unto  
 “ the High and Honourable Court of Parliament, and  
 “ finding ourselves at this Time more especially occa-  
 “ sioned and necessitated to importune your Courtesy,  
 “ we shall desire that from the Bearer you would un-  
 “ derstand, how great a Misfortune we find ourselves  
 “ depressed under, by the Subtilty and Malice of our Ad-  
 “ versaries, whose cunning Practices have brought us  
 “ under a Notion and Esteem of being disaffected to,  
 “ and revolting from the Parliament's Service, for which  
 “ they think they have a sufficient Ground, from a  
 “ late Remonstrance, framed and subscribed by us,

Q q 2

at

---

† Family Collections, Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup> 921.



“ at a Time when all Mouths and Ears were filled  
 “ with the Reports of most unexampled Force and  
 “ Violence, obtruded on the Honourable House, by  
 “ several tumultuous Pressures upon them, and other-  
 “ wise; and for professing our Integrity to their Ser-  
 “ vice and Safety, and our Desires of our own just  
 “ Conservation, we are branded with most horrible  
 “ Characters of Defection and Unfaithfulness. ———  
 “ To vindicate us from which, we desire you would  
 “ please to offer to the Consideration of the Honoura-  
 “ ble House of Parliament, this just and poignant Ar-  
 “ gument, to falsify the Suggestions of our Adversa-  
 “ ries, That since the framing and subscribing that  
 “ Remonstrance, this Army has done as active and  
 “ considerable Service upon the Rebels, as could in  
 “ Reason or Justice (considering the Condition it was  
 “ in) be expected at our Hands. ——— That the Re-  
 “ fusal of the inclosed Propositions, made to us, and  
 “ offering both Advantage and Opportunity to ac-  
 “ complish those Ends our Enemies charge us with,  
 “ will, we hope, sufficiently evidence to the World  
 “ the Integrity of,

S I R,

*Your most humble Servants,*

The Whole Members of the  
 7 Octob. 1647. Council of War of *Munster*.

*Exam.* Robert Pravers, *Judge-Marshal*.

It appears plainly and positively, from a Multitude  
 of Original Papers now before us, that this stubborn  
 Conduct, and these Remonstrances from the *Munster*  
 Army, proceeded from the direct Advice and Counsel  
 (almost in every Step) of Sir *Philip Perceval* to the  
 Earl of *Inchiquin*, who, from the Time of the Treaty  
 with the *Irish* at *Oxford*, in 1644, had taken all his  
 Im-

Impressions from him, and entertained a wonderful Veneration for his Judgment and Virtue. ——— The Earl at that Time left the King, upon the Observation of the bad Measures which he then pursued, and did Sir *Philip* the Justice of a public Acknowledgment, that it was from his Opinion that he took that Step. ——— It is equally evident, that he now returned to the King's Interest, (whose Cause was at length become the better of the two) from the Opinion of the same Person. ——— It is impossible to read the authentic Instruments we have here quoted, and to attend to the Course of these Transactions, without a full Conviction, both of the Abilities and Probity of this Man ; for it is certain, that no Person in that Time, or perhaps in any other, ever received a Mark of greater Distinction, than that of having a great Army, in effect, at his Devotion, and under his Direction, in which he then held no Employment, merely from the Opinion of his Parts, Diligence and Integrity, and from a due Sense of the Generosity and Justice of his Conduct, with respect to that very Army, in a Charge liable to great Difficulty, and much Misinterpretation, which he had formerly held among them. ——— The Weight of this important Influence must have been as great, as the Satisfaction of receiving so great a Proof of Affection and Trust, at a Time when his Enemies laboured his Destruction in Parliament, on Pretence of Misbehaviour in his Employment in the same Army. ——— It should seem impossible, after this Testimony of Confidence from the very Troops with whom he had been concerned, that they should arraign his Conduct any longer on that Score. ——— But what will not Malice attempt, when prompted by Revenge, Self-Interest, and Self-Preservation, attended with Power, and backed by corrupt Numbers. — *Cromwell*, and his Officers now joined with the Lord *Lisle*, and his Cabal, and discovered, on all Occasions, such a degree of Inveteracy to him, as gave him Reason to expect the most fatal Consequences. — And he privately received about  
this

this Time frequent Advertisements, that his Life was in immediate Danger.

GOD only now knows how far these foul and dark Designs were put in Execution on him, but that they put a Period to his Life, is very certain; for being thus harrassed to a Degree beyond the Force of his Nature to support, as well by the inveterate Endeavours of his Enemies to procure his Ruin, as by the wretched Condition of his private Fortune, which was either all in the Hands of the Rebels, or sequestered for his Engagements on the Public's Account; being also prevented by his Adversaries from recovering any Part of the vast Sums expended by him for the Use of the Army, or even any Part of his Salary due for the Exercise of his Employments, insomuch that he paid 40 *l. per Cent* †, for all the Monies he expended; and foreseeing the total Change of the Government, which soon followed after, by the Death of the King, in which he expected inevitable Destruction also to his own Affairs. ——— The Pressure of so many melancholy Reflections wrought such an Effect upon his Mind, that they threw him into a kind of Fever upon his Spirits, as it seemed, of which he died in *London*, upon *Wednesday* the tenth of *November*, 1647 §, (according to some in the forty-eighth, but really) in the forty-sixth of his Age.

He was buried three Days after, in the Church of *St. Martin in the Fields* \*, in *Westminster*, the famous Primate *Usher* preaching his Funeral Sermon, to which he chose for his Text the fourteenth Verse of the fourteenth Chapter of *Job*: *If a Man die, shall he live again? All the Days of my appointed Time will I wait, 'till my Change come.*

THE following Epitaph was written by *R. Maxwell*, Bishop of *Kilmore*, and placed upon his Grave: but his Monument, by the rebuilding of that Church, has been a few Years since intirely destroyed.

Epi-

† Family Collections. Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup> 026. § Ibid. N<sup>o</sup> 933.

\* Ex Regist. Paroch. Sancti Mariani, Westminster.

Epitaphium Clarissimi Viri Philippi Perceavelli, Equitis Aurati, Hiberniæ, qui obiit bonis omnibus desideratissimus, 10<sup>o</sup> die Novembris, Anno Domini 1647.

*Fortunam expertus jacet Philippus utramque :  
Dotibus ac genere Nobilitatus Eques :  
Qui nisi (sed quis non multis) peccasset in uno  
Quod Vitio vertat vix habet Invidia\*.*

Flevit. R. Episcopus Kilmorensis Maxwell.

Translated thus :

*Philip here lies, at length subdued by Fate :  
By Birth illustrious, and by Fortune great.  
Capricious Chance long taught him to explore,  
By Turns, her fickle Fondness, and her Power.  
Could the Remembrance of his Virtues sleep,  
Envy herself at the sad Loss would weep.*

BUT his most glorious and durable Monument was that signal Reputation which he left behind him, which was considered in such a Light by his very Enemies, that upon the Day of his Burial, viz. Saturday the thirteenth of November, 1647, the Lords and Commons both joined in an Order for the Sum of two hundred Pounds, to be paid to Catherine Lady Perceval, his Widow, to defray the Expences of his Interment.

IT is almost incredible how great and general a Concern appeared upon his Death ; his private Friends were not only so affected by it, as hardly to be capable of any Consolation ; but the Letters from the Duke of Ormond, the Earl of Inchequin, Mr. Hollis, and many of the greatest Men, upon that Incident expressed

---

\* The Reader will observe this Epitaph to be false Latin, and bad Metre ; but we give it as we find it.

fed the Sense of this Loss, as the greatest Calamity that could befall themselves or the Public at that Conjunction.—— Among the rest, Mr. *Hollis* writing to the Earl of *Inchequin*, in favour of his disconsolate Family, desiring his Assistance as General in *Munster*, to preserve what he could out of their Estate in those Parts, expresses himself in these Words. —— *We therefore conclude here with Confidence, that your Lordship's own innate Nobleness, accompanied with the transcendant Merit of the dead Man, who hath brought an apparent Prejudice to the Public and Private by his Departure hence, will be sufficient and prevalent Intercessors to incline your Lordship to a Contribution of all possible Favour towards his Posterity.* —— And the same † Earl of *Inchequin*, who owed him the highest Obligations, for the steadiest Friendship, and most constant Application to preserve him from the Malice of his Enemies in *England* (of which there is the strongest Evidence, in above a hundred Letters during the Troubles §, which are preserved in the Collection here quoted ||) wrote the following Letter to Lady *Perceval*, upon the News of his Death.

“ **I** Have received a Letter from Sir *Paul Davys*;  
 “ mentioning the Death of your dear Husband,  
 “ and my no less dear Friend; whose Death I may  
 “ certainly account one of the greatest Misfortunes  
 “ that

\* Family Collections, Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup> 943.

† Ibid. N<sup>o</sup> 944.

§ In one of these, dated from Cork the twenty-second of April, 1746, to Sir Philip *Perceval*, he writes thus:

My dear Friend,  
 “ **I** Have last Night received five several Packets from you, with  
 “ Letters from many noble Friends in them, unto whom I hope  
 “ to return others in exchange within four or five Days.— My Ob-  
 “ ligations are very great to all of them; but truly I look upon the  
 “ Friendship that you perform towards me, as a Blessing very much  
 “ more than ordinary intended by the Hand of Providence to pre-  
 “ serve me against Malice and Injustice.”

|| Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 777.

*Inchequin.*

“ that can befall me. ——— And really, Madam, it  
“ shall be unto me a great Happiness, if I be able to  
“ manifest my Love to him, by any Service to your  
“ Ladyship, or any of your Children, and therefore I  
“ humbly beseech you to command me freely, in all  
“ Things wherein I may be useful for your Service ;  
“ and conceal not from me neither your own or your  
“ Childrens Conditions, from Time to Time, that I  
“ may the better understand how I may lay hold of  
“ any Opportunity to do something for your or their  
“ Advantage. ——— I have directed Captain *Hodder*  
“ to give you an Account of what Monies could be  
“ gotten here for you, which are sent you ; and I  
“ shall be careful to improve all your Interests for the  
“ best Advantage, according to my Judgment, where-  
“ in good Success (I am confident) will be no more  
“ satisfactory to yourself, than,

*Madam,*

*Your sorrowful, and*

*Very humble Servant,*

Inchequin.

BUT among all these eminent Persons, none seems to have expressed so sincere an Affection, or so great a Concern, as Mr. *Pierpoint* \*, with whom, above all the Leaders of that Time, (as Sir *Philip* himself observed in one of his Letters a little before his Death) he lived in the greatest Friendship, and used the greatest Freedom ; for this Gentleman applied himself to the House of Commons †, upon *Saturday* the thirteenth of *November*, three Days after Sir *Philip*'s Death, for a Part of his Arrears to be paid to his Widow, and ob-

---

\* Vide Family Collections, Vol. VII. N<sup>o</sup> 857. to the Lord President of Connaught.

† Vide Journal of the House of Commons.

## 306 *A Genealogical History*

obtained an Order for that Purpose, which he himself carried to the Lords for their Concurrence, the same Day. Nor was this all, but he continued to persevere in all the Acts of Friendship that were possible for Man to shew, and performed the Part of the most tender Parent to this Family for a long Time after.

LET us now take a short Review of the Character of this worthy Man, as it may be naturally drawn from the Account which has been already given of his Life.—In his Temper he was wonderfully firm and resolute, and greatly distinguished for that superior Courage of the Mind, which is far more essential to a great Man of than a personal Bravery; yet of this, likewise, he had manifested, on many Occasions, a very sufficient Share. He had high Sentiments of Religion, but wholly free from every Weakness of Education, vulgar Prejudice, or Superstition.—His Notions of Government and Liberty, were as just and strong as any of that Age, and would have carried him too far, but from a firm Conviction, that the Temper of a People, and the Forms of a Constitution to which they had been accustomed, were the proper Magnet of the public Conduct in all Revolutions, and he thought the *English* too long habituated to Monarchy, and their Property not enough diffused to admit a Commonwealth.—He therefore never intended the Subversion of the Regal State, and was ever forward to promote an Accommodation with the King upon reasonable Terms.—During the whole Course of his Life he maintained the Principle of Honour, with a scrupulous Exactness.—In private Concerns he carried it so far, that he was formidable to all who did him the most trivial Injury, and no Man ever pursued his Satisfaction more long and steadily than he did. The same Temper rendered him as true a Friend as a dangerous Enemy.—In public Life, he was equally governed by the same Motive.—And nothing gave him more Pain than his Desertion of the King, to whom he owed many personal Obligations, which created in him a great  
Conflict

Conflict between his private and his public Honour. — Yet he distinguished too well, not to prefer the latter, when he fully perceived the desperate Measures of the Royal Party. — He was often reproached with this, by some who had Freedom with him to talk with him upon such a Subject. — But he said, that he left the King to serve him, for he saw that he would not serve himself; and he thought the surest Way to ruin him, was to assist him in those extravagant Courses which he fatally pursued. — He never imagined that the Parliament intended to carry Things to those Extremities which afterwards ensued, as certainly they never did. — And when the Faction which arose among them, and to whom all the Crimes of that Party may be wholly ascribed, unveiled their dangerous Designs, he opposed them, in every Instance, to the most extreme Distress of his Affairs, and to the manifest Hazard both of his Life and Fortune. — Without any private Inducements, or secret Engagements with the King, he laboured to restore him upon just Conditions. — And though, during a great Part of that troubled Time, his Employments lying principally on the *Irish* Side, and that Country having little said of it during those Transactions, he thereby became less the Object of the Histories which have been written since of those Times; yet he was then very eminent in *England*, as well as *Ireland*, for his Engagements there. And during the two last Years of his Life, when he dedicated himself solely to the public Business of *England*, in Parliament, he grew to be greatly noted, and increased in Interest and Reputation on this Side, to so high a Degree, that he would have undoubtedly been as considerable as any of that Age, in the ensuing Revolutions here, if he had lived to have been concerned in those extraordinary Transactions which followed after his Death; nor could he have failed by his known Capacity, Experience, and Integrity, to have contributed greatly to have prevented many of those Evils which shortly after befel this Nation. And in this he had actually proceeded farther



than almost any other Man, for by his Interest with the Earl of *Inchequin*, and the Army in *Ireland* under his Command, he had formed the daring Project of bringing over that Body of Troops, to maintain the Freedom of the Parliament, against the flagrant Tyranny of the Independant Party, and the *English* Army.— But this great Design, not yet ripe for Execution, fell with him, and has therefore met with but slight Mention from the Writers of that Time.— Nor can the whole of this Affair be now laid open, the Letters relating to it, and still remaining in this Family, being for the most Part written in a Cypher, which none have been able to explain.— But having lived with great Reputation, so he died with equal Glory, manifesting, in his latest Actions, a vigorous Resolution and Integrity, deserving to be for ever recorded,

For at that surprizing Period, in the Year 1647, when the Army openly declared their Opposition to the Parliament, and marched against the City of *London*, who had engaged to support its Freedom, threatening absolute Ruin to the honest Party, who maintained the public Liberty against their furious Measures, and when, by the Terror of their Approach, the former Leaders of that Party had timorously withdrawn; — he generously took the Post they had left, and was visibly, at that Time, the principal Conductor of that glorious Opposition which the Army found, being Chairman of those Committees which were appointed to manage their Defence; nor did he quit this Station, till he was himself deserted by the City, and the remaining Members of the House.

It cannot be denied but he had many Enemies; but this, instead of doing Prejudice to his Character, if considered justly, is a great Relevation of it.— For inveterate as they were, and supported by the Power of a Party which was superior in the House, with all the Efforts of their Art and Malice, they could obtain no Censure upon his Conduct in any one Instance.— A superior Integrity, and uncommon Abilities, never fail to create Enemies, and that in a  
supreme

supreme Degree, when those Abilities, and that Integrity are placed in such a Situation, as to be capable of crossing and impeding the Endeavours of wicked Men. ——— The Greatness of his Fortune likewise, if we consider in one View his prodigious Losses, and the great Inheritance which he left to his Posterity, (then consisting of above seventy-eight Knight's Fees) which was very vast, could not fail to draw upon him much Envy. ——— And this was much encreased by the Magnificence of his domestic Expences before the War, in which (as he was well able to support it) he was exceeded by no Subject of any Rank or Condition, particularly in his Table, which was ornamented with more Plate than was usually found in most of the great Houses of that Age. All which he lived to alienate for his Support, during the Course of these Distractions. ——— He had likewise high Notions of his Birth and Family, and a Sense of all the Advantages he enjoyed, which did him some Hurt in this Particular, because he knew in his Conduct to maintain them well, and perhaps with a Degree of Dignity and Spirit, which could not be agreeable to the mean Men who were advanced in high Stations by the Confusion of these Times. ——— But that he was governed by Reason, even in this Particular, is evident, from his Refusal of those Advancements, and Titles of Honour, with which he was tempted by the King at *Oxford* to desert his Principles.

THE only Blemish which his worst Enemies could offer to his Reputation, was, that it was somewhat sullied by too great a Desire of amassing Wealth; but this Disposition never shewed itself in him any otherwise, than in his preserving Employments, which were thought by some unworthy of him. ——— Of these he enjoyed many, reserving the principal Profits to himself, and leaving his Deputies upon small Salaries to execute the Business: but how far this Circumstance may tarnish the Lustre of so great a Character, we may leave to any impartial Man, who will consider at the same Time how generously he bestowed his Fortune,

tune, and how freely ; and what excessive Sums, in the most desperate Times, he ventured, to serve the Public, or his Friends. His Engagements for his Relations in *Somersetshire*, of the House of *Weston-Gordein*, and the Marquis of *Ormond* in *Ireland*, will prove the one, and the whole Tenor of his public Life demonstrate the other, beyond the Power of Malice to contradict.

As to his Person, his Advantages in that Particular were likewise very great.——He was but of a middle Size, and his Complexion of a redish Cast, so that, according to the *Irish* Custom, he was stiled *Philip Rua*, or *Red Philip*, by which Name he is still revered among them to this Day ; but his Limbs were so well put together, and his Body so exactly proportioned, that both for Strength, Activity, and Græc, there was hardly any Man of his Time exceeded him.

IN fine, his Death, at that Juncture, was as great a Loss as ever befel any private Family ; since from his Abilities, his Friendships, and his Services, if his Days had been prolonged only to that Period which is reasonable for Men of his vigorous Constitution to expect, he had certainly lived to have obtained those Rewards which he so well merited, and probably raised his House, in his own Life, to a Level with any in these Kingdoms.

HIS Will, which was made in 1641, and to which he added a Codicil in 1643, containing a large Mention of his Relations and Family, we shall insert at length.

*Extract. Registro Curiae Prærogativæ infra Regnum Hiberniæ.*

“ *IN Dei Nomine, Amen.* Although I am in  
 “ good Health and perfect Memory, (I give God  
 “ Thanks for the same) yet well knowing the Frailty  
 “ of this Life, and the Certainty of Death, and the  
 “ Uncertainty when every one shall depart this Life,  
 “ hoping

“ hoping to be saved through the alone Merits of  
 “ JESUS CHRIST, my Lord and only Saviour and  
 “ Redeemer, I do make and ordain this my last Will  
 “ and Testament, in manner following: *Imprimis*, I  
 “ will, and my Will is, that I may be buried with as  
 “ little Charge as may be, in respect of the Times,  
 “ and of the present Condition and Fortune whereunto  
 “ I am reduced, by the present Infurrection in this  
 “ Kingdom: and I leave among the Poor five Pounds,  
 “ to be distributed as my Executors shall think fit.  
 “ *Item*, I give, grant and bequeath unto my loving  
 “ Wife two hundred Pounds in Gold, formerly ap-  
 “ pointed for her, all her Apparel, and my Coaches,  
 “ Coach-Horses, and Furniture, with the Use of all  
 “ my Plate, Jewels, Furniture, Household-Stuff, and  
 “ Utenfils of all sorts, at *Dublin*, or in *England*, she  
 “ first giving her Bond to my Executors, to the use  
 “ of my eldest Son, and others, in Remainder of my  
 “ Estate, to restore the same at her Marriage or Death,  
 “ in as good Case as she finds them, necessary Wearing  
 “ and Casualty excepted. *Item*, I do limit and be-  
 “ queath to my Son *Arthur Perceval* the Wardship of  
 “ the Body and Lands of *Anne Casey*, in as large and  
 “ ample Manner as I might hold and enjoy the same;  
 “ and to my Daughter *Judith* all other Wardships  
 “ that I have Interest in, in like manner: and I leave  
 “ also unto the said *Arthur* my Debts due by Mr. *John*  
 “ *Fox*, in case the said *Anne* do die. *Item*, I do limit  
 “ and appoint that Portions be raised for my Daugh-  
 “ ters and younger Sons, out of my Leases and Debts,  
 “ and out of one third Part of my Lands, Tenements,  
 “ and Hereditaments in the County of *Cork*, in such Pro-  
 “ portion as my Executors shall think fit, having Re-  
 “ spect to the Times, and to my Debts. *Item*, I do  
 “ leave, devise and bequeath to my Children the Pro-  
 “ fits of my Offices in the King’s-Bench and Court of  
 “ Wards, for and towards the Maintenance and E-  
 “ ducation of my Daughters and younger Sons in Re-  
 “ ligious and Learning.—And if any Surplus do  
 “ remain; the same to be disposed of by my Execu-  
 “ tors,

“ tors, for and towards the Preferment of my said  
 “ Daughters and younger Sons. *Item*, I leave and  
 “ bequeath unto my Sister *Mules* the Rent of the Sta-  
 “ bles in the *Cookstreet*, being eight Pounds *per an-*  
 “ *num*, during her Life, or until she recover her  
 “ own Estate, towards her Charge. *Item*, I will and  
 “ my Will is, and I do hereby grant, devise and be-  
 “ queath all my Mortgages, and all Sums of Money  
 “ due, or hereafter to be due, for and by Reason of  
 “ the same, all my Leases and Chattles real, all my  
 “ Goods, Plate, Jewels, Household-Stuff, Debts, Cre-  
 “ dits, Utensils, Books, Writings, and Evidences  
 “ whatsoever (other than the Legacies hereby granted  
 “ and bequeathed unto others) unto my eldest Son  
 “ *John Perceval*, for the Term of eighty Years, if  
 “ he shall live so long, without Impeachment of  
 “ Waste, and afterwards to the eldest Son of the said  
 “ *John* lawfully to be begotten, for the Term of  
 “ eighty Years, if he shall so long live, without Im-  
 “ peachment of Waste, and afterwards to the Heirs  
 “ Male of the Body of the said *John*, lawfully to be  
 “ begotten; and for want of such Issue, to my second  
 “ Son *Arthur Perceval*, for the Term of eighty Years,  
 “ if he shall live so long, without Impeachment of  
 “ Waste, and afterwards to the eldest Son of the said  
 “ *Arthur*, lawfully to be begotten, for the Term of  
 “ eighty Years, if he shall live so long, without Impeach-  
 “ ment of Waste, and afterwards to the Heirs Male  
 “ of the Body of the said *Arthur*, lawfully to be be-  
 “ gotten; and for want of such Issue, to my third Son  
 “ *George Perceval*, for the Term of eighty Years, if  
 “ he shall so long live, without Impeachment of Waste,  
 “ and afterwards to the eldest Son of the said *George*,  
 “ lawfully to be begotten, for the Term of eighty Years,  
 “ if he shall so long live, without Impeachment of  
 “ Waste, and afterwards to the Heirs Male of the  
 “ Body of the said *George*, lawfully to be begotten;  
 “ and for want of such Issue, to the Heirs Male  
 “ of the Body of me the said *Philip Perceval*, law-  
 “ fully begotten and to be begotten; and for want of  
 such

“ such Issue, to the Heirs Female of the Body of  
 “ me the said Sir *Philip*, lawfully begotten and to  
 “ be begotten; and for want of such Issue, to the  
 “ Heirs of the Body of my Father *Richard Perceval*,  
 “ some time of *Sydenham*, in the County of *Somerset*,  
 “ Esquire, deceased, and of my Mother *Alice Perce-*  
 “ *val*, lawfully begotten; and for want of such Issue,  
 “ to the Heirs of the Body of *George Perceval*, Esq;  
 “ deceased, Grandfather of me the said Sir *Philip*,  
 “ and for want of such Issue, to my Cousin *James Per-*  
 “ *ceval*, of *Weston* in the County of *Somerset*, Esquire,  
 “ and his Heirs. And I do hereby limit and declare  
 “ and appoint, that all Feoffees, Conuzees, Reco-  
 “ verors, Donees, Lessees, or Trustees of me respec-  
 “ tively, the said Sir *Philip*, or of any Mortgages,  
 “ Leases and Goods shall stand seised and possessed of  
 “ the same respectively henceforth, to the Uses and  
 “ Intents in these Presents above-mentioned, and to  
 “ no other Use, Purpose, or Intent whatsoever, any  
 “ Thing to the contrary notwithstanding. *Item* I will  
 “ and my Will is, and I do hereby grant, devise and  
 “ bequeath unto my loving Wife, during the Term  
 “ of eighty Years, if she shall so long live, one third  
 “ Part of all the Rents, Issues and Profits of my Ma-  
 “ nors, Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments in *Ire-*  
 “ *land* (except my Lands in the County of *Kildare*)  
 “ to her own Use, and towards the Maintenance and  
 “ Education of her Children, until they shall be o-  
 “ therwise provided for; and one third Part thereof  
 “ to the Use and Payment of such Debts as at the  
 “ Time of my Death I shall *bona fide* owe of my own  
 “ proper Debt, and not for others, or for Surety of  
 “ any other, and the two third Parts above-mentioned,  
 “ so soon as the above-named Charges respectively  
 “ shall be determined, the same to be and remain to  
 “ my said Son *John Perceval*, and the Heirs Male of  
 “ his Body, and others in Remainder after him, as  
 “ my Mortgages are above limited or expressed, and  
 “ therefore I do hereby grant, devise and bequeath  
 “ one third Part of all the Rents, Issues and Profits

314 *A Genealogical History*

“ of my Manors, Lands, Tenements and Heredita-  
 “ ments (except my Lands in the County of *Kildare*)  
 “ and all my Manors, Lands, Tenements and Here-  
 “ ditaments in the County of *Kildare*, to my said eldest  
 “ Son *John*, for the Term of eighty Years, if he so  
 “ long shall live, without Impeachment of Waste,  
 “ and afterwards to the eldest Son of the said *John*  
 “ *Perceval*, lawfully to be begotten, for the Term of  
 “ eighty Years, if he shall live so long, without Im-  
 “ peachment of Waste, and afterwards to the Heirs  
 “ Male of the Body of the said *John Perceval*, lawful-  
 “ ly begotten; and for want of such Issue, to my se-  
 “ cond Son *Arthur Perceval*, for eighty Years, if he  
 “ shall live so long, without Impeachment of Waste,  
 “ and afterwards to such others, and in such Order as  
 “ my Mortgages are above limited and appointed by  
 “ these Presents. And I do hereby limit, declare and  
 “ appoint, that all Donees, Feoffees, Conuzees and  
 “ Recoverors respectively, which are seized, or to be  
 “ seized of any Manors, Lands, Tenements, or He-  
 “ reditaments, now or late in me or my Assigns, or  
 “ whereof the Rents, Issues, or Profits are, or were,  
 “ by me received, shall thereof stand and be seized  
 “ to the Uses and Intents in these Presents expressed,  
 “ limited and declared, and to no other Use, Pur-  
 “ pose, or Intent whatsoever, any thing to the con-  
 “ trary notwithstanding. *Lastly*, I do hereby nomi-  
 “ nate, ordain and appoint my said eldest Son *John*  
 “ *Perceval*, my loving Brothers Sir *William Usher*,  
 “ and Sir *Paul Davis*, Knights, Executors of this my  
 “ last Will and Testament; and my loving Uncle Sir  
 “ *Samuel Mayart*, Knight, one of the Justices of the  
 “ Court of Common-Pleas, Sir *Maurice Eustace*,  
 “ Knight, his Majesty’s Serjeant at Law, my loving  
 “ Brother *Richard Fitzgerald*, Esquire, and *Nicholas*  
 “ *Brown*, Gent. Overseers of the same. *In Witness*  
 “ of all which, I have put my Hand and Seal the twen-  
 “ tieth Day of *December*, *Anno Dom.* One thousand  
 “ six hundred forty-one.

PHILIP PERCEVAL.

*Codicil.*——“ I desire that the Debts for which  
 “ Sir *William Usher* and Sir *Paul Davys* are bound for  
 “ me be first paid, or compounded for, before others,  
 “ and that such Portions be raised for my said Daugh-  
 “ ters and younger Children as my Estate may bear,  
 “ notwithstanding any thing to the contrary, so as the  
 “ same exceed not five thousand Marks a-piece) as my  
 “ Estate may raise it, which I authorize my Executors  
 “ to provide, and as the Times may enable it. And I  
 “ enjoin my eldest Son to increase their Portions, as  
 “ he shall be able, to recompense my Care of him.  
 “ ——The twenty-first of *February*, 1643.

PHILIP PERCEVAL.

FOR a final Conclusion of what we have to say with respect to the Sufferings of this great Man, we shall subjoin the following Account of the Losses of this Family by the great Rebellion, as taken from a Draught made out by Sir *John Perceval*, his Son, and annexed to a Memorial by him presented to the Crown, soon after the Restoration, upon a Petition then exhibited for a certain Portion of forfeited Lands, of which he obtained a Grant, though he was unhappily defeated of it, as we shall shew in a proper Place.

The Right Honourable Sir *John Perceval* Creditor.

To 11 Years Income of his Estates in the Counties of <i>Cork, Tippe- rary, Waterford, Kerry, Dub- lin, Kildare, Mayo, and Sligo,</i> in <i>Ireland</i> , at 4,600 <i>l. per an- num</i> , from 1641 to 1652, ——	<table> <thead> <tr> <th style="text-align: left;"><i>l.</i></th> <th style="text-align: left;"><i>s.</i></th> <th style="text-align: left;"><i>d.</i></th> </tr> </thead> <tbody> <tr> <td style="text-align: right;">50,600</td> <td style="text-align: right;">0</td> <td style="text-align: right;">0</td> </tr> </tbody> </table>	<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>	50,600	0	0
<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>					
50,600	0	0					
To 8 Years Income of ditto, from 1652 to 1660, —— ——	<table> <tbody> <tr> <td style="text-align: right;">36,800</td> <td style="text-align: right;">0</td> <td style="text-align: right;">0</td> </tr> </tbody> </table>	36,800	0	0			
36,800	0	0					



316 *A Genealogical History*

To 19 Years Profits of his hereditary Place of Register of the Court of Wards; the Salary and Fees of which were 1700 <i>l.</i> <i>per annum</i> , as returned to Parliament upon the Dissolution of that Court: and the Perquisites and Profits of Wardships, <i>comm. ann.</i> as much more, making in the whole 3,400 <i>l.</i> <i>per annum</i> , from 1641 to 1660, ————	}	<table border="0"> <tr> <td style="text-align: right;"><i>l.</i></td> <td style="text-align: right;"><i>s.</i></td> <td style="text-align: right;"><i>d.</i></td> </tr> <tr> <td style="text-align: right;">64,600</td> <td style="text-align: right;">0</td> <td style="text-align: right;">0</td> </tr> </table>	<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>	64,600	0	0
<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>						
64,600	0	0						

To 19 Years Profit of the Places of Clerk of the Crown, and Keeper of the Records of the King's-Bench, Prothonotary of the Common-Pleas, General Feodary of <i>Ireland</i> , Escheator of <i>Munster</i> , Keeper of the Records of the Tower of <i>Birmingham</i> , Keeper of the Rolls of the Upper House of Parliament, Customer of <i>Dublin</i> , &c. &c. being for Life, to Sir <i>Philip</i> and his Son, at 2,000 <i>l.</i> <i>per ann.</i> from 1641 to 1660, ————	}	<table border="0"> <tr> <td style="text-align: right;">38,000</td> <td style="text-align: right;">0</td> <td style="text-align: right;">0</td> </tr> </table>	38,000	0	0
38,000	0	0			

To Spoil and Waste of Timber, Castles, Houses, and Stock, —	}	<table border="0"> <tr> <td style="text-align: right;">20,000</td> <td style="text-align: right;">0</td> <td style="text-align: right;">0</td> </tr> </table>	20,000	0	0
20,000	0	0			

To Money expended more than received, on Account of the Army*, in the Offices of Commissary-General, and Providor-General of the Horse, as <i>per</i> Account delivered to the proper Offices in his own Hand-writing,	}	<table border="0"> <tr> <td style="text-align: right;">18,003</td> <td style="text-align: right;">13</td> <td style="text-align: right;">4</td> </tr> </table>	18,003	13	4
18,003	13	4			

To

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. IV. N<sup>o</sup> 414, and 415.

of the House of YVERY, &c. 317

To a Debt incurred by Contracts for the Army upon Sir <i>Philip</i> <i>Perceval's</i> private Credit, ————	}	l.	s.	d.
		10,000	0	0

To Salary as Commissary-General of the Army, settled by Vote of the <i>English</i> Parliament at 3 l. 7 s. 6 d. per diem, or 1231 l. 17 s. 6 d. per ann. as delivered to the Sub-Commissiioners, cer- tified by Sir <i>Henry Tichborne</i> and Col. <i>Randolf Clayton</i> , from 23 <i>March</i> , 1641, to the 28th of <i>July</i> , 1647, being 1952 Days*, ————	}	6,881	16	0
---	---	-------	----	---

To Salary as Providor-General of the Horfe, from the same Date, at 14 s. 8 d. per diem, certified as aforesaid †, ————	}	1,431	0	0
---	---	-------	---	---

To Salary as Captain of a Troop of Horfe for Convoy of Provi- sions, at 14 s. 4 d. per diem, from 15 <i>June</i> , 1642, to the 28 of <i>July</i> , 1647, being 1868 Days, certified as aforesaid §,—	}	1,338	0	0
--	---	-------	---	---

To ready Cash belonging to Sir <i>Philip Perceval</i> when the Rebel- lion broke out, expended for Subsistence of his Family during the Troubles, ————	}	7,500	0	0
--	---	-------	---	---

To

\* Family Collections, Vol. VII. fol. 267.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

To ditto borrowed on the same	}	l.	s.	d.
Account during the Troubles,				
between 1641 and 1660, —				
some Part bearing an Interest of	}	11,500	0	0
40 <i>per Cent.</i> but at a Medium				
15 <i>per Cent.</i> ——— ———				
To 19 Years Income of the <i>Eng-</i>	}	16,150	0	0
<i>lish</i> Estate, at 850 <i>l. per annum,</i>				
from 1641 to 1660, ——— ———				
Total of Losses and Credits,		282,804	9	1

The Right Honourable Sir *John Perceval* Debtor,

By Profits out of the <i>Irish</i> Estate,	}	00,000	0	0
from 1641 to 1652, ——— the lit-				
tle to be made of it being ap-				
plied to the Defence of the	}	20,800	0	0
State, ——— ——— ———				
By Profit out of the <i>Irish</i> Estate	}	20,800	0	0
from 1652, when restored by				
<i>Cromwell</i> , to 1660, at a Me-				
diuim 2,600 <i>l. per annum,</i> —				
By Profit from the <i>English</i> Estate,	}	13,600	0	0
for 19 Years, deducting two				
Years when it was seized into				
the King's Hands, and one,	}	200	0	0
when sequestered by <i>Cromwell,</i>				
By 200 <i>l.</i> paid to Sir <i>Philip Perce-</i>	}	200	0	0
<i>val</i> by the Parliament of <i>Eng-</i>				
<i>land</i> , on Account of his Salary,				
By ditto, paid by ditto on the same	}	200	0	0
Account to his Lady, ———				
Total of Profits,		34,800	0	0
			Total	

*of the House of YVERY, &c.* 319

Total of Dues and Losses to Sir	}	282,804	9	1
<i>John Perceval</i> , ——— ———				
Deduct as by Particular of Profits,		34,800	0	0
So that the Losses of the Family	}	248,004	9	1
by the great Rebellion amount-				
ed to ——— ——— ———				

AND even this prodigious Sum is far short of the Truth; for several private Grants and Monopolies are not here mentioned, the Profits of which were wholly lost by this Confusion. ——— Neither is there any Account of the farther Suffering of the Estate from the Year 1660, which, though gradually improving, did not arrive at the same Rent again, for which it was set in 1641, till the Revolution, when it received again a new Blow, as we shall shew in its due Place. ——— To the Score of this Rebellion must likewise be added, the Loss of that great Employment in the Court of Wards, which was certainly far more advantageous than it has been here stated; for the Abolition of the Court of Wards was a manifest Consequence of that Event. It would be easy to shew many other fatal Inconveniences to this Family from the same Cause. ——— But what we have already mentioned is sufficient to prove, that if this Calamity had not happened, the Fortunes of this Family had been almost immense, especially when we consider the vast Advantages which were to be made at that Conjunction in that Kingdom, by a Man in such a Situation of Interest, Fortune, and Sagacity, as Sir *Philip Perceval*. ——— Let us now turn our Eyes from this dark and melancholly Consideration, to an Admiration of that Providence, which has enabled this Family to support so great a Shock, though followed by another little more than twenty Years after, which alone might equal the Losses that almost any private Family has suffered

suffered by Civil War.—— May the Descendants of this House retain a grateful Sense of the Favours they have received, in being still preserved in that high and affluent Condition in which they still continue to stand, and may they reflect from thence, how much it is the Interest of every great Family to consult the Peace and Quiet of their Country.

HAVING now closed our Account of this great and eminent Man, we shall next come to speak of *Catherine Lady Perceval* his Wife. —— She was Daughter of *Arthur Usher*, Esquire, eldest Son of Sir *William Usher*, Knight, (Clerk of the Council to Queen *Elizabeth* and King *James* the First) by his Wife *Judith*, the Daughter of Sir *Robert Newcomen*, Baronet, both by the Side of the Father and Mother descended from very eminent and ancient Families, of *English* Extraction, in that Kingdom.—— That of *Usher* being originally of the House of *Nevil* (as it is said went over into *Ireland* with King *John*, in the Place of *Usher* to that Prince, where taking the Name of that Office, and acquiring large Possessions, they have continued to this Day.—— That of *Newcomen* having lately been of considerable Note in the County of *Lincoln* in *England*, from whence the Branch which settled in that Kingdom is descended, we shall refer to the Account of this House which the Office of Arms in that Kingdom largely furnish, with relation to it.

BEING then a very young Woman, she was married in *Dublin*, upon the sixteenth of *October*, 1626: she left a numerous Offspring, and having outlived her Husband thirty-four Years and fifty-three Days, died at *Dublin*, upon the second of *January*, 1681-2.

HER Will bears date upon the eight of *May*, 1681, and was proved in the Prerogative Court at *Dublin* \*.

SHD

---

\* Cur. Prærogat. Hiberniæ.

of the House of YVERY, &c. 321

SHE was a Woman of a very great Spirit and high Resentments, which led her to expect too much of her Husband's Family, and to be too easily discontented with their Conduct to her.——She lived to see two Generations descended from herself; and this Temper being inflamed by Persons ill-disposed and interested, produced at length a total Cessation of all Intercourse between her and her Husband's Family. —— The Particulars of these Disputes are not very proper to be related here; it is sufficient to mention the Consequences of them, which were, that she gave away, or left from her Husband's Relations, almost every Thing that was in her Power of any Value.

ISSUE of Sir *PHILIP PERCEVAL*, Knight, (the first of that Name) and of *Catherine Usher* his Wife.

I. *JOHN*, afterwards Sir *John Perceval*, Baronet, by whom the principal Line of this Family was continued.——He was born upon the seventh of *September*, at *Dublin*, 1629; of whom in the next Chapter.

II. *RICHARD PERCEVAL*, so called after his Grandfather, born at *Dublin*, upon the eighteenth of *August*, 16—, about five in the Morning, (Sir *Philip Perceval* being then absent in *Munster*)——Sir *Paul Davies*, Knight, Brother-in-law to the Lady *Perceval*, *Richard Fitzgerald*, Esquire, Brother-in-law to Sir *Philip*, were the Godfathers, and the Lady *Dorcas Mayart*, Aunt to the Lady *Perceval*, Godmother: but this Child dying upon the twenty-ninth of *May*, 1638, was buried upon the second of *June* following, at *St. Audeon's*, *Dublin*.

III. *WILLIAM PERCEVAL*, born at *Dublin* upon *Ascension-Day*, the thirtieth of *May*, 1633, about five in the Morning; the Child was

baptized upon the fifth of *June* following, the Godfathers being Sir *William Parsons*, Baronet, Master of the Court of Wards and Liveries, and Sir *William Usher*, and the Godmother the Lady *Newcomen*, the Wife of Sir *Beverley Newcomen*, Baronet. But this Infant died upon *Tuesday* the eleventh of *June*, in the Forenoon following, and was also buried at nine the same Night in the Church of *St. Audeon*.

IV. *ARTHUR PERCEVAL*, born also at *Dublin*, upon *Sunday* the seventh of *September*, 1634, at eleven at Noon: so named from his Mother's Father. His Godfathers were the Right Honourable Sir *Thomas Rotberam*, Knight, one of the Privy-Council, and *Francis Windebank*, Esquire, Son of Sir *Francis Windebank*, Knight, one of his Majesty's principal Secretaries of State. — The Godmother was *Anne*, Wife of *Robert*, afterwards Sir *Robert Meredith*, Aunt to the Lady *Perceval*. — He lived till he was near twenty Years of Age, and was a young Man of excellent Accomplishments and great Hopes: but having never married, he died at *London* during the Time of the Commonwealth, in *January*, 1653.

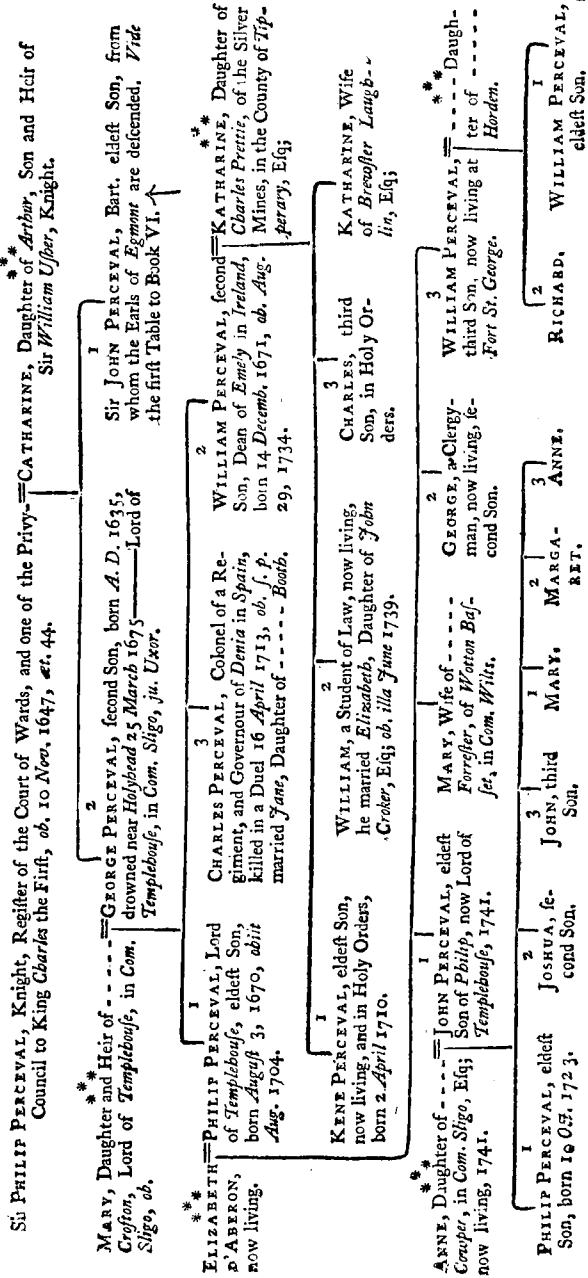
V. *GEORGE PERCEVAL*, the youngest Son, so named from his Great Grandfather, was born upon the fifteenth of *September*, 1635, at twelve at Night. — This Son lived to marry, and to leave Issue, from whom several Families of great Worth, now subsisting, do proceed. — The Inheritance he obtained out of the Estate of the Family, by Deed from his Brother, dated the tenth of *November*, 1660, and confirmed by his Will, were the Castle, Towns, and Lands of \* *Ballinacloghy*, *Stone-town*, *Cloncross*, *Kanogh*, *Killmore*, *Ballingbaris*, and *Brownstowne*,  
in

---

\* Vide the Will of Sir John Perceval, Part. dated 14 Nov. 1600.

TABLE of the Defcent of the present Lords of TEMPLEHOUSE, in the County of Sligo in Ireland, and of their Issue.

Look back to the first Table of the sixth Book.





*A Genealogical History*

in the County of *Tipperary*, and certain other Lands in the County of *Sligo*.

THIS *George Perceval*, the second of that Name, having married *Mary*, Daughter and Heir of ——— *Crofton*, of *Templehouse*, in the County of *Sligo*, (who lived till the fifteenth of *October*, 1705) acquired by her that Lordship, which has since been the chief Seat of his Descendants.—— This Gentleman going over to *England*, was unfortunately cast away and drowned, near *Holyhead* in *Wales*, together with the Earl of *Meath*, and several other Persons of Distinction, upon the twenty-fifth of *March*, 1675.

HE left three Sons, *Philip*, *William*, and *Charles*, and a Daughter named *Catherine*.

PHILIP, (*the second of that Name of this Line*) eldest Son and Heir of *George*, inherited the Estate. He was born upon the third of *August*, 1670, and died in *August* 1704, leaving, by *Elizabeth D'aberon*, his Wife, three Sons, *John*, *George*, and *William*, and a Daughter *Mary*, all now living.

JOHN PERCEVAL, (*the first of that Name of this Line*) was born the third of *October*, 1700, and is the third Lord of *Templehouse* of this Family. —— His Wife, whom he married the seventeenth of *October*, 1722, is *Anne*, the Daughter of ——— *Cowper*, Esquire, in the County of *Sligo*, born also in the same Year; by whom he had three Sons and three Daughters, all now living. *Philip*, the eldest Son, born the tenth of *October*, 1723. *Joshua*, the second of *March*, 1728. *John*, the twenty-first of *March*, 1734. *Mary*, the fourth of *March*, 1724. *Margaret*, the twenty-seventh of *April*, 1727. And *Anne*, the twenty-third of *July*, 1731.

GEORGE PERCEVAL, the second Son of *Philip Perceval* of *Templehouse*, Esquire, was born

*of the House of YVERY, &c. 325*

*born upon the thirtieth of November, 1703, and is in Holy Orders, and as yet unmarried.*

**WILLIAM PERCEVAL**, *the third Son of Philip Perceval of Templehouse, Esquire, was born the twenty-fourth of December, 1704; and going over to the East-Indies for the Improvement of his Fortune, married in the Year 1730, N. N. the Daughter and Coheir of — Horden, an eminent Factor there, by whom he has two Sons, William, born the first of January, 1731, and Richard, born in 1735.*

**MARY**, *the Daughter of Philip Perceval of Templehouse, Esquire, is Wife of — Forrester, who is in Holy Orders.*

*WE now return to William Perceval, the second of that Name of this Line, second Son of George Perceval of Templehouse, Esquire; he was born the fourteenth of December, 1671, and died the twenty-ninth of August, 1734; having entered into Holy Orders, he was made Dean of Emley in Ireland, and Rector of St. Michan's in Dublin.— He married upon the fifth of April, 1708, Catherine, Daughter of Colonel Pritty, of the Silver Mines in the County of Tipperary, who was born the twenty-first of December, 1681, and died the third of December, 1730. — By this Lady he left three Sons and a Daughter, all now living: Kene, eldest Son, unmarried, born the second of April, 1710, who is also in Holy Orders; William, second Son, born the twenty-fourth of June, 1711, who having applied himself to the Inns of Court, is now a Barrister at Law. He married —, Daughter of — Croker, Esquire, in the Year 1738, but is now a Widower, his Wife dying in June 1739. — Charles, the third Son, is also in the Church, and is yet unmarried, born December the seventh, 1713. — Katherine,*  
*the*

326 *A Genealogical History*

*the Daughter, is married to Brewster Laughlin, Esquire, Collector of the Port of Dublin.*

*WE are next to speak of Charles, the third Son of George Perceval of Templehouse, Esquire. He was born the eighth of February, 1674. — He married Jane, the Daughter of ——— Booth, Esquire, who died the twenty-second of June, 1726. ——— This Charles having engaged in a military Life, was advanced to the Degree of a Colonel. He served with great Reputation in the Wars of Spain, and gallantly defended the Town of Denia, which was entrusted to him; but was unhappily slain in a Duel in that Country, by Colonel ———, upon the sixteenth of April, 1713, having had Issue, which did not survive.*

**CATHERINE**, *the Daughter of George Perceval of Templehouse, Esquire, was born the twenty-sixth of January, 1664, and died the tenth of January, 1728. — She married George Brereton, of Carigslany, in Ireland, descended from the Lords of that Name in Ireland, who were eminent Men in that Kingdom, and derived themselves from a Family of great Antiquity in the County of Chester in England. Her Husband died the twenty-sixth of June, 1720, leaving by the said Catherine his Wife two Sons, William and Robert, and three Daughters, Jane, Mary, and Rose.*

**WILLIAM BRERETON**, *the eldest Son now living, was born the seventeenth of March, 1696, and upon the twenty-third of March, 1720, married Alice, Daughter of ——— Norcott, by whom he has had a numerous Issue, viz. five Sons and three Daughters: George, born the twenty-first of December, 1721. ——— William, born the sixteenth of May, 1723. ——— Perceval, born the nineteenth of October, 1726. — Robert, born the fourteenth of January, 1727. — Edward, born*  
*the*

of the House of YVERY, &c. 327

the third of March, 1728.—Mary, the twenty-fifth of May, 1731.—Rose, the twenty-sixth of August, 1732.—Elizabeth, the seventeenth of August, 1735.

ROBERT, the second Son of George Brereton and of Catherine his Wife, is in Holy Orders, and Rector of Burton, in the County of Cork, a Preferment in the Gift of the Earl of Egmont.—And Jane, the Daughter of George Brereton, born the eighth of October, 1695, now living, was married on the twenty-third of November, 1721, to John Bickerstaff, Esquire, by whom she has a Son John, born the twenty-sixth of September, 1733; and a Daughter Catherine, born the twenty-sixth of September, 1722.

VI. JUDITH PERCEVAL, the first born Child of Sir Philip Perceval and Catherine his Lady. She was born upon Christmas-Day, 1627, at ten at Night; and on the first of January, the New-Year's-Day following, she was baptized, at Sir William Usher's, in Bridge-street, Dublin, Thomas Cave, Esquire, Comptroller of the Customs, being God-father, and Judith, Wife of Arthur Usher, Esquire, her Grandmother, and Alice, Sister of Sir Philip Perceval, and Wife of Richard Fitzgerald, Esquire, being God-mothers, Sir William Usher and Sir Robert Newcomen being present at this religious Ceremony\*.——This young Lady having refused many Matches of great Dignity and Advantage, passionately engaged her Affections upon Colonel Randolph Clayton, of Mallow, in the County of Cork, in Ireland; a Gentleman of great Merit†, but a Fortune not thought suitable to her, and was married to him, against the Inclination of her

---

\* Family Letters, Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup> 1043, &c.

† Ibid. Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup> 1040.

her Friends and Relations, in *February*, 1653, doing thereby a great Injury to the Estate of her own Family. — Her eldest Brother being obliged to provide her Portion in those disorderly Times, at so great Disadvantage, that he sold a considerable Estate, then set at a trifling Rent, at the Rate of two Years Purchase; to which were added the Lands of *Ballydomell*, *Derryrawne*, and *Ballintlea*, in the Barony of *Fermoy*, and County of *Cork*, which were made over to her and to her Heirs. — By this Gentleman she had a Son named *Laurence*, who lived long in great Esteem in his own Country; and by the Daughter and Heir of — *Coulthrope*, had two Sons, *Randal*, who died in 1729, without Issue, and *Coulthrope Clayton*, who became Heir to his Brother, and is now living, as yet unmarried.

VII. *ANNE PERCEVAL*, was born at *Dublin*, upon *Sunday* the thirteenth of *September*, 1635, at one in the Morning. — On *Wednesday* the twenty-third of the same Month she was baptized, *Sir James Ware*, Auditor-General, being God-father, and the *Lady Bagshaw*, and *Mrs. Elizabeth Usher*, Sister to the *Lady Perceval*, God-mothers. — She died unmarried.

VIII. *DORCAS PERCEVAL*, was born at *Dublin*, upon *Tuesday* the thirtieth of *October*, in the Afternoon, *Sir Philip Perceval* being then in *Connaught*, upon the Commission of Survey for distinguishing Possessions, on *Thursday* the first of *November* he returned, and soon after the Child was baptized, *Nicholas White*, Esquire, and the *Lady Newcomen*, Wife of *Sir Thomas Newcomen*, Baronet, and the *Lady Tickborne*, were her Sureties. — This Lady married *Jo-*  
*nas*

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. VI. No. 115.

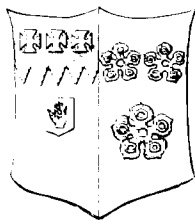
*nas Wheeler*, Esquire, Son and Heir of the Bishop of *Clonfert*. ——— When she died we cannot say, but she out-lived her Mother. ——— She left one Son, who by the Daughter of ——— *Vesey*, Archbishop of *Tuam*, left an only Son, (who died without Issue) and also left three Daughters, *Elizabeth*, *Judith*, and ——— : *Judith Wheeler* is still living, and unmarried; *Elizabeth* married ———, the Son and Heir of ——— *Palliser*, Archbishop of *Cashel*, and died in 1735, leaving *William Palliser*, Esquire, now living, his only Son and Heir, who married *Jane*, Daughter of Colonel *Matthew Penefather*, late Commissary-General, and Sister to the late Countess of *Antrim*, but as yet they have no Issue. ——— The youngest Daughter was married to ——— *Barrington*, of the *Queen's County*, by whom she left two Sons, *Jonas* and *Wheeler Barrington*, and two Daughters, ———, and *Catherine* : of the Daughters, *N. N. Barrington* married ——— *Beard*, Esquire, a Major in the Regiment commanded by General *Dormer*; and *Catherine* is yet unmarried. Of the Sons, *Wheeler Barrington*, the second, is yet unmarried, and obtained by Will a great Part of his Uncle *Wheeler's* Estate; *Jonas Barrington*, the eldest Son and Heir, is now living, and is married to ———, Daughter of Sir *John Bourne*, by whom he has several Children, all Infants.

IX. CATHERINE PERCEVAL, was born in the Year 1640, the Lady *Davies*, and Mrs. *Alice Usher*, were her Sureties. She died a young Woman, and was never married.

X. SIR *Philip Perceval* had likewise another Child born in *London*, of this Lady, in 1646; but whether Male or Female we cannot say, nor is it of any great Importance, since it died soon after its Birth.

## C H A P. IX.

*The Right Honourable Sir JOHN PERCEVAL (seventh of that Name) Baronet, Register of the Court of Wards, and Register of the Court of Claims, chief Prothonotary of the Common Pleas, Clerk of the Crown, one of the Council of Trade, &c. one of the most Honourable the Privy Council to King Charles the Second, and Knight of the Shire for the County of Cork in Ireland.*



**S**IR *John Perceval*, (Seventh of that Name) eldest Son and Heir of Sir *Philip Perceval*, and the Lady *Catherine* his Wife, was born at *Dublin* upon the seventh of *September*, 1629. He received part of his School

School Education at *Ringwood* in *Hampshire*, where, during the Confusion of those Times, he remained some Years with *Edmund Perceval*, his Relation, formerly an Officer under Sir *Philip Perceval* in some of his Employments.—After this, he passed near two Years under the \* Direction of one *Sachat*, a *French* Gentleman in Sir *Philip's* House at *London*; together with the Earl of *Inchiquin's* eldest Son, of whom Sir *Philip* took the same Care as of his own Children, out of his Friendship to the Father, who being then General of the Army in *Munster*, was unable, in the Distraction of those Times, and the Hurry of his military Employment, to give any Attention to his Education.—And having made the utmost Proficiency in the Studies proper for that Time of Life, he was removed to the University † in *February*, 1646, when he was little more than sixteen Years of Age.

HE was there in a close Application to all the useful Literature taught in those Places in the Year 1647, when his Father died; and had Prudence enough to consider, that though he was left the nominal Lord of a very great Fortune, the Disorders of the Times had put it into such a Condition, that it would yield him little more than a moderate Subsistence. He likewise saw the Affairs of both Kingdoms in a very unsettled State, and he therefore reasoned from these Circumstances in a very wise manner, that it would be more beneficial to his Fortune, and less hazardous to the Interest of his Family, still to remain a little longer where he was, under pretence of his Studies, till he could form a better Judgment how to direct his Course in publick Life, in which he saw that he must necessarily embark, as soon as he entered the World.

BUT in little more than two Years † after, being then nineteen Years of Age, finding the Royal Cause intirely defeated by the Death of the King, and the

U u 2

Rebellion

---

\* Family Collections. Vide Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup> 832.

† Family Letters, Vol. V. N<sup>o</sup> 716.

‡ Ex Chart. Famil.



Rebellion of *Ireland* intirely subdued, he thought it highly necessary for him to appear before the Settlement of that Kingdom could be effected, in which he had so great an Interest at stake: He therefore quitted his Retirement, and entered at once upon the Management of the Concerns both of the publick and of his private Fortune, with an admirable Sagacity.

IT was impossible for any Man to lie under \* Difficulties that required greater Dexterity and Skill, than those in which he then laboured: For the Independants, who had by this Time ingrossed the whole Authority, were Enemies to him for the Part which his Father had acted against them in the latter Period of his Life.—And the Greatness of the Spoil of such a Fortune, as that which he inherited, was no small Encouragement to the keen Prosecution of those who had this Pretence to urge his Ruin.

IN this unhappy Circumstance †, he endeavoured to cultivate, as much as possible, the Friendship of those in Power, and applied himself particularly to the Speaker *Lenthall*, who, in Expectation of gaining him in Marriage for his Daughter, espoused his Interest with great Warmth: And this Gentleman expecting that this Fortune, when secured, was to be enjoyed by one of his own Family, was very diligent to preserve it from that Confiscation with which it was then threatened. However, by some Accident, which afterwards happened, the Marriage never took effect; and that Gentleman falling lower in his Credit, and Sir *John Perceval* standing in need no longer of his Assistance, it gave some handle to those who were not his Friends, for an Aspesion of him, as if he had acted with a little too much Art upon that Occasion.

BUT it was not this, or any other Circumstance, that so much preserved him, as an Incident which we slightly touched upon before in the Life of his Father, Sir *Philip Perceval*.——It must be remembered, that at the latter End of the Year, 1645, *Cromwell* had greatly

---

\* Ex Chart, Famil.

† Ibid.

greatly solicited for the Government of *Ireland*; and Sir *Philip*, out of an Opinion, that no Man was better qualified to undertake that Service at that Juncture, than he was, heartily endeavoured to promote this View; and though this Intrigue took no Effect at that time, yet it was a Circumstance which *Cromwell* never forgot. He had great Qualities; among which, that of Gratitude was not wanting, though it was the Temper of his Genius not to suffer that, or any other Vice or Virtue to obstruct his ultimate Designs. As long, therefore, as Sir *Philip Perceval* lived after he had opposed the Measures of the Army, on the Success of which the Greatness of *Cromwell* intirely depended, he seemed insensible of any Obligation to him, and actually fought his Ruin: But that great and worthy Man having sunk under those Difficulties to which his Spirit would never yield, and all Apprehensions of his Virtue and Integrity being removed by his Death, *Cromwell* found that he might shew safely his Remembrance of the Service we have mentioned to his Posterity; and he did it with great Zeal, affording him his Protection in the strongest and most effectual Manner, at a Time when, perhaps, no other Support could have possibly preserved him.

THE first remarkable Instance of his Friendship was in the Year 1650\*, when a Design was formed to deprive him of his Estate in the County of *Somerset*. One *Latimer Sampson*, who had been a Dependant on Sir *Philip Perceval*, and was indebted to the Family in a considerable Sum, being pressed by Sir *John* to make Payment of it in 1649, meditated Revenge, and swore that his *English* Fortune should be sequestered for it. The Man had soon after an Opportunity to put his Promise in execution; for the Times being then favourable to every mean and pushing Fellow, this *Sampson*, among the rest of the Rabble that then obtained Preferment, was advanced to the Post of a *Commissioner of Sequestrations* for the County  
of

---

\* Family Letters, Vol. VI. from N° 977 to 984.

of *Somerset* in the following Year; and there suborned several Wretches to give their Testimony of a Multitude of Facts, with relation to the Principles, Religion, and Engagements of the late *Sir Philip Perceval*, and of his Widow, the *Lady Katherine*, all infamous Falshoods, and many of them such as were notoriously contradicted by the general Knowledge of all who had acted on the publick Theatre of that Age.——Yet, upon the Strength of their Affidavits, and trusting that no immediate Enquiry would be made into this Affair, they made no scruple to sequester the whole Estate in those Parts, and to divide the Profits of it between the State and the Tenants, some of whom were by that means induced to support this illegal Prosecution.

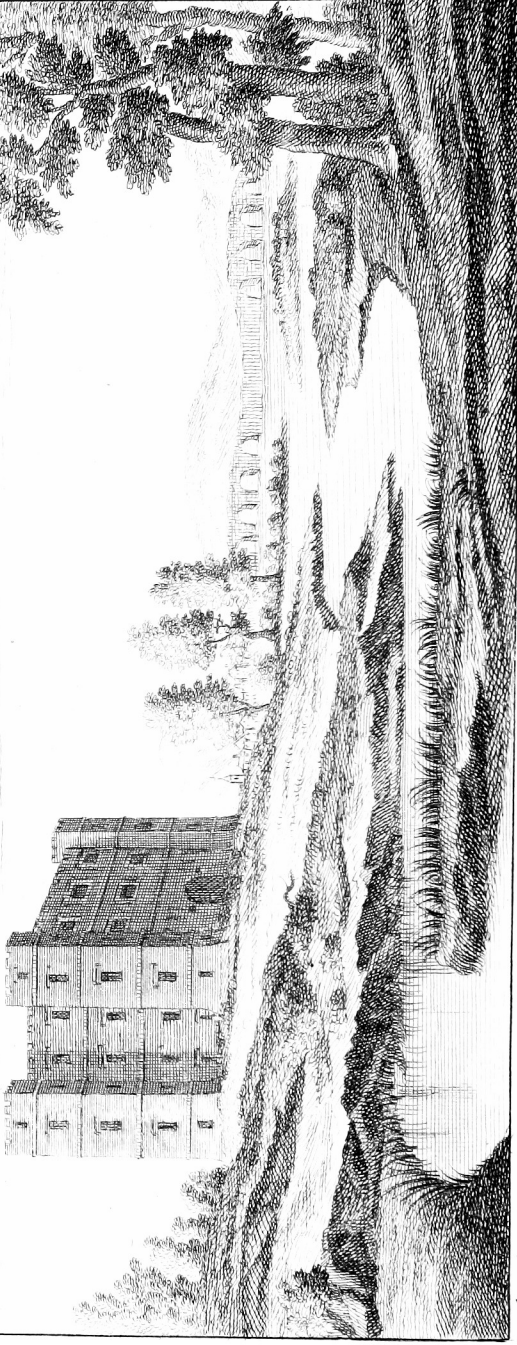
THE Matter was, after much Difficulty, removed to the Cognizance of the superior \* Courts in *London*, where, though there was not found a Man ignorant of the Villainy of these Proceedings, and though Persons of the first Figure, both in *England* and *Ireland*, appeared to give their utmost Countenance against such Oppression; yet it was thought politick thus to revenge the Sins of the Father upon the Son, and to permit this Grievance to continue to the vast Loss and Expence of the Family, till *Cromwell*, growing more absolute in his Power, generously rescued the young Man out of the Gripe of this unhappy Jurisdiction.

THE same Measures had been taken to distress the Family in the other Kingdom, where the Commonwealth had no sooner made themselves Masters, than they sequestered the whole Estate. The utmost Endeavours of *Sir John Perceval* had no better Success at first, than to preserve it from an absolute Confiscation, As his Interest improved, this Severity relaxed, but from the first of *May*, 1650, to the first of *May*, 1651, the Contribution which he was obliged to pay out of that Part only which lay in *Munster*, amounted within thirty-five Pounds of two thousand Pounds *per An-*

---

\* Family Letters, Vol. VI. from N<sup>o</sup> 977 to 984.





*The Castle of Frankfort a very Magnificent Pile of Building belonging to John Peveral Earl of Camont. To whom it gives the Title of a Viscount - It was begun in the Reign of Queen Elizabeth, but the Government upon a Malicious Representation of its Strength gave Orders that it should not be completed according to the Intended Plan. So that the Offices and Outworks were never Executed - The Town of Frankfort which Stands about a Quarter of a Mile from it is the Capital of the Barony of Dubhallow in the County of Corke and belongs to the Same Lord.*

*Annum*\*; and from *May 1651*, to *May 1652*, the Charge, as it was certified by the Commissioners of the Revenue themselves, amounted to two hundred Pounds more than the Estate produced.

SIR *John Perceval* being now of Age, laid claim to all his Father's Estate in *Ireland*, amounting in the whole to seventy-eight Knights Fees, and one half containing ninety-nine Thousand odd Hundred Acres of Land of *English* Measure, all lying in the best Parts of that Kindom; of which great Possessions, that the Reader may have some Idea, we shall insert at length the Claim itself in the very Words in which it was then made.

*The Claim of John Percevale, of Castlewaring, in the County of Kildare, Esquire, Son and Heir of Sir Philip Percevale, Knight, of the same, deceased.*

Corke, County of Corke.

“ THE said *John Perceval* † claims the Lord-  
 “ ships, Manors, Castles, Towns, Lands, Tene-  
 “ ments, and Hereditaments of *Logbert*, and the Fo-  
 “ rest of *Logbert, Tuckersstown, Thomastown, Gortfin-*  
 “ *lare, Kill-Patrick, Ballibrittig, Balligiblin, Lisfen-*  
 “ *cullen, Knockenleagh, Rathdenan, Kilgerah, Kanturk,*  
 “ and the Island of *Kanturk, The Park*, alias *Dromich-*  
 “ *clare, Killinleagh, Knockesgeagh, Knochardraghan, West-*  
 “ *Ballywollaghan, Knocknegeeby, Rosline, Moylerach,*  
 “ *Ratbranny, Clonrobin*, two fifth Parts of a Plowland  
 “ of *Monicurnine, Ballintobber, Dromrafall, Tinger-*  
 “ *ghy*, and *Gearinsbeaghy*; and nine Pounds Sterling  
 “ payable out of, and issuing out of *Garrimacownye*  
 “ and *Gortnecolagh*; all which Premises are situated,  
 “ lying and being in the Barony of *Duballow*, and  
 “ County of *Corke*.

“ THE

\* From the Commissioners of the Revenue's Certificate penes Comit. de Egmont.

† Ex Autograph. penes Comit. de Egmont.

## 336 *A Genealogical History*

“ THE said *John Perceval* likewise claimeth the  
 “ Manors, Castles, Towns, and Lands of *Annagh*,  
 “ *Coolmore*, *Rochestown*, *Culleagh*, *Kilgrogan*, *Rath*,  
 “ *Carrigeen*, *Ballyadam*, *Ballintample*, *Ballymaccow*,  
 “ *Farrendine*, *Drumcarbud*, *Ballygreasy*, *Liscarroll*, *Ra-*  
 “ *clare*, *Spittle*, *Killgullane*, *Ballinlinny*, and the *Ar-*  
 “ *denne* of *Ballaghbowra*, *Ballinvalleyvecky*, *Tullig Boan-*  
 “ *nagh*, *Curraghnelabeshery*, *Kilgonane*, *Farrenbearty*,  
 “ *Garrenigivogue*, *Breoliticlagh*, *Ardskeagh*, *Ballintrel-*  
 “ *like*, with their and every of their Appurtenances;  
 “ and also a yearly chief Rent, &c. all situate and be-  
 “ ing in the Barony of *Orrery*, in the said County of  
 “ *Corke*.

“ THE said *John Perceval* claims the Manor, Castle,  
 “ Town, and Lands of *Carriglemleary*, with the Ap-  
 “ purtenances, and the Town and Lands of *Baltydon-*  
 “ *nell*, *Derryaume*, and *Balintlea*, in the Barony of  
 “ *Fermoy*, and County of *Corke* aforesaid. And also  
 “ ten Shillings *per* Plough-land, issuing out of *Dri-*  
 “ *nagh*, *Iniscarty*, *Kilsbovan*, *Farrenmacotter*, *Temple-*  
 “ *murray*, *Ardskeagh*, *Ballyntrelick*, *Annagh*, *Colemore*,  
 “ *Rochestowne*, *Culleagh*, &c.

### Tipperary, County of Tipperary.

“ THE said *John Perceval* claimeth the Manor,  
 “ Castles, Towns, and Lands of *Nenagh*, alias the *Ne-*  
 “ *nagh*, *Templemore*, alias *Crockinny*, *Ballypecke*, *Car-*  
 “ *ling*, *Killawran*, *Lisdonouly*, alias *Lisdonnellen*, the  
 “ *Grange of Nenagh*, *Ballyhaninbeg*, *Bawne*, *Denemo-*  
 “ *nagh*, *Lebeserah*, *Kilbeg*, *Carriggegowne*, *Knockbrack*,  
 “ *Rathmoyle*, *Glanigeiry*, *Coalecannogh*, *Kilgregan*, *Bal-*  
 “ *libeg*, *Killogary*, *Curragbleogh*, *Ballerourkemore*, *Gar-*  
 “ *ranballiverfskin*, *Rospologhmore*, *Loffneagh*, *Ballyn-*  
 “ *vellan*, *Ballymukvafey*, *Meary*, *Kiltbelane*, *Burrefseg*,  
 “ *Aghallybegg*, *Kelvillaglabay*, *Kellins*, *Lisneriddoge*, *Bal-*  
 “ *lycbinkin*, *Ballyadam*, *Gortnegilliny*, *Culleragh*, *Bal-*  
 “ *lyrary*, *Rackineelyne*, *Garrymore*, *Kelkerasker*, alias  
 “ *Farrendowda*, *Kearone*, and *Balligibbon*; and also  
 “ the Towns and Lands of *Kilmore*, *Ballypiercy*, *Scrip-*  
 “ *stown*,

*of the House of YVERY, &c.* 337

“ *stown, and Caberabane* ; and the Town and Lands  
“ of *Rismurtagh, and Rathmoely*, with their and every  
“ of their Appurtenances : all which said Premisses are  
“ situate, lying and being in the said County of *Tippe-*  
“ *rary*.

*County of Catherlogh.*

“ THE said *John Perceval* claimeth the Manor,  
“ Castle, Town and Lands of *Cloghgrenane, and New-*  
“ *stown*, with the Appurtenances, in the said County  
“ of *Catherlogh*.

*Waterford, County of Waterford.*

“ THE said *John Perceval* claimeth the Town and  
“ Lands of *Knocknegeeragh*, in the said County of *Wa-*  
“ *terford*, by virtue of a Lease thereof for divers  
“ Years yet in being.

*Kerry, County of Kerry.*

“ THE said *John Perceval* claimeth the Town and  
“ Lands of *Anglemont*, in the said County of *Kerry*.

*Mayo, County of Mayo.*

“ THE Manors, Castles, Towns, and Lands of  
“ *Dowlagh, Clogher, Derritblathye, Carrowcoolagh,*  
“ *Dirrivonagh, alias Draminonagh, Carrowcleagh, Bal-*  
“ *lingow, Knocknawolin, Shandrum, Roselar, Knockne-*  
“ *boby, Rosedowne, Rossow, Ackill, Killdawnaght, Slew-*  
“ *more, Mornecronane, Icheroy, Qym, Downkinally, Lit-*  
“ *teragh, alias Morveagh, or Carrowgarrow, Dowrgh,*  
“ *Ballycori, Claggin, Rosfinagh, Tullagha, Dowvorielly,*  
“ *Ballycory, Agbris, Rathcarriskacaonla, Raby, Inish-*  
“ *Towrow, alias Frigh-Island, Carrowbegg, Inchquirke,*  
“ *Carrowfallagh, Rossveragh, Bouresoule, Rossgeblin,*  
“ *Skirclagh, Kilcernagh, Derryford, Killcrick, Ross-*  
“ *more, Derayaday, Carraneboy, Balliveighan, Carrow-*  
“ *bane, Knockyrougnt, Knocklam, Knockteneveal, Knock-*  
“ *negee, Kilbridy, Triennemore, alias Tennemore, Car-*  
“ *rowbeg, Graffy, Roseleane, Carrowkennedy, alias*  
“ *Graignady, Carrowkennedy, alias Carrowkillina,*  
“ *Derryclittagh, Derryramgree, Draminlean, Derrycan-*  
VOL. II. X x “ *turd,*



## 338 *A Genealogical History*

“ *turd, Knockbanlomane, Killmore, Lenarrow, Ballyki-*  
 “ *nard, Carrowmore, Rosseturban, Rossbarnagh, Car-*  
 “ *roga, and Straffarnow, with their and every of their*  
 “ Appurtenances, situate and being in the said County  
 “ of *Mayo*.

### Kildare, *County of Kildare.*

“ THE said *John Perceval* claims a yearly Chief-Rent  
 “ of seventeen Shillings and Sixpence, Sterling, from  
 “ *Richard Alben*, and his Heirs, due to the Manor of  
 “ *Oughterard*; the yearly Chief-Rent of ten Shillings,  
 “ Sterling, from *Thomas Aylmer*, and his Heirs, for a  
 “ Freehold in *Tobberbridy*; the Chief-Rent of seven-  
 “ teen Shillings and ten-pence halfpenny, Sterling,  
 “ from *Edward Allen*, of *Bishop's-Court*, and his Heirs,  
 “ for his Freehold in *Oughterard*; several yearly Chief-  
 “ Rents out of *Clinche's-Rent, Scurlock's-Land, Sut-*  
 “ *ton's-Land, Young's-Land, Skee's-Land, Hog's-Land;*  
 “ and Suit of Court belonging to the said *John Perce-*  
 “ *val's* Manor of *Oughterard*.

### Dublin, *County of Dublin.*

“ THE said *John Perceval* claimeth five hundred  
 “ Acres of Land in *Newcastle*; two hundred Acres of  
 “ Land in *Lough-ton*; and the Town and Lands of  
 “ *Ballinakilly*, containing threescore and fourteen  
 “ Acres.

“ THE said *John Perceval* claimeth a Corrody, or  
 “ yearly Profit, issuing out of, or chargeable on the  
 “ Lands of *Kinsaley*, in the said County, *viz.* to him  
 “ and his Heirs, for the four Terms of the Year, ap-  
 “ pointed for Causes in Law to be determined, and  
 “ two Horse-men, or Serving-men, in his, or his Heirs  
 “ Company, sufficient and competent Meat, Drink,  
 “ and Lodging, and other Necessaries, fit and conve-  
 “ nient for Gentlemen to have, and Keeping for their  
 “ Horses or Nags, and their Boys, *viz.* for every such  
 “ Horse or Nag, by the Night, four Sheafes of Oats  
 “ double-banded, besides so much Hay and Glee as  
 “ the said Horses should eat or need; and also for the  
 “ Boys

*of the House of YVERY, &c.* 339

“ Boys such Meat as the Holder of the Plough should  
 “ have : And in the absence of the said *John Perceval*,  
 “ his Heirs or Assigns, the Servant or Agent of the  
 “ said *John Perceval*, his Heirs or Assigns, to be re-  
 “ ceived for Horfe Meat, and Man’s Meat, with other  
 “ Necessaries, as aforesaid, for the Time aforesaid.

“ THE said *John Perceval* claims the Benefit of se-  
 “ veral Statutes of Staple, Recognizances and Judg-  
 “ ments acknowledged before the twenty-third of Oc-  
 “ tober, 1641, to Sir *Philip Perceval* [his Father,] or  
 “ to some other for his Use, by several Persons, viz.  
 “ by *Dermot Mac Carty*, alias *Macdonnagh*, of *Kan-*  
 “ *turk*, Esq; *Daniel Sullivane*, alias *O-Sullivane*, alias  
 “ *O-Sullivane-bear*, of *Beerhaven*, *Nicholas Brown*, of  
 “ *Ballisnane*, in *Com. Kerry*, *John Brown*, of *Kilcanim*,  
 “ in *Com. Kerry*, *Teige Oge Carty*, of *Killbarrymorroghy*,  
 “ in the County of *Corke*, *Dominick Tirry*, of *Kille-*  
 “ *niglory*, Sir *Edward Fitzgerald*, of *Ballinmalooe*, and  
 “ *Edward Fitzgerald*, of *Castleliffin*, and others, in  
 “ certain Sums of Money : But in regard the said *John*  
 “ *Perceval*’s Writings are in *England*, whereby he  
 “ doth not know what other Persons are bound in the  
 “ said Statutes, Judgments and Recognizances, and  
 “ the Sums they are bound in, he humbly craves Li-  
 “ berty for the inserting thereof, upon view of his  
 “ Writings and Evidences.

*Summa Total. Feodor. Milit.* 78 £ dimid.

*Summa Totalis Acrar.* 62,502.—*Hib. Mens.*—

\* *Anglic. Mens.* 999,900.

Val. Savage, Agent for  
 John Perceval, Esq;

X x 2

To

---

\* By the reductory Table of Irish Acres in the English Measure—the Number of English Acres appears to be above one Hundred and one Thousand; so that either the Reduction was not formerly so exact, or some small Part of the first Number were not of the common Standard of Irish Measure.—It must be likewise observed, that there are two Copies of this Claim: They differ in one or two trifling Articles, which seem to have been omitted by Mistake in one Copy.—In every thing else they agree, as may be seen by comparing this Copy with that which is entered in the first Vol. fol. 92.

## 340 *A Genealogical History*

To this great Account must be added the Manors of *Castlewarning* and *Oughterard*, in the County of *Kildare*, which were then in Jointure to his Mother, and in her Possession.—\* The Rent of six Houses in *Dublin*, value 169*l.* 10*s.* The Manors, Castles, Towns, and Lands of *Gortinlongport* and *Fonemoile*, *Monecomritt*, *Uragh*, *Muckron Drumore*, and part of *Glanboyd*, in the County of *Leitrim*, in all which, as we presume, he had been already confirmed, since they are not mentioned in the Claim aforesaid.

*CROMWELL* appears at this Time to have interested himself exceedingly for him, and notwithstanding all the Chicane and Representations of those who were employed in the Revenue, and those who still had their Eye upon so great a Forfeiture, he prevailed to have a Lease made to him of twenty-eight Carucates, or Plough-Lands and an half, under the Rent of ten Shillings *per* Plough-Land, payable on the first of *May*, and first of *November*; which, notwithstanding the Hardship of the Detention of the rest, and the Mortification of becoming Tenant to his own Estate, was, however, a great Amendment of his Circumstances, and the more comfortable, as being a very probable Earnest of the Restoration of the whole.

THE Peace of *Ireland* was about this Time firmly established:— For soon after the King's Death, the Pope's Nuncio, who, in Conjunction with the old *Irish* and the Clergy, had (as we have before at large observed) rejected the Peace concluded by the supreme Council, which had plunged the Nation into the most fatal Confusion, by forcing the Marquis of *Ormond* to deliver *Dublin* into the Hands of the Parliament, and by preventing a Union between the two Interests in *Ireland*, which at that Juncture had probably not only restored the King, but established the Independancy of *Ireland* for ever.— This Man being deservedly become odious to all honest Men, and the Commonalty themselves being no longer led so blindly by their  
Priests,

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. VII. fol. 310.

Priests, (who had absolved them from all Dependance even upon the Leaders of the Catholick Party) at length was obliged to fly that Kingdom upon the twenty-third of *September*, 1648-9. — But *Owen Rua Oneil*, at the Head of the ancient *Irish*, together with the Clergy and the bigotted Part of the Catholicks, still maintained the Separation they had made; and with an enthusiastic Obstinacy persisted in this detestible Conduct, till they gave *Cromwell* full Leisure to make an intire Reduction of the whole Kingdom, which he did in nine Months, staying no longer there than from the second of *August*, 1649, to the Middle of *May*, 1650, when he was called over to carry the War into *Scotland*, where King *Charles* the Second soon after arrived, in order to invade *England*, at the Head of the Troops of that Nation.

*IRETON*, who was left Lord Deputy in the place of *Cromwell*, found but insignificant Opposition; and *Ludlow*, who upon his Death succeeded him in Command in *May*, 1651, had yet less. In *August*, 1653, *Fleetwood*, who had married *Ireton's* Widow, and *Cromwell's* Daughter, went over thither with supreme Command, and found little more to do than to receive the Submission of those few who stood out, rather as Robbers and Banditti, than regular Forces; and the twenty-sixth of *September* following, the Parliament of *England* declared the Rebellion of *Ireland* totally subdued. — The Settlement of *Ireland* was now become the most important Point. An Act of Confiscation passed on the twelfth of *August*, 1652, and another for settling the Estates of the Adventurers, on the twenty-fifth of *September*, 1653, which was confirmed afterwards again in 1656. An High Commission Court was erected for Trial of the Rebels. — Multitudes who submitted on Conditions, were transported abroad, which so diminished the Inhabitants of that Kingdom, that great Encouragements were thought necessary to be given to the *English* who would go over to settle in their Places. — Another Point of Politicks was, to transplant the Popish Inhabitants, who

2

yet

yet remained, from their respective Habitations, into the Province of *Connaught*, who thus by change of Habitation, lost all that Dependance upon their Lords, and all that Attachment to their Clans, which had been the Growth of so many Ages: a Work, which if it had been more universally pursued, would have more effectually broken the *Irish* Interest, than any other Policy whatsoever.

To forward this Settlement \*, *Cromwell* sent over Sir *John Perceval*, with General *Fleetwood*, and he was there chiefly entrusted in the important Affair of the *Transplantation*, of which he had been the principal Adviser, in Opposition to other more violent Measures. He was likewise employed in the *Union and Division of Parishes*, and consulted upon all the weightiest Business of the Settlement of that Kingdom, sparing neither Charge or Pains in that great and difficult Work. — There are still extant † Letters from *Fleetwood* to the Government of *England*, expressing the highest Sense of his Utility and Merit. — And he so recommended himself by these Services §, that he recovered again the Office of the King's Bench, which had been sequestered with his Estate, from the Time of his Father's Death till then. — And upon the sixth of *July*, 1653 ||, the Commissioners of the Revenue of the Sequestrations received Orders from the Government, to give him the full and entire Possession of his Estate, which had now been of a prodigious Value, but for the great Debts of his Father, and the Engagements which he was then forced to enter into to provide for his Sisters, all which Charge he was obliged to answer, during the Confusion of those Times, by the Sale of above fifteen thousand Acres of his best Land, at little more than two Years Purchase.

C R O M-

---

\* Ex Chart. Famil. Vol. VI. N° 1101.

† Ibid, § Ibid.

|| Ibid. N° 1089.

CROMWELL was now arrived at the Sovereign and Absolute Power of these Kingdoms. From very obscure Beginnings, and from a rash Conduct, he rose from a low Condition at the Commencement of the War, to the Supreme Authority. He became, by a Violence of Temper, and bitter Expressions against the King, the Idol of the more determined Party in the Parliament. Those Measures which often sink a Man, and which at least bring his Prudence into question, made him appear a safe Instrument for those whose Views and Conditions were the most desperate. This gained him an eminent Command in the Army, from which the Earl of *Essex*, for a contrary Spirit, was displaced. ——— Soon after, in *June* 1646, he fought the Battle of *Naseby* with Success, which confirmed his Election to the great Employment he was in, and proved decisive to the King's Affairs. ——— The King in *May* 1646, threw himself upon the *Scots* for Protection, but they sold him to the Parliament, and *Cromwell* would have made his Terms with him to his own Advantage, but having by intercepted Letters discovered the King's Intention to deceive him, he determined to take away his Life, as the only Means then left for his own Preservation. By Seditions of the Army, which he artfully raised, he terrified the Parliament to abet his Measures, expelled many, made many fly for Safety, till there remained only such as concurred in his Project of trying the King. — A Court was commissioned for that Purpose, he was arraigned with great Formality of Justice, condemned as a Traitor to the People he had governed, and finally, beheaded upon the thirtieth of *January*, 1648.

THE Parliament being thus under the Dread and Influence of the military Power, *Cromwell* contented himself with the Supreme Power of the Army, and still acted in seeming Obedience to the Parliament, till all the Disorders of the three Kingdoms were appeased. By the Beginning of the Year 1650, after a Struggle of nine Months, as we have shewn, he had reduced *Ireland*. ——— Upon his Return, he invaded

*Scotland*, whither King *Charles* the Second had retired, and whence he was preparing to invade *England*. — He worked upon the Weakness of *Fairfax*, who was nominally, though not really, in Command above him : and upon some Scruples in that Lord, (who was a very weak Man) as to the Justice of that War, he obtained the Title of Captain-General of all the Forces. He gave the *Scots* an absolute Defeat at *Dunbar*, upon the third of *September*, 1650; and the next Year followed them into *England*, with their King at their Head, and obtained a compleat Victory over that Nation, and all the Remnant of the Royalists, who had joined them at *Worcester*. This great Event happened upon the same third of *September*, 1651. And now the Army having no farther Employment in either of the three Kingdoms, he had Leisure to pursue his grand Design; and after amusing the Public for a considerable Time, with some Projects of a Settlement of the Government, on Pretence that the Parliament were dilatory, and neglected that Settlement, that they might continue in the Power themselves. He went down to the House with a Party of Soldiers, upon the twentieth of *April*, 1653, in a most daring, insolent, and furious Manner, and dismissed that Parliament, which had sat twelve Years, had done the most extraordinary Things that were ever done by Parliament, had exercised the greatest Power, and had enjoyed the Affections of the People in the highest Degree.

THE next Step which was taken by *Cromwell*, was to appoint a Council of his Officers, by which Authority a Convention, in the Nature of a Parliament, was appointed, consisting of about one hundred and twenty Members, who met the fourth of *July*, 1653, and resigned their Power again in *December*, 1653; upon the Dissolution of which, his Council of Officers invested him with the Supreme Authority, under the Title of *Protector of the Three Nations*. — After this, he appointed a Parliament to meet on the third of *September*, 1654, which was to consist of  
four

four hundred Members for *England*, elected by Counties and great Cities only, to the Exclusion of the smaller Boroughs, thirty Members for *Ireland*, and thirty for *Scotland*.

THERE appears about this Time an entire Friendship between *Henry Cromwell*, the Son of the Protector, and Sir *John Perceval*, which had its first Rise at the University of *Cambridge*, and continued till the Destruction of that Family. \* Sir *John* returning into *England* in *May* 1654, was then received by the Father and the Son with great Distinction, and was designed one of the Members for *Ireland*, to serve in that Parliament, which met on the fourth of *September*, 1654; but being fearful of engaging too deeply in the Measures of that Government, he declined the Favour, and excused himself so well to *Cromwell*, on account of his public and private Concerns in *Ireland*, that he dexterously avoided that Distinction, without incurring, however, any Suspicion or Displeasure from the Protector.

THE Protector now carrying his Power with a high Hand, and having dissolved that Parliament we have just now mentioned, upon the thirty-first of *January* of the same Year in which it was called, Sir *John Perceval* grew very apprehensive that the Government would never stand long in the Condition it was in, he was therefore determined, as much as possible, to withdraw from that Intimacy which others courted, and he so much feared. And having laboured incessantly on that Side the Water, in Conjunction with the Lord *Brogbill*, and one of his own Tenants, *Vincent Gookin*, then an eminent Man with *Cromwell*, to settle a firm and lasting Quiet on that Side the Sea, and for which he was distinguished with the Honour of Knighthood from *Henry Cromwell*, his Friend; he returned to *Ireland* again, and landed there in *July*,  
1655,

---

\* Family Collections, original Letters, N<sup>o</sup> 1124, 1133, 1149, 1173.



## 346 *A Genealogical History*

1655, from whence he retired to his Castle of *Lifcarrol*\*, and endeavouring to keep himself as free as he possibly could from any Share whatsoever in the public Management of Affairs at that Juncture.

It was during this Recess that he first found Leisure to think serjously of the Continuance of his Family †, and placed his Affections on *Catherine*, the only Daughter of *Robert Southwell*, of *Kinsale*, Esquire, one of the most amiable and excellent Women that any Age ever produced, and of an Extraction very ancient and honourable, of which we shall come to treat more particularly, when we come to speak farther of her.

SIR *John Perceval* now thought of nothing more than to continue in that agreeable Retirement, which he had chosen upon his own Estate, and in the Improvement and strengthening his Interest there, by drawing to himself a great Number of *English* and *Irish* Protestants to cultivate his Lands, and by distinguishing those of the Catholic Interest who had remained faithful to his Family, and shewn themselves least factious in the late Disorders. In this Occupation he had already made some Progress, when he was interrupted in it by the Arrival of *Henry Cromwell*, the second Son of the Protector, who was appointed Lord-Lieutenant of that Kingdom in 1655. This young Man had excellent Parts, and as good a Nature, which inclined him to the Acquaintance of Men of Worth and Understanding. — Those Qualities recommended Sir *John Perceval* to the first Share in his Esteem, which concurring with the former Intimacy and Friendship he had contracted with him, and corroborated by that superlative Knowledge in the Affairs of *Ireland*, for which he was very eminent, insensibly brought him again into public Business, in which he was almost solely consulted and relied upon, during all that Administration. An Honour which he could not avoid, without Suspicion, when pressed upon him, as  
it

---

\* Family Collections, original Letters, N<sup>o</sup> 1222.

† Family Letters, Vol. VII. fol. 227, and 228.

it was ; and finding this the Case, he cheerfully submitted to the Hazard, but with a Resolution of making no farther Use of his Interest, than for the Service of the Public ; a Conduct, which was proved by the Event to be as wise as honest.

THE Union-Parliament which we last mentioned, having entered into Debates of too high a Nature for the Security of the Protector, and having, by the Liberty they had taken in their Considerations on the then present Settlement of Affairs, displeas'd the Author of their Power, he dissolv'd them upon the thirty-first of *January*, 1654, after they had sat little more than two Months ; after which he resort'd again to his old Council of Officers, by whose Appointment the Kingdom was divided into Districts, and govern'd by Major-Generals. But finding it impossible, without some Appearance of a Representative, to keep a People quiet who had liv'd from all Time under a Parliamentary Constitution, he summon'd another Parliament, which met the seventeenth of *September*, 1656.

ONE of the first Affairs that came into Debate, was the Security of his Highness *Oliver Cromwell's* Person, which was not a little expos'd to Danger, both from the Resentments of the 'Republican, and the Intrigues of the Royal Party. An Act was accordingly pass'd to this Effect, upon the twenty-seventh of *November* the same Year : and such was the Desire of *Cromwell* to engage Sir *John Perceval* to his Interest, though he avoid'd all Occasions of it, and that he sufficiently knew his Averseness to enter into any deeper Engagements with him, that he nevertheless appointed him *one of the Commissioners for the Security of his own Person, and Continuation of the Nation in Peace and Safety* † ; labouring thus to gain him by a Point of Honour, and by a Mark of Confidence, politickly at the same time intending to mark him out in a particular manner as a suspicious Person to the other Party, who

Y y 2

little

---

† Scobell's Collections.

348 *A Genealogical History*

little imagined that a Trust of this Nature was conferred upon a Man, who received it with such Reluctance.

DURING the Session of this Parliament, *Cromwell*, to render it as resemblant as he could to the ancient Constitution, appointed a House of Lords, to which he summoned the principal Officers of the Army, and some others, whom he thought most attached to his Person, and either by their Power, Figure, Posts, or Fortune, most likely to support the Dignity of that Body. For a Seat in this House he had destined Sir *John Perceval*; but he refused it absolutely \*, and made use of his Friend *Henry Cromwell* to make his Denial and Excuses for him, as well as he could.

It is not necessary to pursue the Story of that Government much farther, it is sufficient to say, that this Parliament growing also very troublesome, the Commons disputing the Power of the Lords House, and being intractable in other Particulars, they were dissolved also, upon the fourth of *February*, 1657; after which nothing memorable happened, the Protector governing from that time forward wholly by his Council of Officers, the chief of whom was *Fleetwood*, his own Brother-in-law.——Not long after this he died, and *Richard*, his eldest Son, succeeded, but could not maintain his Authority; after which, the Nation fell into a kind of Anarchy, chiefly governed by the Army, who, as their different Officers prevailed, either directed all by their own Councils, or by the Assistance of the old Parliament, which for a Time they called together, to colour their own Power, till at length the Restoration was effected by one of those Commanders, *Monk*, who found it too hazardous to attempt the Regal Power for himself, and thought it a more certain Way to Greatness, to be more moderate in his Ambition, than most of his Fellow-Soldiers had been. During this Transaction, what is most memorable as to Sir *John Perceval*, was the Use he made of his Friend-

---

\* Family Letters, Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup> 1173.

Friendship with *Henry Cromwell*, whose tame Resignation of the Power of his Family, at the Time of his Brother's Depofal, was principally owing to the Instances of this Gentleman.

THIS Conduct had no small Effect in his Favour, upon the Accession of King *Charles* the Second §, and had already so recommended him to those who immediately brought about that great Event, that he was named by the Parliament of *England*, who then returned to the House, one of the four Counsellors to the President of Munster, and appointed by those commissioned by them to manage the Government of *Ireland*, Clerk of the Crown, Prothonotary of the Common-Pleas, and Keeper of the Public Accounts, upon the seventh of *May* preceding the Return of the King, which followed upon the twenty ninth of the same Month, 1660.

SOON after that great Change of Affairs, he was sworn one of the Privy-Council; and upon the ninth of *September*, 1661, created a Baronet, with this remarkable Clause in the Patent, never (as we can learn) granted before or since, “\* That the eldest Son, or  
“ Heir apparent, of every Baronet of this Family,  
“ should, at the Age of twenty-one Years, upon Notice given thereof to the Lord Deputy-Chamberlain,  
“ or Vice-Chamberlain of the Household, or in the  
“ Absence of them, to any other Officer or Minister  
“ attendant upon the Person of the King, to receive  
“ the Order of Knighthood from the King, his Heirs  
“ and Successors, or the said Deputy for the Time being,  
“ of the King, his Heirs and Successors, *To have,*  
“ *bold and enjoy* (altho’ in the Life-time of his Father,  
“ or Ancestor, existing a Baronet by Virtue of this Patent) by Virtue of the said Knighthood, the same  
“ State Degree, Dignity, Stile, Title, Name, Place and  
“ Precedency, with all and every other Concessions made  
“ to the said Sir *John Perceval*, and his Heirs for ever.”

By

---

§ Family Letters, Vol. VI. fol. 803.

\* Ex Autograph. penes Comit. de Egmont.

By which Clause the Chief and the Heir Male of this Family, are always to exist Baronets at the same Time.

SIR *John Perceval* was a Man of too good Sense to rest satisfied at that Juncture, with any temporary Instance of Favour, or particular Mark of Respect, such as this we have last mentioned certainly was, and was intended to be; notwithstanding the general Act of Indemnity passed at the King's Return, and his Declaration antecedent to it, he was still very apprehensive that he might be one time or other questioned for the Engagements he had entered into under the Commonwealth, and under *Cromwell*: and he knew so well the Instability of Affairs in Courts, that he thought a Change might happen, when no Distinction would be made between the Honour of his Conduct, during the Time he was embarked in that Interest, and the factious Views of the greatest Incendiaries of that Time, he therefore made use of that favourable Conjuncture, to obtain a Patent of special Pardon for all Treasons, Rebellions \*, &c. and for all Engagements, of what Nature soever, of which he might have been guilty, either under the Parliament, the Commonwealth, or the Protector, from the beginning of his Life, to the twenty-ninth of *December*, the twelfth of *Charles* the Second, *A. D.* 1660. Which Patent bore Date at *Westminster*, the twenty-second of *April*, 1662, the fourteenth of *Charles* the Second; and was speedily passed in due Form, under the Great Seals of *England* and *Ireland*.

IN 1661 he was chosen Knight of the Shire for the County of *Corke* †, and served in that Parliament which, in the following Year, concluded the important Business of the Act of Settlement in *Ireland*, under which all the Estates of that Kingdom are now held; and this great Work was principally conducted by the Earl of *Orrery*, and Sir *John Perceval*, whose superior Knowledge of the Interest of *Ireland*, was universally acknowledged.

BUT

---

\* Ex Autograph. penes Comit. de Egmont.

† Journal of Parliament.

*of the House of YVERY, &c.* 351

BUT from this Parliament this Family received a very severe Blow.—— For by the Abolition of the Court of Wards, which was by them effected in 1662, they were deprived of their great hereditary Employment in that Court, which appears from the Papers of the Family to have produced never less than 3,400 *l.* *per annum*, in the lowest Years.—— Being by far the most beneficial Place, though not the first in Rank of that Commission.—— This Employment depending greatly upon the Grant of Wardships, (of which it was entitled legally to the Choice of the two best that fell, after the Master had made his Choice of two for himself) and being allowed as many more as the Interest of the Party could obtain, it amounted often to a much greater Sum.—— The Profits of this Place rose so high in one Year, 1640, the last that this Family truly enjoyed it, (the Rebellion breaking out soon after) that it produced in neat Money seven thousand five hundred Pounds.—— But these Advantages being not then prudent to be divulged, nor capable of being brought to Account, and some lurking Objections to Sir *John Perceval* still subsisting, on account of his former Conduct, he could obtain no more in lieu of it, than a Sum of 5000 *l.* nor could he even compass that, without great Difficulty.

IT appears that he struggled very hard to prevent the passing of this Act; not only because he had so much private Reason to oppose it, but because he likewise thought it very prejudicial to that Kingdom.—— In this View he presented several Memorials to the King\*, shewing with great Strength of Reason (though he acknowledged it to have been an oppressive Institution, and to require to be much corrected in the Direction) yet that it was highly necessary in that Kingdom, where nothing could entirely reduce the Natives to the Condition of good Subjects, or to the Protestant Religion, but an Establishment of this Kind, which entitled the State to the Education of all the Men of Fortune

---

\* Ex Autograph. penes Com. de Egmont.

Fortune in it. — He demonstrated, by numerous Examples, how vast a Benefit had in that Respect accrued to the Public from it, since the Reign of King *James* the First to that Time, and that it could not fail totally to change the Religion and Manners of the *Irish*, in less than one Century, if suffered to continue. — He urged likewise the great Confusion that would arise in Descents and Pedigrees, and Titles to Estates, from the Want of such a Court, who carefully preserved all Traces of this Kind, and equally guarded the Interests and Fortunes of helpless Orphans, who would be otherwise exposed to the Villany of bad Guardians, and wicked Relations. — All these were Considerations of very great Weight, and which have since been proved to be such, by the Adherence of the Natives to their old Religion, by a great Confusion of Titles, and other enormous Abuses, in the Management of the Estates of Minors, but the Example of *England*, where this Court had been already laid aside, and the popular Clamour against it, rendered all those Arguments of no Effect. — Nay, their very Force made them the less effectual, for the Popish Party, knowing how much their Interests were concerned in the Consequences of this Court, secretly used their utmost Endeavours, (which were of no small Force in that Reign) against it. — The King himself, who either regarded no Religion, or was even then converted to that, did not entertain the most favourable Opinion of it, from these Considerations. — He had likewise a farther Inducement to its Dissolution, which was the Prospect of a great Increase of his Revenue. — And this he compassed in a manner attended with Circumstances of no great Honour to himself; — for taking Advantage of the Disposition in *Ireland* to free themselves from this Branch of the Prerogative, he so managed, that the Parliament there was made to believe, that upon granting an hereditary Excise, they should obtain their Desire. — Whereupon Heads of a Bill were prepared to grant this Revenue of Excise, and to abolish the Court of Wards,

by

by one Act. ——— But after the Parliament had advanced far in it, he suggested that it would be more decent to divide the Matter into two Bills, that the thing might appear rather a Concession from, than a Condition with the Crown. ——— This being done, the King passed the one Bill, and rejected the other, obtaining, by this mean Artifice, the Revenue, but leaving the Condition, upon which alone it was granted, unperformed. ——— The Parliament, however, though thus deterred, still persisting in the ardent Desire to carry this Point, submitted to grant a second Equivalent, and gave the Hearth-Money for it, to the Crown Hereditarily, which it still enjoys. ——— Thus that People, tamely and weakly in all Respects, established these heavy Charges upon themselves and their Posterity, the Excise amounting to above 140,000*l.* and the Hearth-Money to above 42,000*l. per annum*, in lieu of the Court of Wards, from which the Crown never received in that Kingdom above 10,000*l. per annum*.

A Plot for a new Infurrection, and for the Surprisal of the Castle of *Dublin* †, by Colonel *Jepson*, and several others of the old Officers of the Republican Army, being discovered in 1663, *Lachir*, one of the chief Conspirators, was brought to his Trial; and the Government desiring to convince the World that they acted in this Affair, at so critical a Juncture, with as great Justice and Impartiality as possible, a very honourable Jury was appointed, and Sir *John Perceval* was the Foreman of it.

IT was now high time, after the Settlement of the more immediate Concerns of the Government in such Points as related to its Security, to consider how to recover the Trade of that Kingdom, which was reduced

---

Note—The Hereditary Excise consists of two Branches. The *Imported Excise*, which amounts to above 78,000*l. per Ann.* The *Inland Excise*, which amounts to very near as much.

\* Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond.



duced almost to nothing by the terrible Devastations of Rebellion, for near twenty successive Years. It was full twenty-three Years since the Rebellion first broke out, and there had scarce been any Quiet there, but the last four Years of that Period, after the Restoration, and most of that Time had been spent in settling Disputes among the different Parties of the Kingdom, and in suppressing, or guarding against new Plots and Disturbances. A Council of Trade was therefore then established in *Ireland*, with very great Prospect of Advantage to the Country \*, and Sir *John Perceval* was appointed one of the first Members of it, upon the twenty-sixth of *May*, 1664.

THE Condition of *Ireland* was now extremely low, the Rents of it not above eight hundred thousand Pounds *per annum*, and its Specie not above two hundred thousand Pounds. It was not without extreme Difficulty, that Money could be brought to pay the small Rents for which the Lands were let, to answer the Taxes of the Crown, or to return the Ballance of such Commodities as the Necessities of the Country required to import from *England*. They had very little Trade with any Country but with *England*, and no Capacity of satisfying these Demands, but by the Exportation of about seventy thousand Head of Cattle thither, the full Value of which amounted to no more than one hundred and forty thousand Pounds. ——— It might have been imagined at such a Juncture, that *England* could have entertained no Jealousy of their Prosperity, no Apprehension of the Greatness, nor any Envy of the private Fortunes of that Kingdom. It must surely seem to all other Nations, and in all future Times, a very imprudent Conduct, to offer any Discouragement to the Improvement of that Country, and to the better settling it with new People, when all the Calamities, even of the three Kingdoms, were certainly owing to, or at least could never have happened in that high Degree, but from the Idleness

---

\* Laruens's *State of Ireland*.

ness and Poverty which prevailed there, and created a dangerous Dependence on the chief Men; a Poverty which kept them ignorant, and prevented their Change of a Religion, ever dangerous to the Civil and Religious Rights of this Nation. The most rational Measures to have pursued with that Country, doubtless were such which were not then, nor have ever yet been followed; Trade and Manufactures should have been promoted, no Difference made between the Interests of the two Kingdoms, no Oppression to discountenance the poor People of the Country, or to have alienated the Affections of those who remained there. By these Measures they had grown up in one common and hearty Cause had brought into the public Ballance the Labour and Strength of two Millions of Inhabitants, and had rendered that Country an invincible Barrier to all Invasions from abroad, whereas it still remains exposed to the Attempts of the Enemies of this Kingdom, and is still conducted in such a manner as to afford a certain and great Assistance to ill-designing Men, whenever the Affairs of *England* shall return into the same critical Circumstances in which they have so often been, and in which, from the Vicissitude of mundane Affairs they may often be again.

It is the less surprizing that Maxims of this pernicious kind should have prevailed, at a Time when the Conduct was so new, that its desperate Effects had not been yet experienced, since after a most fatal Trial of these Measures for near fourscore Years, this false and erroneous way of thinking is still so prevalent in *England*. It was the Lust of Power which hurried the *Leaders* of the two Houses of Parliament into it, and it was the mistaken and misinformed Notions of *the rest* that, enabled them to carry their Point. The Parliament, during the Time of the Rebellion, and the Confusion of that Conjuncture, wrested this Part of the Prerogative from the Crown, and had then first began to exercise a kind of Sovereignty over that Kingdom. The People of *Ireland* affirm, that there was no one Precedent for the *English* to interfere with them in the

Business of the Legislature before that Period, the *English* Lawyers themselves had exploded that Doctrine, and the greatest Members of the *English* Parliament had impeached a great Minister of State\*, for affirming it to have been a Conquered Country, which was the only Ground from whence they could claim that Superiority.——And the Reason given for that Accusation is very memorable, “That it was the highest Treason to affirm that which must endanger the Freedom of whole Nation, and consequently corrupt and alienate their Affections.” This Argument, however solid, was not sufficient to cheque the violent Spirit which reigned in the prevailing Party of the Parliament of *England* at that Time, who having once acquired this Branch of the Prerogative, did not sufficiently consider the dangerous Consequences which followed, and may perhaps hereafter follow from it to the *British* Commerce, the *British* Liberties, and even the Existence of the *British* Nation.

THIS Spirit seemed to flame to an extravagant Degree in the Year 1663, when a Clause was passed in a Bill intitled *An Act for the Government of Trade*, whereby they absolutely prohibited the Importation of *Irish* Cattle; and this the Party before-mentioned drove on with a Fury that seemed to intend the total Confusion and Ruin of that Kingdom.——Upon this Occasion Sir *John Perceval*, both as an *Englishman*, and as one entrusted with the Welfare of the Trade of the other Kingdom, exerted himself to the utmost of his Power. He drew up a lively and prophetic Representation of the Distress it must occasion, in *Ireland*, and the future Mischiefs which must follow from it; all which have been amply verified in the Event. This Representation was readily assented to by the rest of the Council of Trade in *Ireland*, made the Act of their Body, and transmitted to *England*.

IN this Interval, the first apparent Consequence of the Restraint here mentioned, was a very considerable  
Advance

---

\* See Mr. Pym's Speeches against the Earl of Strafford. — Also the Articles of his Impeachment in Rushworth.

Advance of the Price of Provisions in *England*, and in Consequence of that, a sudden Rise of the Price of Labour, which was in no degree answered by the Rise of the Rents; and thus began that Dearness of its Commodities, which increased since, by Measures of as wild a Nature, with respect to that Kingdom, has arrived to such a Point, as in a great degree to confound the Commerce of *Great-Britain*, and to render her incapable of furnishing any Manufactures at so low a Rate as her Neighbours; under which apparent Evil she now labours, persisting too long in the same Measures which have brought her into this Condition, by restraining *Ireland* in her Manufactures, by whose Assistance alone, from the Cheapness of her Labour, she is able to recover again the Ground she has lost.—The Populace still maintaining this Prejudice to such an Extravagance, as to oblige, even those of a more open Understanding, rather to suffer all the Powers of *Europe* to undermine their Trade with Impunity, than to give that Encouragement to *Ireland* (from whom *England* always receives the utmost Gain she makes) which would enable that Country to give a total Check to the Commerce of all the Rivals of *England*, and in a Course of Time, with small Advantage to herself, restore these Kingdoms to the joint Possession of a more certain Mine of Treasure than all the Mountains of *Peru* produce.

THE Consequences of this Restraint in *Ireland* were sudden and horrible. The Demands of those to whom *Ireland* was indebted on the Ballance of her Trade, were so urgent \*, that the Specie of the Kingdom was remitted to such a Degree, as to cause an Impossibility of the Payment either of the Rents of private Estates, or of the Revenues of the Crown, and the Subsidies granted by the Parliament remained unpaid. Horses formerly sold for thirty Shillings were now sold for twelve Pence; and Oxen sold for fifty Shillings before the Prohibition, were now sold for ten.

Y E T

---

\* Vide Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond.

YET in *England* the same Measures were pursued ; as if, having that Country now down, it had been resolved that she should never rise again. Their Blow was followed from Session to Session, till at last in 1667, not only all Importation of *Irish* Cattle was prohibited, but also that of all Beef, Pork and Bacon, out of that Kingdom into *England*. The Matter was carried still farther, and it was proposed to alter the Book of Rates of *Ireland*, and to compel the *Irish* to receive all foreign Commodities out of *England*. But the Absurdity appeared too great, to oblige them to trade with *England*, when they had absolutely prohibited the only Means they had to satisfy the Ballance, or to barter in Exchange. This Project therefore was at length dropped ; yet such was the general Malignity of all Degrees of Men at that Time against that Kingdom, that the Lords, at the same Conjunction, attempted to oblige the King to deprive the Peers of *Ireland* of that Place and Precedency in *England*, which they had ever enjoyed since the Acquisition of that Country to the Crown of *England*. ——— This Attempt was utterly inconsistent with their Patents, with the Nature of the Peerage, and with all Precedents, and indeed, not calculated truly for the Honour of the *English* Lords themselves, whose Peerage being of the same Nature, granted by the same Prince, and confirmed under the same Great Seal, must have suffered a palpable Diminution by any Contempt admitted to fall upon any Part of the Nobility of either Nation.

BESIDES, about the King's Person a natural Attendance was due from the *Irish*, as well as from the *English* Peers, let the Place of his Residence be where it would ; so that their Presence in *England* was, from the Nature of the Peerage, not meerly voluntary, while the King lived here : and being therefore in some degree necessary, it should seem requisite and just that their Privilege ought to be maintained inviolate. ——— The King, for these Reasons, was not to be prevailed upon in this Particular, which affected his Prerogative in so tender a Point, and struck so deeply at his  
his

his Interest, in the Affections of all the greatest Subjects of that Kingdom. He rejected this Application with great Firmness, “and told the Lord *Ashley*, afterwards Earl of *Shaftsbury*, a great Promoter of this Violence, that *the Nobility* would receive just so much Advantage by *this Project*, as *the Nation* had received by that of *the Prohibition of Cattle*; and that as he was confident a little time would sufficiently demonstrate the Mischiefs of *the one*, there should be no Experience of Inconvenience from *the other*; He said farther, that he was astonished to find the *English* Lords so desirous to undermine their own Dignity, for that they had no better, or other Foundation, than that upon which the *Irish* stood. And that to allow him the Prerogative of dispensing with the Privileges of the one Body, was, as he thought, no great Advantage or Security to the other. In fine, he said, that he was the common Father of both Nations, and would prove himself to be such, as long as he sat upon the Throne of both Kingdoms.”

SIR *John Perceval* had not contented himself with the bare Duty of his Office, but laboured incessantly by his Interest and Friendships in *England*\*, to obstruct this indiscreet Conduct. And the Alliances of his Family being on this Side, and for many Ages so well known in that Kingdom, (out of which, in the whole, neither himself, nor his Father or Grandfather, had ever spent above twenty-five Years, and in which he still retained a considerable Estate) gave him great Weight upon that Subject. He was too well known to be suspected of speaking from any private Regard to the Advantage he might reap (from any Encouragement to *Ireland*) in his private Fortune. It was sufficiently ample to put him above so mean a Consideration, and his Honour, as well as his Understanding, rendered him incapable of pursuing a separate Interest in either Kingdom, which every Man of

Sense

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. VII.

360 *A Genealogical History*

Senſe muſt ſee and feel to be deſtructive to the whole. — He went over to *England*\*, to follow this important Affair, and to prevent the violent Meaſures then projected, and afterwards carried partly into Execution, in a very ill State of Health, about the Year 1664; and in that Year we find by his Letters, that his Endeavours had a very good Effect upon ſome of the moſt conſiderable Men. But the Gout, Stone and Dropſy, and a Complication of other Diſorders, encreaſing violently upon him, he was obliged to quit that Cauſe, and return to *Ireland*, to take his Farewell of his Lady, whom he had left there, alſo in a very ill Condition of Health. — He had the Satisfaction to live long enough to ſee her||, but this was rendered a very melancholy Meeting, by the Certainty of the Im- poſſibility of his Recovery.

HE died very ſoon after, upon *All-Saints-Day*, (*viz.*) the firſt of *November*, 1665, at *Dublin*, and was buried upon the fifth of the ſame Month, in the Church of *St. Audeon* there, having lived thirty-fix Years and fifty-four Days; of which ſhort Space he had ſpent by much the greateſt part in conſtant and indefatigable Application to the public Concerns of his Country, with an unblemiſhed Reputation, and a Character of Virtue and Integrity, which too rarely accompanies that of a conſummate Capacity.

HIS Will is dated the fourteenth Day of *November* †, and was proved the fourth of *December*, 1675.

SIR *John Perceval* having intended to build a Church at *Burton*, and a magnificent Monument being deſigned to be erected there, it was thought ſufficient for that Time to place only the following Memorial of him over his Grave, the Body being intended to be afterwards removed.

§ HERE lieth the Body of Sir *John Perceval*,  
Baronet, eldeſt Son of Sir *Philip Perceval*,  
Knight,

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. VII.      || *Ibid.*

† *Ex Regiſtro Prærogat. Hiberniæ.*

§ From the Entry in the Herald's-Office, London.

Knight, and of *Catherine*, the Daughter of *Arthur Usher*, of *Dublin*, Esquire.

HE was born in *Dublin*, the seventh of *September*, 1629, and died there on the first of *November*, 1665, in the thirty-seventh Year of his Age.

He married on the fourteenth of *February*, 1655, *Catherine* the only Daughter of *Robert Southwell* of *Kinsale*, Esquire, and of *Helena Gore*.

By whom he had Issue

(1.) *Philip*, born at *Kinsale*, the twelfth of *January*, 1656.

(2.) *Robert*, born at *Kinsale*, the eighth of *February*, 1657.

(3.) *John*, born near *Burton*, the twenty-second of *August*, 1660.

(4.) *Charles*, born at *London*, the fourth of *November*, 1661, and who died at *Kinsale* in *July*—1662.

(5.) *Catherine*, born at *Dublin*, the nineteenth of *March*, 1662.

(6.) *Helena*, born at *Kinsale*, the seventeenth of *February*, 1665, which was after her Father's Death.

HIS Father, Sir *Philip Perceval*, Knight, who was Son to *Richard*, and Grandson to *George Perceval*, Esquire, of the Family of *Weston*, in the County of *Somerset* in *England*, died in *London* the tenth of *November*, Anno 1647, and was buried in the Church of *St. Martin in the Fields*, in the forty-sixth Year of his Age.

WE now come to say something of *Catherine* Lady *Perceval*, the Relict of Sir *John*, and Daughter of *Robert Southwell* of *Kinsale*, Esquire, descended from many of the best and most ancient Families in *England*, from whence her Grandfather had transplanted himself but a few Years before.—And though her



Fortune was no more than Three thousand Pounds, she brought with her Accomplishments and Virtues more valuable than any Portion, and such as created the greatest Harmony that ever was experienced in that State.—A Choice so virtuous and disinterested could not well fail of one of the first Blessings of such Marriages, which is a speedy Conclusion\* ;— notwithstanding the strong Opposition of the Lady *Perceval* to it, who had much greater Views for her Son, and considered more his Interest than real Happiness in that State.

THE first of this Family †, from whom, with Certainty, those who now bear the Name may be deduced, was *John Southwell* of *Felix Hall*, in the County of *Essex*, by some asserted to have served in Parliament for the Borough of *Lewes* in *Sussex*, A. D. 1450 ; which *John*, by a Daughter of ——— *Salmon*, alias *Pride*, had a Son *Robert*, who, by his Wife *Isabella*, Daughter of *John Boyce*, had *Richard Southwell*, Esq; who, marrying *Amy* eldest Daughter and Coheir of *Sir Edmund Wychingham*, by *Alice* Daughter and Heir of *John Falstaff*, obtained in her Right the Manor of ———, in the County of *Norfolk*, in the Time of *Edward* the Fourth. This *Richard Southwell* left three Sons, *Robert*, *Richard*, and *Francis* ; of which the eldest, *Sir Robert*, dying without Issue, *Francis*, his second Brother, by *Alice* Daughter and Coheir of *William Tendring*, Son of *Thomas Tendring* and *Agnez* his Wife, the Daughter and Heir of ——— *Holbrook*. Having executed the Office of Auditor of the Exchequer in the Time of *Henry* the Eighth, left *Sir Richard Southwell*, Knt. who became Heir to his Brother *Robert*.—This *Sir Richard* was a very eminent Man, and had a great Share in the Death of *Henry Howard*, Earl of *Surrey*, Son and Heir of *Thomas Duke of Norfolk*, by affirming, that he knew certain Things of the said Earl which touched his Fidelity to the King ; but he dying also without Issue, the Estate descended

\* Family Collections, Vol. VI. N<sup>o</sup>. 1065.

† From a MSS. late Mr. Le Neve's.

descended to *Richard*, Son of *Francis Southwell*, youngest Brother of the said *Sir Richard*, by *Alice*, Daughter and Coheir of *William Tendring*, aforesaid.— This last *Sir Richard*, Son of *Francis*, was Master of the Ordnance, and of the Privy-Council to King *Henry* the Eighth, *Edward* the Sixth, and Queen *Mary*; and also one of the Executors of the Will of the said King *Henry*.—He left no Issue by his first Wife *Thomasine*, Daughter of *Thomas Darcy* of *Denbury*, in the County of *Essex*, Esq; but by *Mary*, Daughter of *Thomas Darcy* of *Denbury* aforesaid, he left *Richard Southwell* his Son, who was of *Horsbam St. Faith's*, in the County of *Norfolk*, and married his first Wife *Bridget*, Daughter of *Sir Roger Copely* of *Rowbney*, in the County of *Suffolk*, by whom he left a Son *Richard Southwell* also of *Horsbam*, who married *Alice*, Daughter of *Sir Thomas Cornwallis* of *Broomball*, in the County of *Suffolk*, Comptroller to Queen *Mary*, by his Wife, Daughter of *Sir John Fernegan* of *Somerlayton*, in the same County, by his Wife *Bridget*, Daughter of *Sir Robert Drury* of *Halstead*; of which Family of *Cornwallis* we shall here say no more, that House being now to be found in the Descents of the Peers of *England*.— This *Richard Southwell*, by the said *Alice Cornwallis*, left two Sons, *Sir Thomas Southwell*, and *Anthony*; of which *Sir Thomas* seated himself at *Polylong* in *Ireland*, and was of the Privy-Council of *Munster*; but he died in 1626; and of him we shall say no further, than that the Barons *Southwell* of *Castle Matrass*, in the County of *Limerick*, are descended from him.

*ANTHONY SOUTHWELL*, the second Son, accompanied his Brother into the same Kingdom, and there died in 1623. This *Anthony* married to his first Wife *Margaret*, Daughter of *Sir Ralph Shelton*, by his Wife *Anne*, or *Mary*, Daughter of *Sir William Woodhouse* of *Waxtonesham* in *Norfolk* (by his Wife, Daughter of *Henry de Reppes* of *Thorp Market*, and *South Reppes*, and of *Anne*, Daughter of *Richard Holditch* of *Didlington* in the same County;) which *Sir William Woodhouse* was Son of *Sir John Woodhouse*,

364 *A Genealogical History*

of a different Line from those of *Kimberley*, by *Alice* his Wife, Daughter of *William Crofts* of *Wiston* in *Norfolk*.——Sir *Ralph Shelton*, last mentioned, who married *Woodhouse*, was Grandson of Sir *John Shelton*, and of *Anne* his Wife, Daughter of Sir *William Boleyn*, and Son (as it is presumed) though the Proof is not positive) of another Sir *John Shelton*, by his Wife, *Margaret Parker*, one of the Daughters of *Henry Parker*, first Lord *Morley*, by his Wife *Alice*, the Daughter of Sir *John St. John* of *Bletcho*; which *Henry Lord Morley* was Son of Sir *William Parker*, Knight, Standard-Bearer and Privy-Counsellor to King *Richard* the Third, who, by *Alice*, Sister and Heir of *Henry Luvel*, Lord *Morley*, brought that Title into the House of *Parker*, of which we have already spoken, and shall speak more at large hereafter.——This *Anthony Southwell*, by the said *Margaret Shelton*, had Issue *Robert Southwell* of *Kinsale*, in the County of *Cork* in *Ireland*, who was of the Privy-Council of *Munster*, and died the third of *April*, 1677, at seventy Years of Age. The said *Robert Southwell* married *Helena*, only Daughter and surviving Heir of *Robert Gore* of the County of *Somerset*, by *Catherine* his Wife, Daughter of *Nicholas Hide* (and Sister of Sir *Arthur*) of *Lottingham* and *Hinton Dawbenny*, Lord Chief Justice of *England*, by *Mary* his Wife, Daughter of *Arthur Swaine* of *Sarston*, in the County of *Southampton*;——which Sir *Nicholas* was Son of *Lawrence Hide* of *Gusage St. Michael*, in the County of *Dorset*, by *Anne* his Wife, Daughter of *Nicholas Sibell* of *Kent*, Esq; which *Lawrence* was second Son of *Robert Hide* of *Norbery*, in the County of *Chester*, in the Reign of *Henry* the Eighth, by his second Wife *Catherine*, the Daughter of——*Boydell* of *Pullcroft*, in the same County.——This *Robert Southwell* last mentioned, by the said *Helena Gore*, left a Son, Sir *Robert Southwell*, Knight (whose Grandson, *Edward Southwell* of *Kinsale* in *Ireland*, and *King's Wiston* in the County of *Gloucester* in *England*, continues now the Male Line of this House) and an only Daughter *Catherine*, who became, as we have shewn already,

already, the Wife of Sir *John Perceval*, and is the Person of whom we here treat.

SIR *John Perceval* having made known his Inclinations to the Parents of the young Lady, of whose Affections he was satisfied before, the Nobleness of his Estate, the Greatness of his Family, and the Accomplishments of his Person and Character, were Inducements to a quick Conclusion of this Matter; and accordingly the Contract of Marriage was signed the sixth of *December*, 1655.

AND not long after\*, *viz.* upon the first of *January*, 1655, a Deed was made and inrolled between Sir *William Usher*, Knight, of the one Part, and Sir *Hardress Waller*, Knight, *Walter Waller*, his Son and Heir apparent, *Robert Southwell* the Father, and Sir *Robert Southwell* the Brother of the young Lady, on the other Part, whereby the Lands to be settled upon the Issue of the approaching Marriage were to be secured.

THE necessary Preliminaries being thus settled, the Marriage was consummated upon the fourteenth of *February*, 1655-6.

THIS most excellent Woman out-lived her Husband fourteen Years, in a continued Course of Sickness and Grief, no Time being capable to efface or diminish the Remembrance of her Loss. She remained a singular Pattern of all Virtue with her Father and Mother at *Kinsale* in *Ireland* till the Year 1677, when her Illness increasing upon her, she was prevailed upon to go abroad to *France*, where her eldest Son then was upon his Travels.—In the beginning of *September*†, having before made her Will upon the twenty-seventh of *August*, 1677, leaving her youngest Son, after Sir *John Perceval*, her sole Executor; she set out from *Kinsale* for *Nantz* in *Britany* with her two Daughters, but by Strefs of Weather, the fifth of the same Month, she was driven into *Foy* in *Cornwall*,—from whence she sent her Daughter *Helena*, who was unable  
to

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. VI.

† Ex Autograph penes Com' Egmont.

366 *A Genealogical History*

to bear the Sea, to *London* to her Relations there. Upon the seventeenth of *September* she fet sail again, but was again driven back to the same Port: She still persisted however in her Resolution, and at length landed safely upon the fifth of *October* at *Crosac*, whither her Son *Sir Philip Perceval* soon after arrived to meet her, and conducted her to *St. Nazarre*, from thence by Water to *Nantz*, and afterwards to *Saumur*, where she passed that Winter, and all the next Summer, 1678. *Sir Philip*, during that Time, pursued his Travels, and returned to *Paris* in his Way home. This Lady *Perceval* went thither in *December*, and having passed that Winter there with her two Daughters, and her Son *Sir Philip*, came back with them to *England* about the beginning of *April*, 1679. The ninth of *May* following she embarked from *Bristol* to *Cork*, from whence she proceeded immediately to *Kinsale*, where she found *Mrs. Southwell*, her Mother, in a languishing Condition, and given over by her Physicians. This Lady died soon after, upon the first of *July* following: Which melancholy Accident made so great an Impression on this unhappy Lady, that she followed her soon after, departing this Life also near the same Place, upon the seventeenth of *August*, 1679, where she lies buried under a very noble Monument, with the following Inscription.

HERE lieth the Body of Dame *Catherine*, Relict of *Sir John Perceval* of *Burton*, Baronet, and only Daughter of *Robert Southwell* of *Kinsale*, Esquire, and of *Helena Southwell* his Wife.

SHE was born at *Kinsale* the first of *September*, 1637: She was there married on the fourteenth of *February*, 1655, and died near unto it upon the seventeenth of *August*, 1679.

HER Husband, *Sir John Perceval*, died in *Dublin* the first of *November*, 1665, in the

thirty-

of the House of YVERY, &c. 367

thirty-seventh Year of his Age, and lies buried there in the Church of *St. Audeon*.

THEIR Children were first, *Philip*, born at *Kinsale* the twelfth of *January*, 1656.

THE second, *Robert*, there born the eighth of *February*, 1657: He departed this Life upon the fifth of *June*, 1671, and was buried at *Lincoln's-Inn* in *London*.

THIRD, *John*, born at *Egmont*, alias *Bal-lymacore*, near unto *Burton*, the twenty-second of *August*, 1660.

FOURTH, *Charles*, born in *London* the fourth of *November*, 1661: He died at *Kinsale* in *July*, 1662, and lieth here also interred.

FIFTH, *Catherine*, born at *Dublin* the nineteenth of *March*, 1662.

AND, sixth, *Helena*, born at *Kinsale* the seventeenth of *February*, 1665, after her Father's Death.

THIS Lady having passed her Youth in all the Exercises of Virtue and good Instruction, and being remarkable for the Beauties both of Body and Mind, she became the more worthy of that excellent Man that was her Husband; and was not only endeared to him, by bringing a numerous Offspring, who did partake of his Virtues, but by the Charms of her Conversation during his Health, and her Care and Veneration of him during his Sicknes.

SHE augmented her Loss, when he could no longer be a Witness of it; for, after his Death, she lived but as his Monument, and paid unto his Memory the Residue of her Life in Tears; his Childrens Advantage did thenceforth become her worldly Care, unless it seemed that she had equal Regard

368 *A Genealogical History*

of others, by her boundless Compassion to all that were in Distress.

THE great Improvements of her Mind were vayed over with Meekness and Humility : The Observance she paid her Parents, and her Devotions to God, were unwearied, and of Example unto all.

So that having lived eighteen Years a Virgin, ten Years a Wife, and fourteen Years a Widow, and manifesting in every Condition of Life the Virtues that were most pleasing unto Heaven and Earth, who can forbid the Remembrance of those divine Words, (*Proverbs* the Thirty-first, and the Twenty-ninth) *Many Daughters have done virtuously, but thou excellest them all.*

SIR *John Perceval*, Baronet, Heir to his Brother Sir *Philip Perceval* (who died at *Burton* the eleventh of *September*, 1680) hath to the Memory of so pious a Mother, caused this Monument to be erected, in the Year of Redemption, 1628.

ISSUE of Sir *JOHN PERCEVAL*, Baronet, and *Catherine Lady Perceval*, his Wife.

I. SIR *PHILIP*, of whom in the next Chapter.

II. *ROBERT*, born at *Kinsale* the eighth of *February*, 1657. As soon as he was of sufficient Age, having made a singular Proficiency in the *Latin* and *Greek* Languages, he was sent to compleat the Studies which are generally taught afterwards in the Universities at *Christ's College* in *Cambridge* ; soon after which, he was entered at *Lincoln's Inn* in *London*, in order to study the Law.

IN *May*, 1676, he was put under the Care of the Bishop of *Landaff*, to be made Master of Philosophy, Mathematicks, and other Branches of that kind of Learning, which he had been too much drawn from by the licentious Example of some of his Cotemporaries at the Univerfity.

HIS Parts were admirable, but his Application to his Pleasures greater than to his Books; fo that, difliking the Confinement of that Houfe, he returned to *London*, and lived at his Chambers in *Lincoln's Inn*, where no Opportunities were wanting for gratifying the unhappy Turn he had to the ill Habits of that Age he lived in.

HIS Perfon and Converfation were both more agreeable to others, than advantageous to himfelf; for they led him into Company, which proved his Ruin. Example and Fashion had, as it generally has upon Men of his Years, too great an Influence, which fhewed itfelf in moft of his Actions, and in one Particular, (in which it was aggravated, by a great Courage and high Spirit) in a remarkable degree; for he had been engaged in nineteen Duels before he was twenty Years of Age, in all which he came off with Honour, and commonly with Advantage.

UPON the twenty-fecond of *May*, 1677, he obtained, in Conjunction with his youngeft Brother, and to the Survivor of them, a Patent\* from the Crown for the Reverfion of the Offices of Clerk of the Crown, Prothonotary and chief Clerk of the Common-Pleas and *Custos Brevium* in *Ireland*; which Improvement of his Circumftances, increafed his Exceffes, and fupported the diffolute Courfe he followed.

SIR *Robert Southwell*, his Uncle and his Guardian, had laboured to reclaim him from this unhappy Life: He loved him tenderly, and admired the the Seeds of thofe great Qualities, Abilities and  
Virtues,

---

\* Ex Autograph. penes Comit. de Egmont.



Virtues, which were strongly rooted in him; though, for the present, kept down by the luxuriant Growth of those rank Weeds, which spring most fruitfully in such a Soil; but he was taken off too suddenly, to reap the Fruit of his Instruction, for he was murdered by an unknown Hand, upon the fifth of *June*, 1677.

UPON the sixth of *June*, in the Morning, Sir *Robert Southwell* received the melancholy News that his Nephew lay dead under the *May-Pole* in the *Strand*, where he found him with a deep Wound under his left Pap, which had pierced his Heart, and was the Occasion of his Death: His Sword was drawn, and lay bloody by him, by which it appeared that he had defended himself as long as he was able.

A STRANGER'S Hat, with a Bunch of Ribbons in it, was found by his Side; from whence it was at first hoped that the Murderer might be discovered, but this Expectation was found vain.— For though the King, by his Proclamations, and the Family, by all proper Enquiries, endeavoured to bring the Offenders to Justice, no positive or certain Proof was ever attained to; and the Villany has, as yet, escaped at least a publick Punishment.

MANY extraordinary Circumstances attended this sad Affair.— It becomes the Nature of these Relations to give those Circumstances with their Authorities, and the Reader is left to make his own Judgment upon them, without enquiring into the Author's private Sentiments.— For Men, upon Matters of the following Kind, must think differently, according to their different Turns of Mind, and the different Prejudices or Impressions of their Education. The Particulars are delivered Word for Word, as they are minuted down by the present Earl of *Egmont*, upon a Conversation which Sir *Robert Southwell* had with him immediately before his Death.

“ ROBERT

“ ROBERT was but twenty when he was murdered in the *Strand* by Villains that, to this Day, are not found out, and lies buried at *Lincoln’s Inn*, near one of the Pillars underneath the Chapel. Some Circumstances concerning his Death are too extraordinary to be passed by; and what I am going to relate, I had from Persons whose Sincerity I can depend on.—A few Nights before the Murder, Robert, who was a Student in *Lincoln’s Inn*, was sitting in his Chamber reading, and it was late at Night, when there appeared to him his own Apparition bloody and ghastly stalking into his Chamber. My Uncle was so astonished at the Sight, that he immediately swooned away; but, recovering, he saw the Spectre walk out again, and vanish down Stairs. When he was recovered of his Fright, he undressed himself, and went to bed, but in extraordinary Uneasiness; so that he could not sleep, but rose early, and, putting on his Cloaths, went to his Uncle and Guardian, Sir Robert Southwell, who lived in *Spring-Garden*. It was so early, that Sir Robert was not yet stirring, but nevertheless he went into his Room, and waked him.—It was a Freedom he was not used to take, and Sir Robert was surprized; but asking him what made him there so early, my Uncle, still in Consternation, replied, he had that Night seen his Ghost, and told him all the Particulars, as I have related them.—Sir Robert at first chid him for reporting an idle Dream, the Effect of an ill Life and guilty Conscience (for he loved his Pleasure, and followed it too much;) but observing the Disorder he was in, and having repeated the Story to him, he grew very serious, and desired his Nephew

“ would take Care of himself, and recollect if  
 “ he had given Occasion to any Person to re-  
 “ venge himself on him ; for this might be a  
 “ true Presage of what was to befall him.—  
 “ My Uncle, after some time, left him, and  
 “ notwithstanding the Impression this made at  
 “ first, I suppose he wore it off soon, or else it  
 “ were impossible he could be so careless of  
 “ himself the Night he was killed. For that  
 “ Evening he was dogged from House to House  
 “ where he visited, by a single Man, who fol-  
 “ lowed him at a small Distance, who, when my  
 “ Uncle went into a House, would wait like a  
 “ Footman at the Porch till t’other came out ;  
 “ insomuch that once or twice he spoke to him,  
 “ asking what was his Business in following him  
 “ so close, and the other answered, what was  
 “ that to him, he was about his own Business.  
 “ Nay, when my Uncle told his Friends he was  
 “ dogged, he would not let them send a Foot-  
 “ man to attend him ; and when at Eleven a-  
 “ Clock at Night he was assaulted by two or  
 “ three, and wounded slightly as he entered  
 “ a Tavern in the *Strand*, where some Friends  
 “ of his were, he would not take Warning, nor  
 “ admit any one to see him safe away ; though  
 “ the Tavern-Boy was so urgent with him, that  
 “ he chid him for his Impertinence.—But,  
 “ leaving that Company, he was a little time af-  
 “ ter found dead by the Watchmen in the *Strand*,  
 “ supposed to be killed in a House, and laid af-  
 “ terwards there.—I have the Examinations  
 “ taken by the Coroner’s Inquest now by me ; but  
 “ they could not help to a Discovery. This my  
 “ Uncle *Southwell* told me himself a little before  
 “ he died Word for Word ; and there are others  
 “ still living who do confirm the Thing who  
 “ were Servants in the Family, particularly  
 “ Mrs. *Brown* of *Bristol*, who told me two Years  
 “ ago, that the Night he was killed, she dreamed

“ one

- “ one Mrs. *Sberman*, who lived with Sir *Robert*,  
 “ came to her, and asked her for a Sheet ; and,  
 “ demanding what to do with ? Mrs. *Sberman*  
 “ replied, poor Master *Robert* is killed, and it  
 “ is to wind him in. As soon as she waked, the  
 “ same Gentlewoman came into her Room, and  
 “ asked for a Sheet ; and then, remembering  
 “ her Dream, she, in a Consternation, asked for  
 “ what ? The other answered her, *Poor Mr. Rob-*  
 “ *bin lies dead in the Watch-house in the Strand,*  
 “ *and it is to wind his Body in.*
- “ SIR *Philip*, his elder Brother, being returned  
 “ from his Travels, and, intent upon finding out  
 “ the Murderers, fell violently foul one Day in  
 “ *Dublin* upon a Gentleman, whom, afterwards,  
 “ he declared he never had seen before, and  
 “ could not account for his Rage ; only he was  
 “ possessed with a Belief he was one of those  
 “ who killed his Brother : They were soon parted,  
 “ and the Gentleman was seen no more.”

IT is said of this unfortunate young Gentleman, that when he came into the Tavern before mentioned, he called for a Glass of Brandy, saying, that he was a little faint ; and then, after having wiped his Sword, which was stained with the Blood (as he said) of one of those by whom he was assaulted, and whose Business (as he expressed it) he had done ; and after having with his Handkerchief tied up his Leg, which was wounded as he was going out of the House, in order to retire to his own Chambers, he stepped back to tell the Master of the Tavern, that he should remember, *That he had been attacked by Persons who bore him an old Grudge, and that if he was murdered, his Friends would find it out.*

DARK Speeches of the same Nature he had used to others, but they were still insufficient to procure a legal Conviction of the Actors in this Tragedy.—As for the further Consequences of  
 it

374 *A Genealogical History*

it, and the Suspicions that were entertained; some imagined it was done by *Beau Fielding*, with whom he had a Quarrel at a Play; others, by a near Relation to Sir *Robert Southwell's* Wife; but the Matter was too uncertain to admit of any free Discourse of any Person for it, and for the rest, we refer to what will be hereafter said of this Affair in the Life of Sir *Philip Perceval*, his elder Brother.

THIS Gentleman fell unmarried, at the Age of nineteen Years and four Months, wanting only three Days, and was buried in a private Manner near one of the Pillars at the North-West End of the Burying-Ground under the Chapel of *Lincoln's Inn*, the sixth of *June*, 1667, the Day after his unhappy Murder, with this short Inscription on his Grave.

Robertus Percivale Arm. Obiit. 5. Junij  
1667. Etat. 19.

III. *JOHN PERCEVAL*, afterwards Sir *John Perceval*, Baronet.

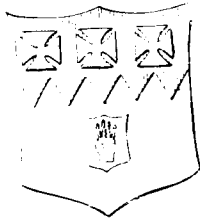
IV. *CHARLES*, who was born at *Kinsale*, and there died an Infant.

V. *CATHERINE*, married the nineteenth of *October*, 1683, to ———, Son of Sir *William Moore* of *Rosscarberry*, in the County of *Cork*, Baronet, her first Husband; her second was Colonel ———; and her third was Brigadier General *Freak*: By the two last she had no Issue, but by the first she left a Son, Sir *Emanuel Moore*, who succeeded to the Title and Estate. He married ———, the Daughter and Heir of ——— *Alcock*, Esq; in the County of *Tipperary*, by whom he left the present Sir *Charles Moore*, Baronet, as yet unmarried, and a Daughter ———, the Wife of ——— *Putland*, Esq;

VI. *HELENA PERCEVAL*, the youngest Daughter, married herself, without the Consent of her Relations to Colonel *Daniel Dering*, Son of Sir *Edward Dering* of *Surrenden* in *Kent*, Baronet, whom she long survived.—By him she had a Daughter, named *Sidney Dering*, and a Son *Daniel*, a Man of excellent Probity, who was in the Reign of King *George* the First, appointed one of the Commissioners of the Wine Licence Office, and afterwards Auditor of the Revenue of the Dutchy of *Cornwall*, and the Principality of *Wales*: He married *Mary Parker*, second Daughter of Sir *Philip Parker* of *Arwarton* in *Suffolk*, Baronet, and Sister to *Catherine* Countess of *Egmont*; and, dying at the *Hague* the Day of ———, 1730, left only one Daughter, named *Catherine*, now living, and ——— Years old.

## C H A P. X.

*Sir* PHILIP PERCEVAL, *Baronet*,  
*(second of that Name)* Lord of Bur-  
 ton, Lifcarrol, Kanturk, Castlewarn-  
 ing, Outerard, &c. &c.



**S**IR *Philip Perceval*, Baronet\*, eldest Son and Heir of Sir *John Perceval*, last mentioned, by the Lady *Katherine* his Wife, Daughter of *Robert Southwell*, Esquire, was born eleven Months after his Father's Marriage at *Kinsale* in Ireland, upon the twelfth of *January*, 1656, and was consequently little more than nine Years old at his Father's Death.—That Accident was an inexpressible Misfortune to this Family; for, not to consider the growing Interest and Credit of Sir *John Perceval*, which promised him the utmost Success in all his Pursuits, and an Advancement of himself

\* Vide Monumental Inscriptions in the former Chapter.

himself and Posterity to the highest Honours and Preferments of the State, (all which Expectations were thus cut short by the too early Fate of that most excellent Man.) There was an immense and immediate Loss which arose from it;—for the King, in Consideration of the eminent Services and prodigious Losses of Sir *Philip Perceval*, his Father, and the great Employment of the Court of Wards, which had been hereditary in this House for three Descents, and was abolished by Act of Parliament soon after the Restoration;—as also in Regard to those great Arrears which were due for the several Disbursements made by Sir *Philip Perceval*, as Commissary General of the Army, and Providore General of the Horse, together with the Appointments due for his Services in those laborious Posts, none of which had been yet satisfied, had granted to Sir *John Perceval* a vast Tract of Land, which, though little more than sufficient to answer these his just Pretensions at that Time, is now worth Fourteen thousand Pounds *per Annum*\*.

THE Greatness of this Grant, which consisted as much in the Choice, as in the Quantity of Land, was not at first attended to, and the Grant had already passed several of the Offices;—when an unexpected Opposition was made to it by one of the Adventurers under *Cromwell*, whose Lot had been inadvertently inserted with the rest. This Man could be brought by no Equivalent, or any other Means, to rest satisfied with the Loss of his Land; and to have vacated the Grant, in order to make out a new one, would have occasioned a Process in this Affair from the very Beginning, which must have met with insuperable Difficulties, when the Importance of the Grant was become so publick. The Trouble and Vexation of this difficult Affair falling out at the Time of the extreme Sickness of Sir *John Perceval*, no doubt, in some measure, hastened his Death; which, as soon as it happened, rendered this glorious Project entirely abortive.

THE

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. VIII.



## 378 *A Genealogical History*

THE Interest of the Family, now fallen into a long Minority, was too weak to resist the Envy of all Men, and the avaricious Views of the hungry Courtiers, who swarmed so abundantly in that Reign\*. The Grant, in effect, was finally stopped, and the whole was, by degrees, wrested by different Favourites from this Family, no Compensation having ever been since made for this vast Injury, nor any Allowance for those great Sums; which, upon the Accounts we have mentioned, are still owing to this House from the Crown.

THIS was a Misfortune for which there was no Remedy but Patience. All that could be done, was to manage the Fortune of the Family with the best Oeconomy during the Minority of the Heir. It fortunately fell into the Management of a Person of the greatest Integrity and Worth. *Robert Southwell*, Esq; Grandfather to Sir *Philip* by the Side of the Mother; was, by the Will of Sir *John Perceval*, Overseer of his last Will, and was joined in the Guardianship of the Children and Care of the Estate, with his Daughter, the Widow of Sir *John*. The Prudence and Affection with which this Charge was executed, ought to be gratefully remembered. A noble Seat was erected at *Burton*, great Debts satisfied, and much Money saved by their Fidelity and Diligence; and, (which was a Fortune rarely met with) Sir *Robert Southwell*, Son of the said *Robert*, took upon him, after the Death of his Father, the same Care, which he executed with the same Integrity and Virtue.

SIR *Robert Southwell*, who was a Person well acquainted with the World, and particularly so with the Genius of the People of *Ireland*, which was at that Time very litigious, and much turned to attack the Rights of those who had Estates there, and lived out of that Kingdom\*, judging that this would be, for the most part, the Case of his Pupil, whose Relations, Family, and hereditary Friendships, were on this Side the Water, endeavoured to qualify him with some general

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. VIII.

† Ibid.

neral Idea of the Laws; a Circumstance in Education of excellent Use to all Men. He therefore not only directed his Studies while he was at the University of *Cambridge*, in some degree, in that Way, but had him entered as a Student in *Lincoln's Inn*, upon the sixth of *February*, 1674. It was happy for him, that his Learning in that kind was not intended, or required to extend far; for, though his Parts were excellent, and his Apprehension extremely quick, he was like Men of that lively Character, little capable of a strict Application: His greatest Delight was in the Exercises of his Body, for which he was admirably qualified, by an excellent and vigorous Person; so that in these he arrived at such a Perfection\*, as to be esteemed the most accomplished young Man for Dancing, Fencing, and Riding, in these Dominions.

SIR *Philip Perceval* being now near twenty Years of Age, his Guardians thought it proper that he should travel into Foreign Countries, before which it was judged prudent to send him into *Ireland*, to take a cursory View of his Estate there, in order to engage him, by the first Enjoyment of Liberty in that Country, where he had so great a Stake, to receive a favourable Impression of it. One Mr. *Gaillbard*, a *French* Gentleman of very good Accomplishments†, intended for his Companion in his future Travels, was sent with him thither, by way of Experiment, how they would agree together. They spent some Time in a little Tour about the best Counties of *England*, and then embarked at *Bristol*, and landed, after a favourable Passage, at *Cork*, upon the tenth of *July*, 1676, from whence he went to see his Mother at *Kinsale*; and, after having paid his Duties to her, he went forwards to *Burton*, which is but nineteen Miles from *Cork*. He there took a very expeditious View of his Estate, with a Judgment most extraordinary for his Age; for he became in that short Space greatly acquainted with the Views and Interests of his Dependants there,

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. VIII.

† Ibid.

a Knowledge of much Importance in a Country where he had such a Number of Retainers so considerable as they were, and so absolutely different at that Time from the Condition of Tenants in other Kingdoms. With this Foundation of Knowledge, he returned again with the Earl of *Burlington*, and, leaving *Cork* on the ——— of *August*, ———, landed, after a safe Voyage of two Days, at *Minehead*, in *Somersetshire*, from whence he went to visit his Relation, Mr. *Perceval* of *Weston Gordein*, to whom, whilst he lived, he ever paid great Deference, as to the Chief of his Family, and thence through *Bristol* to *London*. He there stayed but a very little Time, and, having settled all necessary Matters for the great Tour he was going to make, he embarked at *Dover*, and landed at *Calais* on the last Day of *September*, 1676; from thence he went Post to *Paris*, and, after a short Stay there, to *Aungiers*, where he spent the following Winter in the Study of the Civil Law, and the Completion of his Exercises, which were taught to great Perfection at the Academies of that City\*.

DURING his Stay at that Place, he fell into the Company of an *English* Nobleman, who resided there upon the same Account, and was, by his ill Example, and the Fire of his own Temper, led into some Excesses, which gave great Uneasiness to his Friends in *England*, but particularly into such as hazarded his Person; for the great Haughtiness of his Temper, and the Keenness of his Courage, engaged him in some dangerous Disputes, which were determined by his Sword; and in one of these Affairs, which was carried very desperately, he wounded a Gentleman dangerously, and was himself much hurt. This Concern was aggravated, by a violent Quarrel with Mr. *Gaillbard*†, the Gentleman who travelled with him, whom he treated very ill, on account of some Prejudices which he conceived against him, as having assumed too much upon him in his Carriage, and made  
too

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. VIII

† Ibid.

too free with his Purse. This obliged his Guardians to dismiss that Gentleman, whose Place was supplied by another of the same Nation, named *Rafigade*, whose different Character suited better with Sir *Philip*; and, by degrees, so raised an Interest in his Affections, that, by his Advice, (the only Way to operate upon the warm Temper of this young Gentleman) he conducted himself ever after abroad with as much Admiration of his Discretion, as of his Parts and Qualities, which were much noted where-ever he passed.

SIR *Philip Perceval* having staid in *Aungiers* till *October*, 1677, in Expectation of his Mother's Arrival in that Country for her Health; and having settled her at *Saumur*, in the manner we have shewn before, he went forward on his Travels, and was at *Thoulouse* the fifteenth of *December*. He passed the *Alps* in that Month, and was in extreme Danger from the Snows; which having escaped, he reached *Turin*, and was at *Venice* the twenty-sixth of *February*, the same Year, and from thence, in *March* following, he passed through *Rome* to *Naples*, and returned thence to *Rome* again the sixth of *April*, 1678. He stayed there till the twenty-sixth of *August*, making himself perfectly acquainted with the Antiquities and Curiosities of that great and famous City, once the Mistress of the World. Upon the twentieth of *August*, six Days before his Departure, he had an Audience of the *Pope*, to which he was introduced by Cardinal *Howard*, commonly called the Cardinal of *Norfolk*, where he was treated with very great Distinction, the *Pope* being well informed of his great Interest in *Ireland*, which he would have willingly added to that of the Catholic Party, by Arguments of the great Power he would acquire by joining that Party, of which he flattered him he would be the Leader; but he used his Persuasions to that Purpose in vain,——— Sir *Philip Perceval* was afterwards introduced by the Marquis *de la Monte* to the famous *Christina*, Queen of *Sweden*\*, who

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. VIII.

who was then there, and was also received by her with the highest Marks of Distinction ever shewn to Strangers.—— Leaving *Rome*, he reached *Leghorn* the fifth of *September*, and from thence he went to *Florence* upon the seventeenth of the same Month, where he stayed seventeen Days, magnificently received and treated by the Great Duke\*, who remembered him a Child in *Ireland*, whither he had been formerly driven by Strefs of Weather, and had been received with much Respect and Honour by this Family; from thence he proceeded on his Journey homewards. He was at *Bologna* the twenty-eighth of *September*, and at *Genoa* the eighteenth of *October*, having passed some Time at the Courts of *Modena*, and *Parma*, and *Placencia*†, where the Duke and Dutcheſs gave him an Entertainment no ways inferior to what he had met with elsewhere, being moved to it by the particular Respects which had been paid him in other Places.——After this he returned to *Turin* again, and, passing through *Chamberry*, *Geneva*, *Grenoble*, and *Montmelian*, he was at *Lyons* on the fifth of *November*, from which Place he arrived at *Paris* in the beginning of *December*, 1678§.

HE there passed the Winter with his Mother and two Sisters, who came thither from *Saumur* to meet him, and in the beginning of *April*, 1679, returned to *England* with them, as we have formerly mentioned; where, making a short Stay, he embarked from *Bristol* for *Cork* upon the ninth of *May* following, in Company with his Mother, to whom he was a most tender and affectionate Son.

IT is incredible with how much Activity and Judgment he then applied himself to the Business of his Estate, how soon he became acquainted with every thing in relation to it necessary for him to know.——How much he improved his Fortune, strengthened his Interest, and gained the Esteem and Affections of the whole Country at the same Time||. These are Mat-  
ters

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. VIII.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

|| Ibid.

ters generally found repugnant to each other in all Places, but singularly so in that Kingdom at that Time, where difference in Religion, the Sense of late reciprocal Injuries, the Confusion of the Parties, the Management of a new Interest just raised up since the Rebellion, and the Jealousies of that which subsisted before it extended an Influence over the whole Nation, and in every Part of it, which seemed to render it impossible for any Man to conduct himself in an eminent Point of View with general Applause. — Yet a young Man just entered the World, without any Experience or Acquaintance with that Kingdom, by the Strength of his Genius, surmounted all these Difficulties; and it became but too soon made manifest, to what a high degree he had done it by the Tears of the whole Province of *Munster* at his Death, which happened a little after the Year 1680.

It was first reported, that he was surfeited by eating too great a Quantity of Nuts\*, and that this was the Occasion of his Death; but the Appearances upon his Body afterwards, gave Indications extremely strong, that his Death was not natural.

HE was taken ill with a violent Looseness and Vomiting, at his House at *Burton*, upon the last Day of *August*, 1680, and continued in that Condition until the 11th of *September* following, when he dy'd about five in the Morning †. *Margaret Conron* and *Richard Conron*, two of his Attendants, deposed, “ that his Body  
“ swelled up strangely immediately after his Death, so  
“ that his Neck raises up to his Chin-bone, his Eyes  
“ swelled as if they would burst out of his Head, his  
“ Nails grew mighty Black, his Hair grew Red, and his  
“ whole Body grew very Black and smelled strongly.”

To corroborate this melancholly Story, two eminent Physicians signed the following Certificate.

“ The dreadful Alteration which happened in Sir  
“ *Philip Perceval*, after his Death induceth us to con-  
“ jecture

---

\* Family Collections, Vol. VIII.

† Ibid.

## 384 *A Genealogical History*

“ jecture of some extraordinary Miscarriage in this  
 “ Matter. Given under our Hands,

DON. CONNELL,  
 THAD. CALLAGHAN.

FROM these and other Circumstances there remained but little doubt that he was poisoned, yet after all the Diligence that could be used, a positive Proof of the Villany or rather of the Actors in it, was not to be obtained. — The Occasion of this horrible Act, can be attributed to nothing else but the great Activity which he used to discover the Murtherers of his second Brother *Robert*, of whom we have already spoken in the foregoing Chapter, and it is thought that he had then made himself so far Master of that wicked Scene; and was so well instructed as to the Authors of it, that the only Security left them was to rid themselves of him in the same unnatural manner.

It is certain that this Opinion prevailed very strongly at that Time infomuch, that it was thought to have deterred the further search into this execrable Train of Iniquity, and grew to be judged by some, a Point of Safety for the remaining Branches of the Family to push the Enquiry no farther, and to leave its Punishment to Providence, which is rarely slow in avenging Crimes of this Nature, tho' it has hitherto suffered this to remain (as far as we can learn) without its just Reward.

THE Inactivity of these Times, and the Shortness of his Life, prevented his making that Demonstration of his great Qualifications which at another Conjunction, or in a larger Course had made him very eminent. — For besides those personal Accomplishments of which we have spoken, he was yet more remarkable for the Strength of his Reason and the Beauty of his Expression, which was manifested in all his Writings to a Degree that was almost beyond Example in any one of his Age. — And to all this was added the clearest Courage, which he rather carried too far, in compliance with the modish Custom of private Encoun-

ters, so general in *England* at that Period, of these he had been concerned in two, which were very remarkable, and attended with severe Consequences to his Antagonists, tho' without much Injury to himself. The former was abroad, the other was at *Kilkenny* in *Ireland*, where having taken Lodgings, in his Way from his own House to *Dublin*, a *Danish* Officer, by a brutal Seizure of them, necessitated him to come to that Extremity. — The Circumstances of this Affair are unnecessary to be minutely related; it is sufficient that they fought in the Chamber, for which they contended, and Sir *Philip's* Gentleman was placed upon the Table with Candles in his Hands to light the Combatants, but the Matter was soon determined, by a Wound which Sir *Philip* gave his Adversary thro' the Body, upon which he surrendered his Sword, and Sir *Philip* his Chamber, to which the *Dane* was confined in the utmost Hazard of his Life for six Weeks after. — In truth, the Warmth of his Temper was his greatest Failing, which was not a little aggravated by a very high degree of Haughtiness, arising from an Opinion of the ANTIQUITY and DIGNITY of his own Extraction, and of all the other Advantages he possessed, not so well regulated as they should have been; but this Disposition appeared chiefly in the Generosity, and Honour of his Actions and Engagements, and never gave Offence to any, who did not draw the discovery of it upon themselves, to their own Shame and Correction, by a Behaviour not agreeable to Prudence or good Manners.

SIR *Philip* had laid a regular Plan, before him for his future Conduct: The *first Point* of which, was to recover as much of the ancient Patrimony of his House in *England* as he could, which had been formerly alienated by his Father and Great Grandfather, in the manner, and for the Reasons we have mentioned. And in this he would not have failed to have gone far, (if he had lived) by that singular Prudence which he exercised in his private Affairs; having left behind him above Eleven Thousand Pounds,



386 *A Genealogical History*

which he had saved in a very few Years. — The *other* was to get into publick Employment in *England*, of which he had Assurances; and he was preparing about the Time of his Decease, to go over thither to take a Seat in Parliament which he had secured there. — The Accounts we have given of his Parts will sufficiently shew the Reasons he had to expect Success in a publick Life, backed by so great a Fortune by the Advantages of his Birth and Person, by the Character of a perfect Attachment to the Prince then reigning, by the fast Friendship of the Duke of *Ormond*, who like a Man of true Generosity, retained a constant Affection for the Descendants of his once great Friend, Sir *Philip Perceval*, the Grandfather of this Gentleman, and he had already made some advantageous Effays of his Interest for some of his Family, when his farther Pursuits were suddenly stopped in the fatal manner we have mentioned.

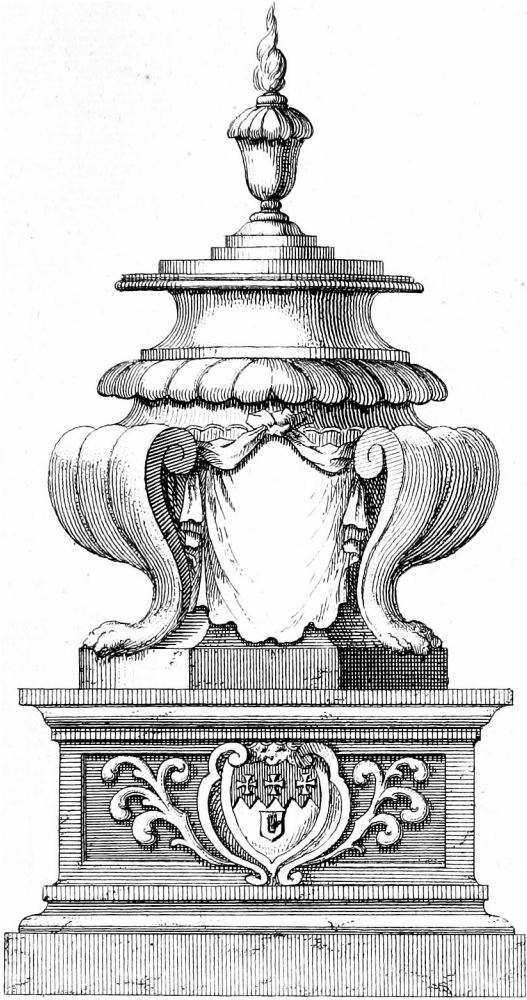
THO' few Men were more desirous of continuing their Families than he was, yet having at first two Brothers, he was not sollicitous, whether it should be done from his own Person, or from one of them; but when he found by a fatal Accident, the Elder of these had been taken off in so sudden and extraordinary a manner, and the other left with a Constitution very delicate, he began seriously to think of altering the Condition of his Life, and was determined to do it in *England*, where there was greater Choice out of Families not only more suitable to the Dignity of his own (in which Point he was very exact) but more agreeable in Matters of Fortune and Interest, neither of which were indifferent to a Man of his aspiring Views.

- \* “ To the MEMORY of Sir *PHILIP PERCEVAL*, of *Burton*, in the County of *Corke*,  
 “ Baronet, Son and Heir of Sir *John Perceval*,  
 “ Baronet, and of Dame *Katherine* his Wife.

“ H E

---

\* From the Entry in the Herald's Office, London.





of the House of YVERY, &c. 387

- “ HE was Born at *Kinsale*, the 12th of *January*, 1656,  
 “ and died at his House at *Burton*, the 11th of  
 “ *September*, 1680.
- “ HIS said Father died in *Dublin* (which was the  
 “ Place of his Birth, on the 1st of *November*, 1665,  
 “ and in the Thirty-seventh Year of his Age, and  
 “ lies there interred in the Church of *St. Audeon*.
- “ HIS Grandfather, Sir *Philip Perceval*, of *Dublin*,  
 “ Knight, who was Son to *Richard*, and Grand-  
 “ son to *George Perceval*, of *Sydenham*, in the Coun-  
 “ ty of *Somerjet*, Esq; died on the 10th of *Novem-*  
 “ *ber*, 1647, and was buried in the Church of *St.*  
 “ *Martin* in the Fields, in *London*, in the Forty-  
 “ seventh Year of his Age, having with eminent  
 “ Fame, passed most of his Life, in publick Em-  
 “ ployments, and the Service of the Crown.
- “ HIS said Mother; Dame *Katherine* (only Daughter  
 “ of *Robert Southwell*, of *Kinsale*, Esq; and of  
 “ *Helena* his Wife) died the 17th of *August*,  
 “ 1679, and in the Forty-seventh Year of her Age,  
 “ and lies there interred with her Parents.
- “ HIS Second Brother, *Robert*, was born at *Kinsale*,  
 “ the 8th of *February*, 1657. He had studied at  
 “ *Christ’s College*, in *Cambridge*; and was settled  
 “ at *Lincoln’s-Inn*, in *London*; in order to study the  
 “ Law, being by Nature and Education, fitted for  
 “ Improvements. He was, the 5th of *June*, 1667,  
 “ murdered by an unknown Hand, the Discovery  
 “ whereof doth still attend Divine Justice.
- “ HE lies interred under the Chapple at *Lincoln’s-*  
 “ *Inn*.
- “ HIS Fourth Brother, *Charles*, was born in *London*,  
 “ the 4th of *November*, 1661, and died at *Kinsale*,  
 “ 1662; and lies there buried with his Relations.
- “ THIS young Gentleman, being taken away by a  
 “ violent and sudden Fever, in the 24th Year of  
 “ his Age, gave just Cause of Lamentation, not  
 “ to his Friends alone but to all Lovers of his  
 “ Country. — For having trod the Paths of a ge-  
 “ nerous Education, first at *Christ’s Church* in *Ox-*  
 “ *ford*,

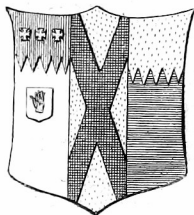
“ford, then at *Lincoln’s-Inn* in *London*, and lastly,  
 “by Travels into *France* and *Italy*, and retaining  
 “lively Impressions thereof, he was prepared with  
 “Virtues and Endowments, that rendered him very  
 “acceptable, and qualified him for publick Service.  
 “— He had already entered upon giving Testi-  
 “mony herein, and began to revive in his Country,  
 “the Memory of a Father and Grandfather, who  
 “for Wisdom, Sagacity, and other Virtues, which  
 “shined in them, were famous in their Generations,  
 “nor did he neglect the Counsels and Examples of  
 “a pious Mother, to whom he always bore great  
 “Reverence. — For he was Devout, Temperate,  
 “and Modest, and was neither by his Fortune,  
 “Youth, or Comeliness of Person, tempted from  
 “the Rules of Virtue. He had entertained in his  
 “Mind, so deep a Zeal for the Church of *England*,  
 “and such Loyalty towards the Crown, that when  
 “his Fever had misguided all other Discourses he  
 “persevered sensibly in these, — Such would his  
 “Life have been, who thus employed his dying  
 “Breath.

“SIR JOHN PERCEVAL, of *Burton*, Ba-  
 “ronet, Third Brother, and Heir to the said  
 “Sir *Philip*, being surprized at this early Fate,  
 “deploring his Loss, and counting nothing which,  
 “thereby descends unto him, able to recompence  
 “so great a Stroke upon his Family, erected this  
 “Monument, in the Year of our Lord, 1683.

C H A P. XI.

*Sir* JOHN PERCEVAL, *Baronet Eighth of that Name, Lord of Burton, Lifcarrol, Kanturk, Castlewarning, Oughretard, &c.*

PERCEVAL.



DERING.

WE come in the next place to speak of *Sir John Perceval*, Baronet (Eighth of that Name) Third Son of *Sir John Perceval*, Baronet, and *Katherine Southwell*, Lady *Perceval*, his Wife, who by the untimely Death of his Eldest Brother, *Sir Philip*, and the unhappy Murder of his Second Brother, *Robert*, became Heir to the Estate of this House and Chief of his Family.

*SIR JOHN PERCEVAL*, was Born at *Egmont*, near *Burton*, in the County of *Corke* in *Ireland*, upon the 22d of *August*, 1660, three Months after the Restauration of King *Charles* the Second.

HIS

390 *A Genealogical History*

HIS School Learning he acquired at *Westminster*; from whence he was removed to the University of *Oxford*; and being designed for the Law, as well as his Second Brother, he was there taught his first Rudiments under proper Tutors; but coming to his Estate (by the Death of his Brothers) he did not pursue that Study in which he had already made a very great Progress.

HIS Piety and Virtue were very remarkable in one of his Years, and his Manners and Inclinations so very engaging, that he was the Darling of all his Family and Relations, infomuch, that the Lady *Catherine Perceval*, his Mother dying upon the 17th of *August*, 1679, left him the greatest Part of her Effects, and made him her sole Executor.

HIS Temper was very grave, sober and modest, and his Genius, tho' not so quick as that of either of his Brothers was yet very well adapted to that Profession, for which he was at first designed. — For his Application, was constant and Excessive, so that it impaired one of his Eyes, which tho' visibly as fair as the other, yet afforded him but very little Service for a considerable Time before his Death.

UPON the Death of his Second Brother, *Robert*, he likewise became possessed of the better Part of his Fortune, as also of the sole Interest in those considerable Employments of *Clerk of the Crown*, *Prothonotary* and *Chief Clerk of the Common Pleas*, and *Custos Brevium*, in *Ireland*, which had been granted in Reversion to the said *Robert*, and himself, and to the Survivor of them, by King *Charles* the Second, upon the 22d of *May*, 1677, the Motives of which Grant, are thus rehearsed in the Patent.

“ WHEREAS *Richard Perceval*, Esq; Great Grand-  
 “ father\*; *Sir Philip Perceval*, Grandfather; and *Sir*  
 “ *John Perceval*, Baronet, Father of *Robert* and *John*  
 “ *Perceval*, younger Sons of the said *Sir John Perce-*  
 “ *val*,

---

\* Ex Autograph. penes Comit. de Egmont.

“ *val*, Baronet, deceased, had all of them with great  
 “ Affection and Loyalty, served the King and his  
 “ Progenitors, particularly his Majesty’s late Royal  
 “ Father, of glorious Memory, during the late Trou-  
 “ bles, and had been great Sufferers ; upon that Ac-  
 “ count, his Majesty shortly after his happy Restora-  
 “ tion had been graciously pleased, in Consideration  
 “ thereof, to grant the Office of Register of the Court  
 “ of Claims in *Ireland*, to Sir *John Perceval*, Baronet,  
 “ Father of the said *Robert* and *John*, but that he dy-  
 “ ing before he had made Benefit thereby, his Child-  
 “ ren and Family, were not only deprived of all Ad-  
 “ vantage by the same, but did also (by the Death of  
 “ Sir *William Usher*, Knight, his Trustee, which  
 “ shortly after happened) lose the Office of Clerk of  
 “ the Crown, and Prothonotary and Chief Clerk of  
 “ the Court of *King’s-Bench*, or Chief Place, in that  
 “ Kingdom, which had been held and enjoyed by  
 “ him and his Father, and executed by him and his  
 “ Father with singular Fidelity, for above forty Years  
 “ before. — That his Majesty, therefore, in Consid-  
 “ ration of the Merit and Sufferings of their said An-  
 “ cestors, was graciously pleased to Grant by his said  
 “ Letters Patent, the Reversion of the said Office  
 “ and Offices of *Clerk of the Crown*, *Prothonotary*,  
 “ and *Chief Clerk* of the *Common Pleas* in the *King’s-*  
 “ *Bench*, or *Chief Place* in our Kingdom of *Ireland*;  
 “ and the Office of *Custos*, or *Keeper of the Writs*,  
 “ *Rolls*, *Indictments*, *Process*, *Rules*, *Orders*, *Cer-*  
 “ *tificates*, *Memorandums*, and all other *Records* and  
 “ *Writings whatsoever*, belonging to the said Court\*.  
 “ To have and to hold the said Office and Offices, to-  
 “ gether with all and singular Fees, Wages, Stipends,  
 “ Perquisites, Profits, Advantages and Emoluments  
 “ whatsoever, unto the said Offices, or any of them,  
 “ belonging or appertaining to Sir *Robert Southwell*,  
 “ Knight, in Trust for his Nephews *Robert* and *John*  
 “ *Perceval*, and for the natural Life of the Survivor  
 “ of them.”

HIS



392 *A Genealogical History*

HIS Behaviour was so prudent with Regard to his eldest Brother, Sir *Philip Perceval*\*, that he greatly gained his Affection likewise, received many Favours, to the Improvement of his Fortune, from him;— and being invited over by him to *Ireland*, he set sail from *Bristol* on the twenty-eighth of *May*, 1679, and landed the thirty-first, after a bad Passage, at *Cork*.— He passed the Summer in that Kingdom with his Brother, who, without any Reserve, made him intimately acquainted with all the Affairs of his Estate. — || He set Sail on his Return from *Kinsale* upon the seventh of *October* following, and landed upon the tenth at *Milford Haven*, where he was driven by very bad Weather.

FROM that Time he followed his Studies with indefatigable Industry†, till the unhappy Accident of his eldest Brother's, Sir *Philip's* Death, which happened, as we have said before, in *September*, 1680; but then being the sole Heir of this great Fortune, and the last Male of his Line, he quitted that laborious Life, and soon after married *Katherine*, eldest Daughter of Sir *Edward Dering* of *Surrenden*, in the County of *Kent*, Baronet, a Lady already related to him, and to whom he had been privately engaged before.

THIS Marriage was celebrated upon the — Day of *February*, 1680, and in the *May* following, 1681 §, (leaving his Wife with Child) he went over into *Munster*, to forward the Buildings at his Seat at *Burton*, in the County of *Cork*, in that Province; from whence he set out on his Return upon the eighteenth, and landed, after a Passage of forty-four Hours, at *Bristol*, upon the twentieth of *October*, 1681.

HAVING obtained of King *Charles* the Second †, a further Reduction of the Quit-Rent of his Estate to a very inconsiderable Sum, and received the Favour of loading two Vessels from *England* with Furniture and Commodities necessary to him in that Kingdom, free from

\* Family Letters.      || *Ibid.*      † *Ibid.*      § *Ibid.*

† See *Ibid.* Vol. IX. fol. 1173, and fol. 1321. — This Quit-rent was diminished considerably before the Time of young Sir *Philip Herceval*, by Patent, dated Dec. 10, in the 27th of *Charles II.*

from the King's Duties : He went over with his Lady into *Ireland*, in 1682, from whence he never lived to return.

His manner of Life in that Country was magnificent to a very high degree, of which, for a Specimen, it will be sufficient to observe, that among the Ordinaries of the Expences, his Family consumed two Bullocks and twenty Sheep *per Week*\*, besides the Milk of thirty Cows, and all other Provisions in Proportion, as appears by his own Accounts. By an Expence proportional to this in every other Article, by his Buildings, and by a very great Negligence in his Oeconomy, he not only spent those large Sums which his eldest Brother left him, but plunged himself, in less than six Years, into a Debt of Eleven thousand Pounds.——Having likewise fined down for a long Term of Years divers large Estates, the Leases of which have many of them subsisted, and some do still subsist, even to our Times.

THE Greatness of these Expences might raise his Reputation with the Vulgar during his Life, but it was the Integrity and Merit of his Actions which endeared his Memory to all Men after his Death : He was the Parent of the Poor, the Arbitrer of all Differences with the better Sort, and the universal Pattern which all endeavoured to follow, who desired *to be*, or *to be thought* virtuous.

HIS Affability and general Benevolence never led him to debase himself with too frequent or too intimate Familiarity with any ; his Temper was reserved, but it was easy ; and his Station, Family, and Fortune, admitted him to indulge it as far as it was necessary, or as he desired.——He dedicated one Day in the Week to the Country, and then all the Country came in to pay their Respects to him, and to maintain the Credit of his Acquaintance.——He had two Particularities ; one was, that he accepted very few formal Invitations to any Man's House ; and the other, that he never staid longer with his Company than Five  
in

---

\* Family Letters.

in the Afternoon.—*This* Defect in the Return of Visits, was made up by his constant Appearance at Assizes of the County; and *that* in the Form of his Entertainments, was supplied by a Gentleman, whom he retained in his Family to supply his Place, and to do the Honours of his Table, after the Hour we have mentioned.—The rest of that Day, and the rest of his Time, he dedicated to his Devotions, in which he was regular and strict; to his Improvements and Plantations, of which he was very fond; and to his Wife and Children, in whom he placed his chief Delight and Happiness.—This way of Life, which might have seemed to favour too much of Pride and Grandeur in any Country, and especially (as Men were then modelled in that Kingdom) lost him neither Friendship nor Esteem, Respect nor Affection; he secured all these by a degree of Worth and Goodness, which made it almost thought profane to censure any Action or Practice of his Life.—Such was the real Character of Sir *John Perceval*, and such the Habits of a Man, whose Name will ever be dear in the Country in which he lived.

THE noble and happy Tranquillity he thus enjoyed, began to be a little ruffled before his Death, when King *James* the Second was advanced to the Throne, and the licentious Conduct of the Catholic Party grew daily more notorious in that Kingdom. Considerable as he was, and attached to the Interest of that Prince and Family, he still was not exempted from the ill Conveniences of that Time.—His Authority was continually exercised to repress the Insolencies of Men, who, in the Pride of their Expectations, abused their Power, even before they had formally acquired it.—The Government itself was very thankful to him for his Activity to maintain that Peace in the County, which lawless Men (as they will often do at such Conjunctions) unwarrantably disturbed; but the Justice and Wisdom of his Conduct raised him Enemies among that Set of Men, whom he thus repressed, and they found Means, low and despicable as they were, to bring him into some Difficulty.

FOR Sir *John Perceval*, however entire in his Principles to the Crown, from which he thought the Difference of his Religion could never absolve him, had nevertheless begun to prepare for his Defence, in Expectation of those Troubles, which he foresaw, though he did not live to feel.—He had laid in a large Quantity of Arms and Armour, with which he intended to provide his Tenants and Dependants, who were by their Tenure obliged to attend him with Horse and Arms, upon any Time of Danger, on his Summons.—His Intention was no more than to maintain his Allegiance, and his own Estate and Family, upon his own Strength as long as he could, and as his Forefathers had done before him; but the Government growing very jealous of the Protestants, without Distinction, ordered all of that Denomination to deliver in their Arms, Armour, and Ammunition, into the King's Stores by a certain Day.—Sir *John Perceval*, either thinking the Order could never be meant to extend to so good a Subject as himself, or wilfully disobeying that Order under this Pretence, still preserved his Arms:—Upon which one of his Servants, debauched by those we have mentioned, informed against him; and the Crime was of such a Nature, as threatened Danger to his Head, if his Character, Interest, and known Principles, had not preserved him; which was, nevertheless, not done without the Appearance of much Difficulty, in order to deter others more effectually from the same Presumption.

BUT his Escape from this dangerous Affair was of little Service to himself; for, not long after, being appointed Foreman of the Grand Jury at the Assizes in the County of *Cork*, (a Mark of Respect which was generally paid him)—the Prisoners being infected with a contagious Distemper, at that Time raging in their Goal, he, together with divers other Persons of Note, then sitting upon the Bench with him, was suddenly seized with the noisome Smells which perspired from them; and such was the Violence of the Disease which

## 396 *A Genealogical History*

he there contracted, that it would yield to no Art or Medicine, but carried him off in a few Days, at his Seat at *Burton* (whether he had been removed) upon the twenty-ninth of *April*, 1686, in the twenty-sixth Year of his Age, having enjoyed his Estate five Years seven Months and eighteen Days.

HIS Body was buried in the Church of *St. Nicholas* at *Burton* aforesaid, but the great Troubles which followed soon after, prevented the Erection of any Monument over him; and an Act of Parliament being obtained by *John*, now Earl of *Egmont*, his Son, in the ninth of *Queen Anne*, 1712, for removing the Site of of the said Church, the new Church being finished, and the old one entirely ruined, the Bodies of this Sir *John Perceval*, and of his elder Brother, Sir *Philip*, were removed in 1730, and now lie in the Vault of the Family, under the Altar there.

\* IN his Will, which was made in *Ireland*, upon the twenty-fourth of *January*, 1685-6, and proved the first of *January*——, “ he mentions the *Lady Katherine*, his Wife, his Sister, the *Lady Moore*, his Sister “ *Helena Perceval*, his Brother *John Dering*, his late Uncle *George Perceval*, and the three Sons of the said “ *George*, his Uncle Sir *Robert Southwell*, Knight, his “ own Sons *Edward*, and *John* (now Earl of *Egmont*) “ and his Daughter *Mary* (*Philip*, the youngest now “ living, being born after his Decease;) to all these “ he leaves divers Legacies, and the Guardianship of “ his Children to his Uncle, Sir *Robert Southwell*, “ Knight.

IT remains for us now to speak of *Katherine Lady Perceval*, Wife of this Sir *John*: She was third Daughter of Sir *Edward Dering*, of *Surrenden* in *Kent*, Baronet, a Family of great Antiquity and noble Extraction in those Parts. It is not doubted but that it was of *Saxon* Original, and there are many Proofs which carry it up to very remote Times.—Its Alliances have, some of them, been very eminent, as  
we

---

\* Ex Autograph, penes Com. Egmont.

of the House of YVERY, &c. 397

we have already shewn in the Chapter of Alliances of this House, through which they derive a Descent in Blood from many Sovereign Houses in *Europe*.—— As we advance nothing in this Work which has not its positive Authority, we shall content ourselves with deducing the Line of this House as far only as it is set forth in the Visitations of *Kent* in the Office of Arms.

—— We shall begin therefore (as they do) with *Thomas Dering* of *Dengemarsh*, near *Lid*, in *Romney Marsh*, in that County, whose Son, *John Dering*, marrying *Christian*, one of the Daughters and Coheirs of *James Hawte*, by his Wife, the Daughter and Heir of *Sir William Pluckley*, obtained the Manor of *Surrenden* about the Reign of *Henry* the Sixth, (with other considerable Estates in *Kent*) which is yet the Seat of that Family to this Day.—— *Richard Dering*, Son of the said *John*, by *Agnez*, the Daughter of—— *Eton*, of the County of *Salop*, had a Son *John*, who, by his Wife,——, Daughter of—— *Barton* of *Barrenden*, in *Kent*, had a Son, *Nicholas Dering*, who married *Alice*, Daughter and Coheir of *William Battenbam*, and by her had a Son *John*, whose Wife was *Margaret*, Daughter of *John Brent*, who became the Heirefs of her Brother, *Thomas Brent*, and also of her Cousin, *Robert Brent*, of *Wilborough*.

FROM this Marriage this Family acquired a noble Descent; for they derive from it a certain Claim to the Blood of several Sovereign Houses of the first Antiquity in *Europe*, through the different Channels of the several Branches of the *Norman* Line of *English* Kings.—— To enter into the Particulars of all those Families, as that of the Imperial House of *Charlemagne*, or that of *France*, and of a Multitude of others, would be very tedious, and equally unnecessary, as they may be traced by the Curious in the Genealogies of the Kings of *England*, and are, in some measure, deduced in the seventh Chapter of the first Book. It is sufficient here to mention the Descent first from *Edmund Crouchback*, Earl of *Lancaster*, Son of King *Henry* the Third.—— Secondly, from *Joan* of *Acres*, Daughter to King *Edward*

## 398 *A Genealogical History*

ward the First, Wife of *Gilbert de Clare*, Earl of *Gloucester*.—Thirdly, from *Elizabeth*, another Daughter of that Prince, who married *Humphrey de Bohun*, Earl of *Hereford* and *Essex*. Fourthly, from *Edmund of Langley*, Son of King *Edward* the Third, and Duke of *York*, from whom the Princes of the House of *York* descended also. And, Fifthly, from *John of Gaunt*, Son of the same King *Edward*, and Duke of *Lancaster*, from whom the *Lancastrian* Line of the *English* Kings are descended, as from the united Blood of both the Families now upon the Throne of these Realms derive their Title.

THIS *Katherine* Lady *Perceval* was already privately engaged, as we have said before, to Sir *John Perceval*, before the Death of his elder Brother, Sir *Philip*; which falling out in *September*, 1680, they were married in *February*, 1680-1, and lived together above five Years in great Harmony till the Death of her Husband, which happened, as we have shewn, in *April*, 1686. After which she remained near two Months in *Ireland* with her Children, settling her Affairs in that Kingdom; from whence she embarked for *England* in *June*, 1686, leaving the Country inconsolable at her Departure; for she was a Woman of great Humanity, and condescended to give Attention to the Wants and Necessities of the Common People, in such a degree, as if she thought she had no other Duty, but to consult their Welfare, and the Relief of their Necessities.

UPON the eighth of *January* following, 1686-7, the second of King *James* the Second\*, she made her last Will, “ leaving divers large Legacies to the Poor of  
 “ *Church-Town*, near *Cork*, and Relief of the Prisoners  
 “ in the Goal of *Cork*, who might be found to be con-  
 “ fined for less than the Sum of forty Shillings each.—  
 “ As likewise to her Mother, the Lady *Dering*, and to  
 “ her Brothers, Sir *Edward Dering*, Baronet, *Charles*,  
 “ *John*, and *Robert Dering*, and to her Sisters,—  
*Dering*,

---

\* Ex Autograph. penes Com. Egmont.

of the House of YVERY, &c. 399

“ *Dering*, Wife of — *Whorwood*. Her late Husband’s Sister, the Lady *Moore*, her Sister, *Jane Dering*, and her Sister — *Dering*, Wife of — *Knatchbull*. Also her Dressing-Plate to her Sister *Knatchbull*, and to her God-Daughters after her Decease. — Also her Brother *Daniel Dering*, 100*l*. Also to her late Husband’s Sister, Mrs. *Helena Perceval* fifty Pounds, together with twenty Pounds a Year, provided she continue unmarried, to be paid out of the Interest of her Money bequeathed to her younger Children, so long as her eldest Son, Sir *Edward Perceval*, Baronet, shall be a Minor; then recommending her to his Care, who, she hopes, will do better for her than she is able. — She also bequeathed divers other Legacies to Sir *Robert Southwell*, her Brother-in-Law, to his Son, *Edward Southwell*, and to his Daughters, her Nephews and Nieces. — Also to her Cousin, *Heneage Finch*, (after Earl of *Aylesford*) to *Richard Mulys*, Esq; and to *William Taylor*, Gentleman, twenty Pounds a piece. — She bequeaths all her great Family Pictures to her eldest Son, Sir *Edward Perceval*, and to her other Sons, *John* and *Philip*, all her Money, Goods, Chattels, &c. to go to her Sisters *Knatchbull*, and *Helena Perceval*. — She leaves Sir *Robert Southwell*, and his Son, *Edward Southwell*, Executors of this her last Will; and in case Sir *Robert* should die before the Completion of the Trust, she then appointed the Honourable *Heneage Finch* aforesaid, her Cousin, and *Richard Mulys*, Esquire, before named, to be jointly Executors with the said *Edward Southwell*, Esquire. She furthermore desires that Mr. *William Taylor* may be employed in the Management of her Childrens Fortunes, having great Confidence and Assurance of his Fidelity and Care.”

AFTER the making of this Will in *August*, 1690, she married a second Time to Colonel *Butler*, a Gentleman of *Ireland*, by whom she had no Issue, for she survived but a short Time, and, dying of a Miscarriage



riage upon the second of *February*, 1691-2, lies buried in the Church of *Chelsea*, in the County of *Middlesex*\*.

ISSUE of Sir *JOHN PERCEVAL*, Bart. of that Name, and of *Katherine*, Daughter of Sir *Edward Dering*, of *Surrenden* in *Kent*, Bart.

I. Sir *EDWARD PERCEVAL*, Baronet, born the Thirtieth of *July*, 1682, of whom in the next Chapter.

II. Sir *JOHN PERCEVAL*, Baronet, who succeeded his Brother, and is now Earl of *Egmont*, of whom in Chapter XIII.

III. *PHILIP PERCEVAL*, Esq; born at *King's Weston*, in the County of *Gloucester*, six Months after his Father's Decease, viz. upon the thirteenth of *November*, 1686. He is still living, and is married to *Martha*, Daughter of ——— *Usher*, Esquire, and Widow of the late Lord Chief Baron *Donnellan*, by whom he had one Son, also named *Philip*, who also died an Infant.

I. *MARY*, a Daughter, born at *Burton*, who died an Infant in *December*, 1686.

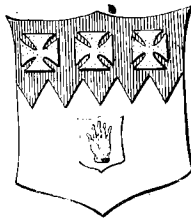
II. *KATHERINE*, also born at *Burton*, who died likewise in her Infancy.

---

\* Register in *Chelsea Church*.

CHAP. XII.

*Sir* EDWARD PERCEVAL,  
*Baronet, Lord of Burton, Lis-carrol,*  
*Kanturk, Castlewarning, Oughte-*  
*rard, &c.*



**S**IR *Edward Perceval*, Bart. eldest Son and Heir of Sir *John Perceval* (eighth of that Name) and of *Katherine Dering, Lady Perceval*, his Wife, was born at *Burton*, in the County of *Cork*, upon the thirtieth of *July*, 1682. He was Lord of *Burton, Lis-carrol, Kanturk, &c. &c.*\*, and succeeded to the Estate of his Father in 1686, being then little more than four Years of Age.——† Two Months after, *viz.* upon the fifteenth of *June*, the King's Yacht, named the *Henrietta*, was ordered to carry him over into *England*, where

---

\* Family Letters.  
VOL. II.

† Ibid.  
F f f

where he remained all the Time of the Disorders in *Ireland*, which followed upon the Revolution, with *Sir Robert Southwell*, his Great Uncle and Guardian.

IN these Troubles his Estate, which had already suffered so immensely in the Rebellion of 1641, in the Time of King *Charles* the First, suffered again, by the Destruction of Castles, Woods, and Houses, loss of Rent and Stock, to the Value of more than *forty thousand Pounds\**. The Loss of Rents alone were returned into the Chancery of *England* by his Guardian, *Sir Robert Southwell*, at *Twenty thousand six hundred twenty eight Pounds twelve Shillings and Five-pence Half-penny*.

† IN these Troubles, such was the Violence of those Times, that this young Gentleman was (notwithstanding his tender Age, and Impossibility of his being able to have deserved so hard a Treatment) involved in that general Act of Confiscation, made during the Government of that Party; but there being a Clause in that Act, giving Leave to Minors, or Persons innocent, by their Agents or themselves, to make out their Claims without Prejudice from that Law. The Agents of *Sir Edward Perceval* accordingly making out his Title, he was even under that Government maintained in his Estate; an Instance the rather to be mentioned, because the Violence of Party has represented these Proceedings (which were in Truth exorbitant enough) still more violent than they really were.

§ HE lived but a short Time after, for being then nine Years old and a little more, he departed this Life, by a Disease occasioned from a Polypus in his Heart, at *London*, upon the ninth of *November*, 1691, from whence his Body was conveyed to *Gloucester*, thence to *Henbury*, the Burying-Place of *Sir Robert Southwell*, near *King's Weston*, in that County.

*John*, his second Brother, now Earl of *Egmont*, his next Heir, succeeded to the Title and Estate.

C H A P.

---

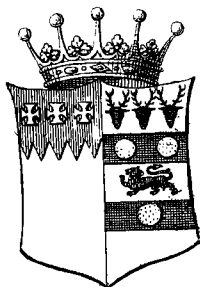
\* Out of *Sir Robert Southwell's* Account of the Guardianship of this Family in four folio MSS.

† *Ibid.*

§ *Ex Chart. Famil.*

C H A P. XIII.

*The most Noble and Puissant LORD,*  
**JOHN PERCEVAL** (*ninth*  
*of that Name*) *Earl of Egmont,*  
*Viscount Perceval of Kanturk, Baron*  
*Perceval of Burton, Baron. Perce-*  
*val, and Baronet, one of his Majesty's*  
*most Honourable Privy Council, &c.*



\* **S**IR *John Perceval* (ninth of that Name) now  
Earl of *Egmont*, second Son of Sir *John Perceval*,  
Baronet, and of *Katherine*, Daughter of Sir *Edward*  
*Dering* of *Surrenden* in *Kent*, Baronet, was born at  
*Burton*, in the County of *Corke*, upon the twelfth of  
*July*, 1683. His Father dying, as we have shewn  
before, upon the twenty-ninth of *April*, 1686. He  
F f f 2 was

---

\* The Proofs of this Chapter arise from the Journals of the present Earl of Egmont.

404 *A Genealogical History*

was sent over into *England* not long after, and landed near *Bristol* upon the twenty-seventh of *July*, the same Year, and his elder Brother, *Sir Edward*, dying upon the ninth of *November*, 1691, he then succeeded to the Title and Estate.

THE Lady *Perceval*, his Mother, marrying again in *August*, 1689, the sole Guardianship of the Children was vested, from that Time, by virtue of *Sir John Perceval's* Will, in *Sir Robert Southwell*, Great Uncle to the Minors, who executed that Trust with great Fidelity and Care.

HE was educated in that Gentleman's House by *Dr. Henry Roby*, Chaplain to the late *Sir John Perceval*, till the Year 1696, when, being about thirteen Years of Age, he was placed at *Mr. Demeure's* Academy, a Place famous for Education at that Time, where *French, Latin, Geography, Musick, Dancing, Fencing, Vaulting, Quarter-Staff*, and other hardy Exercises, were regularly taught; and, at leisure Hours, *Mr. Betterton*, the famous Tragedian, was employed to instruct him in those Parts of Oratory which consist of Emphasis and Action.

IN 1698 he was removed to *Westminster School*, where he studied under the Direction of *Doctor Brevin*, one of the Prebends of that Church.

IN *November*, 1699, he was entered at *Oxford*, in *Magdalen College*, where he applied himself to the *Mathematicks, Logick, Morality and History*, under his Tutor, *Dr. Smallbrooke*, now Bishop of *Litchfield and Coventry*. During his Stay there, his Behaviour was much regarded for Sobriety and Regularity, and for his not conforthing with the idle and dissolute Part of that Society.

IN *June*, 1701, he quitted the University, and, having made the Tour of *England*, was admitted a Fellow of the Royal Society, though then but nineteen Years of Age, with great Commendations of his early Knowledge in those Branches of Literature which are chiefly there encouraged.

*Sir Robert Southwell* dying upon the eleventh of *September*, 1702, his Guardianship fell to *Edward Southwell*,

of the House of YVERY, &c. 405

*Southwell*, Esq; one of the Clerks of the Council, and Secretary of State for *Ireland*, Son to the said Sir *Robert*.

UPON the Death of King *William*, in 1703, a new Parliament being to be chosen in *Ireland*, he went over thither in 1704 with the Duke of *Ormond*, then Lord Lieutenant, (between whose Family and this still subsisted the ancient Friendship) and though not of Age, was, without Opposition, elected Knight of the Shire for the County of *Cork*.

IN the Month of *October* following, in the same Year, he was appointed a *Privy-Counsellor*, in which honourable Station he has been uninterruptedly continued to this Time, a Space of thirty-seven Years, notwithstanding the frequent Changes and Virulence of Parties.

IN *July* 1705, having settled the Affairs of his Estate in that Kingdom, he returned to *England*. In the next Month he began the grand Tour of *Europe*, and endeavouring to make the best of his Way to *Rome*, narrowly escaped being taken Prisoner by a *French* Privateer, between *Leghorn* and *Genoa*.—— This vexatious Accident was prevented by his being actually taken by a *German* Frigate, the Commander of which informed him of his Danger, and set him ashore at *Lerichi*, whence he pursued his Journey by Land. There was a good deal of Danger in this Adventure, for the *Germans* fired many Shot at the Vessel in which he was, before she struck.

HE continued abroad about two Years, having visited most of the Courts of *Italy* and *Germany*, and Republicks of *Genoa*, *Venice*, and *Holland*.

IN *October* 1707, he returned to *England*, having lost a vast Collection of Books, Statues, Paintings, and other Curiosities, which he had amassed at a great Expence in his Travels; they falling into the Hands of the *French*, with whom we were then at War.

IN *February* following he was seized with a violent Fever in *London*, where he lay long in excessive Danger,

ger, given over by all his Physicians, but he at length recovered.

IN *May* 1708, he went over again to *Ireland*, from whence, having regulated some necessary Business, he returned in *September* 1709.

UPON the twentieth of *June*, 1710, he married *Catherine*, eldest Daughter of Sir *Philip Parker a Morley*, of *Erwarton*, in the County of *Suffolk*, Baronet; a Lady of great Beauty, and fine Qualities, still living, and of a very noble Family, as we shall shew more particularly at the End of this Chapter.

*JOHN*, now Lord Viscount *Perceval*, his eldest Son, being born in *February*, 1710-11, he went over to *Ireland* in the beginning of the *August* following, to be present at the Parliament held that Year, under the Duke of *Ormond*, who was appointed a second Time Lord-Lieutenant of that Kingdom. He carried his Lady with him, and landed at *Dublin* the tenth of that Month.

THE Man of War in which he was, coming late in the Evening into the Bay of *Dublin*, when the Tide was too far spent for the Ship to compleat the Voyage, Lady *Perceval* being extremely ill, notwithstanding the Badness of the Weather, and much against the Advice of the Commander, they were put into the Pinnace, to be sent on Shore that Night;— but a great Darkness suddenly arising, the Boatmen mistook their Course, and in a great Tempest rowed out to Sea, so that in the Morning they found themselves many Leagues from the Shore, which, however, they afterwards safely recovered.——But there was a farther good Fortune in this Affair, for by this Accident they escaped a *French* Privateer, which lay concealed in the Harbour, expecting this Prey, into whose Hands they had inevitably fallen, but from this Error in the Seamen we have mentioned.

IN *September* 1713, the Duke of *Shrewsbury* being declared Lord-Lieutenant, a new Parliament was called, upon which he was again elected Knight of the Shire for the County of *Cork*, without Opposition.

of the House of YVERY, &c. 407

UPON the second of *March*, 1713-14, he embarked for *England*, and arrived at *London* the fourteenth of the same Month, being much offended at the Measures taken in that Kingdom by the Faction prevailing there, and finding it impossible to stem the Torrent which was breaking in upon the Constitution both in Church and State.

BUT a Change soon happened; for upon the Death of Queen *Anne* upon the first of *August* following, the Nation was rescued from all her Fears, by the Accession of King *George* the First, who landing at *Greenwich* on the eighteenth of *September* following, he attended in his Rank, as a Privy-Counsellor, in that Procession which was made from thence to *St. James's*.

UPON the ninth of *October* next ensuing a new Commission for the Privy-Council being issued, he was one of the few continued in it upon this great Change.

UPON the fourteenth of *March* the same Year, the King being desirous to secure to himself the Attachment of Men of Estate, Merit, and Interest, upon his first Establishment in this Kingdom,——and being informed that in the late Reign a Peerage had been offered to him, which he then refused, not caring to be concerned with the Government, as it was then conducted;——his Majesty sent Mr. *Addison*, then or soon after Secretary of State, to desire him to accept the Dignity of a Baron of *Ireland*, which he (though with great Decency) declined, as inferior to that Offer formerly mentioned in the late Reign, which was that of an *English* Baron, he concluded, with the strongest Assurances of his wanting no Enno Encouragement or Inducement to persevere in an inviolable Attachment to his Majesty, and his illustrious Family; desiring his Majesty to be pleased to excuse his Acceptance of any Title of Honour, unless it should suit his Pleasure to advance him either to that of an *English* Baron, or an *Irish* Earl.

BUT



BUT his Majesty, not contented with this Answer; sent Mr. *Addison* again to him, desiring that he would for the present receive the Peerage as it was then offered, promising that in a few Months he would advance him farther in the *Irish* Peerage, and that he might certainly depend upon that *English* Honour he desired, as soon as the Convenience of his Affairs should admit, which would not be very long.

WHEREUPON he was created Baron *Perceval*, of *Burton*, in the County of *Corke*, in *Ireland*, and Baron *Perceval*, with this Preamble to his Patent.

“ The Duty of Princes elevated to the Sovereign  
 “ Dignity, is a sacred Obligation, which not only consists  
 “ in the Repression of Vice, but also in the Advancement  
 “ of Virtue into Posts of Dignity and Honour, that it may  
 “ shine with the greater Lustre, and operate more powerfully  
 “ by Example on Mankind,  
 “ ——— Induced by these Considerations, We have  
 “ thought it incumbent on Us to confer the Title of  
 “ Baron upon our well-beloved and faithful Counsellor  
 “ the Right Honourable Sir *John Perceval*, Baronet. ———  
 “ A Person highly recommended to Us, as well by the eminent  
 “ Merits of his Fore-fathers, as by his own personal Virtues,  
 “ being undoubtedly descended from an House of the most  
 “ remote Antiquity, who under the Standard of *William*  
 “ Duke of *Normandy*, Our great Ancestor, first entered  
 “ *England*, and from thence in the beginning of the last  
 “ Century passed over into *Ireland*, where in every succeeding  
 “ Generation they have constantly and nobly exerted  
 “ themselves in the most conspicuous Stations with consummate  
 “ Reputation, in defence of the Rights both of the Prince  
 “ and People. — From the Hereditary Honour and Virtue  
 “ of his Race, in the faithful Execution of the first Offices  
 “ of the State, in a powerful Opposition to the factious  
 “ Violence of those who laboured to subvert the Laws  
 “ and the Religion of these Kingdoms, and in a constant  
 “ and steady Conduct in the worst of Times, during the  
 “ Dissolution

“ Dissolution of both. This young Nobleman (keeping ever in his View the Example of his great Ancestors) did never degenerate, but has maintained the Glory he derived from them, with an equal Prudence, Integrity and Resolution. At an Age in which the Laws have judged Men usually unfit to be trusted with the Management of their own private Property, by an Example entirely unprecedented before, he was admitted into the Privy-Council of the Kingdom; and preserving not only an inviolable Duty to his Prince, but a religious Reverence to the Religion of his Country, and a constant Application to the Parts of a worthy Member to the Commonwealth; he acquitted himself in that important Station, with so much Dignity and Judgment, so much Affection to us and our Family, that unless we should submit to the Scandal of being exceeded by a Subject in good Actions. We find ourselves obliged to bestow, *even greater Honours* upon him than those, which by these Presents, we now confer. Wherefore, &c.”

BUT the Promise here mentioned, happened to be something tedious in Performance, and indeed was never rigidly fulfilled, for about the latter End of the Year, 1717, an unhappy Breach being made by Accidents, not proper to be mentioned here, between the King and the then Prince of *Wales*, his Son, now King *George* the Second; all Peers and Privy Counsellors were required to make their Election of Attendance upon *either* of the Courts, but afterwards to come no more to *both*. — His Lordship, affectionately attached to the whole Family, found it difficult how to act on this disagreeable Occasion. — Of all Evils, he most dreaded the Imputation of a factious or ungrateful Character, both which according to the ancient Practice of Courts, he had reason to expect to be thrown upon him by those about the King's Person, if he preferred the Court of the Prince to the other. — In this Situation, he resolved to shew his Reluctance to this Distinction, as manifestly as he could, by frequenting

quencing both Courts, notwithstanding the Order before observed, which he did for some time, till at length the King taking Notice of it, sent him a very obliging Messuage, inviting him to continue at his own Court; at the same time acquainting him, that his Reasons were such, for desiring those to abstain from his Presence who attended the Prince, that he could not possibly dispense with the Rule he had made in favour of any Person whatsoever.

BEING now no longer able to resist, his Lordship made his Election of the Court of the Prince of *Wales*, conscientiously thinking, that the Justice in the Dispute was on that Side, where he continued ever after.

FROM this Time there was little reason to expect the Performance of the Promise abovementioned. — Favours are rarely granted to those who absent themselves from Courts. But such was the Justice of that Prince, that several Years after, recollecting his Engagement, he thought that this Conduct of his Lordship, whom he knew still to be faithful to him, ought to be no just Reason to absolve him from it; so that in *December, 1722*, his Lordship, neither then expecting or making Application for it, he was advanc'd farther, to the Degree of a Viscount of the same Kingdom, by the Stile of Viscount *Perceval*, of *Kanturk*. — By which his Majesty, to his great Honour, kept his Word inviolate, tho' the Title conferred, was not of that Degree which answered the Condition of his Lordship, in his first Demand. — As to the *English* Title, of which he had likewise been so strongly assured, whether the King still intended to confer it (when from the great Worth and Justice of his Character, there is no room to doubt) and only waited for a proper Time, or whether diverted from it by those about him, who were unwilling, that a Favour of this Nature should be granted, without an Obligation to themselves, we cannot say, but it was still deferred, his Lordship modestly declining to press for it, till Death absolved his Majesty of that Engagement.

HAVING

HAVING been desirous to connect the Story of this Peerage together, we have been engaged a little to misplace an Event which was of great Importance, and which happened in the Year, 1720. — This is the famous Act of Parliament, then made in *England*, declaring the Judicature of the Peers of *Ireland* in Civil Cases, to be of no Validity.

WE have had occasion in this Work to observe before, that upon the first Acquisition of *Ireland*, the Constitution there was modeled upon the *English* Plan, and that it was then wholly independent of the *English* Nation, subject to the same Prince; they were governed by their own Laws, to which the King assented, in the same free manner as he did to those of *England*\*. — *Henry* the Second, who first established the Scepter there, as a Condition of that voluntary Submission, which the *Irish* made upon his Attempt on that Kingdom, in a great Council of the *Irish*, at *Lifmore*, granted them the Laws and Liberties of *England*; and added afterwards, among other Privileges, the *Modus Tenendi Parliamenta*†, or Rule for their New Parliamentary Government, in the same individual Terms, and Form with that of *England*, in which Record, its said, “ That Causes of Property are to be “ examined and corrected in full Parliament, and no “ where else.”

KING *John* (younger Son to the said King *Henry*) who was independent Sovereign of that Island, in the Life-time of his elder Brother, *Richard*, King of *England*‡, upon his last Voyage thither, in the twelfth of his Reign, renewed his Compact, which even in so short a Time had been violated by the *English* Adventurers to the great Disturbance of that State, and provided as before, “ That all the Laws and Customs “ enjoyed in *England*, should be likewise enjoy’d in “ *Ireland* ;” of which the Judicature of Parliament was one of those most eminent.

\* Mat. Paris, ad Ann. 1172.

† Lord Coke, p. 12.

‡ Mat. Paris, p. 220.

THE rapacious Views of the *English* Adventurers newly settled there, prompting them still to farther Innovations upon the Rights of that People; these Disorders proceeding from this Cause †, occasioned the most solemn Confirmation of these Privileges, in the Time of King *Henry* the Third (Son to the said King *John*) at *Bristol*, upon the twelfth of *November*, in the tenth Year of his Reign, granted the *Magna Charta* to *Ireland*, in the same identical Words with that of *England*, which he confirmed eight Years after. Again by another Charter, dated at *Gloucester*, the sixth of *February* following, he farther confirm'd his Father's Charter, and his own, last mentioned; ordaining\*,

“ That their Constitution should be preserved intire  
 “ upon the *English* Plan, as his Father *John* had de-  
 “ creed, when he was last in *Ireland*; and that all  
 “ Writs and Matter of Law, should have their Course  
 “ in *Ireland*, in like manner as they had in *England*.”

IN the twelfth of the same Reign, by a Writ, dated at *Westminster*, the eighth of *May* †; the same Prince empowered *Richard de Burgo*, then Justice of *Ireland*, at a certain Day and Place, to summon the Nobility, Clergy, and Commons of that Land, to read before them the Charter of his Father, King *John*, whereunto his Seal was appendant, whereby he had granted unto the Laws and Customs of *England*; and that he should leave the same to be promulged thro' the whole Land of *Ireland*.

IN these early Times, Appeals were sometimes made from the Court of *King's-Bench* in *Ireland*, to that of the *King's-Bench* in *England*, because the King, who was the Common Judge of both Nations in that Age, was accustomed to sit in Person in that Court; and sometimes the Judges in *England*, were consulted in certain difficult Points of Law, from a want of Men fully instructed in the Constitution there,

during

† Vide red Book of the Exchequer, at Dublin.

\* Pat. 1. H 3. m. 13. Entries.

‡ Clauf. 12. l. 3.

during its first Infancy. — But still there was never any Pretence at that Time, that this was *de jure* done, or that any Appeal then lay to any Court without the Kingdom, till at length about the Reign of *Edward* the Third, the *English* began to aim at extending their Jurisdiction, and pretended, tho' they supported it but very faintly, that the ancient Appeals to the Court of *King's-Bench*, in *England*, implied a Superiority in the *English* Nation over the *Irish*, with respect to this Particular, arguing *a fortiori*, that if Appeals were made to the inferior Courts in *England*, of consequence they might be made to the supreme Court of all (the *English* Parliament) carefully avoiding the original Ground of these Appeals, which sprung from a Motive very foreign to any Claim of Superiority. — Under these Pretences, it seems that they had actually begun to take Cognizance of some judicial Matters relating to the Kingdom of *Ireland*, before the twentieth of that Reign §, whereupon the Commons of *Ireland* transmitted a strong Remonstrance to the King, setting forth, “ That they had long endured intolerable Oppression and Injustice from Men of Authority in that Kingdom, who abusing their Power, disseized them of their Estates, and under Pretence that there was no Appeal to the Parliament of *Ireland*, supported themselves with Impunity in this Violence, reducing Multitudes to the greatest Poverty and extreme Distress, unable from the great Charge and Hazard in prosecuting their Rights abroad, to carry their Appeals to *England*; wherefore they humbly besought the King to remedy this crying Abuse, and to maintain the Privileges of their violated Constitution.” In consequence of which Complaint, the King, by an Ordinance of the thirtieth of *August*, in the same Year, decreed, — “ That whereas it appeared an intolerable Grievance, that his People of that Nation should be thus oppressed

---

§ Rot. Claus. m. 12, 29. Ed. 3. in Turri Londini.

“ pressed without a Remedy, and that he was bound  
 “ by the Nature of his supreme Office, to see Justice  
 “ done to all his Subjects; for the future Justice should  
 “ be done to them, according to the known Customs  
 “ and Laws of both Kingdoms, and all Appeals and  
 “ Proceffes upon Errors of Judgments in the inferior  
 “ Courts of that Realm, should be made and carried  
 “ on in the Parliaments of that Kingdom only\*.”

Again, upon the twenty-fifth of *October*, in the thirty-first of the same Reign, King *Edward* the Third, confirmed a-new all the Rights of that Nation, by his Letters Patents, dated at *Westminster*, in the most ample manner.

If any thing were wanting to corroborate this Privilege, after all these different Ordinances and Charters from the Crown, it was supplied by the Decree of King *Richard* the Second †, upon the twenty-second of *June*, in the seventeenth of his Reign, when *all the Liberties and Immunities of that Kingdom were again confirmed, among which the Judicature of the Irish Parliament was included* †. Moreover, the same Prince, by his Letters Patents, dated at *Westminster*, four Days after, renewed the Charter of King *Edward* the Third, beforementioned, and recited the same *verbatim*.

FROM this time forward till the eighth of *Henry* the Sixth, 1430, the Judicature of that Kingdom, not only continued firm, but was never attacked, nor was there any Complaint or occasion of Complaint on this Head from thence §. But about that Time the Prior of *Lantbony*, in *Wales*, having brought an Action in the Common Pleas in *Ireland*, against the *Irish* Prior of *Mullingar*, for the Arrear of an Annuity, Judgment was given against the Prior of *Mullingar*, who thence brought a Writ of Error into the *King's-Bench* of *Ireland*, where the Judgment was affirmed. —

The

---

\* Rot. Pat. 17. Richard II. m. 34. de Confirmatione.

† 17 Ric. 2d. m. 12.

‡ Rot. Pat. de eod. ann. m. 34.

§ Pryn Instit. 4, c. 76. p. 313.

of the House of YVERY, &c. 415

The Prior of *Mullingar*, appealed again to the Parliament held in *Ireland*, in the fifth of *Henry* the Sixth, which Parliament reversed both the former Judgments, whereupon the Prior of *Lanthony* removed the Cause into the *King's-Bench* of *England*; but that Court refused to be concerned with it, as having no Power over what had passed in the Parliament of *Ireland*; — after which the Prior of *Lanthony*, in the eighth of *Henry* the sixth, appealed to the Parliament of *England*, but neither would they determine upon it thereby declaring, that they had no Pretensions to interfere in the Judicature of that Nation.

THESE Rights of Judicature, stood inviolate after this for near three hundred Years, in which Interval the Sense of the *English* Lawyers themselves, occurs frequently in the most positive manner, in favour of them particularly \* in the second Year of King *Richard* the Third, 1484, a Question arising, concerning certain Bales of Wool, exported by a Merchant of *Waterford*, which the Treasury of *Calais* had seized in that Port. The Judges of *England*, in their Opinions upon that Case, occasionally pronounced, that *Ireland* was not to be bound by *English* Statutes, because they had no Representatives in the *English* Parliament and that they had a Parliament of their own, in which they made and amended their Laws and † “ that they “ had all manner of Courts, &c. with the same Pre- “ rogatives as they had in *England*.”

BUT in length of Time, by Accidents too long to be recited here, *Ireland* being wasted by bloody Wars, broken by frequent Forfeitures, and much distracted by Changes in Property and Religion; such a general Weakness and Division of Interest arose, that she became incapable to resist the Incroachments of her Neighbour. — At the same Conjunction, when other Causes concurred to render the same Neighbour more able to encroach. — For in *England*, the Publick was increased

---

\* Year Book, 2 Ric. 3. fol. 11. 12.

† Ibid.



increased in Riches and Power to a prodigious Degree, by an advantageous Commerce, which drew in a great Part of the Treasure of the New World, hardened their Inhabitants, inured them to Fatigues, and made them Masters of the Sea, by which Means they were enabled, at the shortest warning, to throw into *Ireland* a Force far exceeding that which they could anciently have exercised against her. — This growing Power they had gradually taught themselves to know, even to their own Surprise, by the great Armies they had maintained, and the great Taxes they had supported in the Civil War. — In the next Place, by their Conjunction with *Scotland*, under the same Prince, they were secured from any Disturbances at home, which might have formerly been feared from any Commotions in the Island of which we speak; and lastly their Government being become more popular, and consequently more formidable to their Princes. The Kings of *England* were less capable to preserve intire their old Prerogatives; and in particular, that of the independent Sovereignty of the Crown of *Ireland*; all which concurring in the Reign of King *Charles* the Second, easy in his Temper, careless of his Subjects, and negligent of every thing but his Pleasure; it is no wonder that the natural Ambition of Men on the *English* Side, should prompt them to avail themselves of these Circumstances and Opportunities, to draw the *Irish* Nation to a Dependance on themselves. *The Pride of all free States* (as we have before intimated) producing from the same Principle, the Vindication of their own Privileges, and an Invasion of the Rights of others. — Nor could they be much blamed for endeavouring to effect this End, every Man of common Understanding, being able to foresee the glaring Inconvenience and Danger, which must in time result from such an Independancy in the Government of so near a Nation, under the same Prince. It is not therefore the *View* but the *Manner* taken to bring it to bear, which may deserve Censure, and which is so far from attaining that Union and Security, which is so

so justly wished, that it now evidently tends to occasion those Evils which it is designed to avoid.

THE Judicature of *Ireland*, being not only an eminent Mark, but a strong Defence to the Independency of that Country; the Destruction of it was an early Point in view. — But this was not however a Work to be effected at one Blow, Pretensions were wanting to this Design, it was therefore necessary to prepare the Minds of Men for this Measure by others of a more spacious Nature. — The first Instance in which they began to interfere with the Affairs of *Ireland*, was in the Year 1641, when a violent Rebellion raging in that Kingdom, from the want of a Parliament there, or its Capacity to act in that tempestuous Time, Humanity seemed to grace the first Attempt against the Privilege of that People, and pleaded a seeming Necessity to provide for their Safety by a foreign Authority. The *English* Parliament took hold of this Occasion, and offered Security out of the future Forfeitures in *Ireland* for the Sums advanced by the Adventurers in the *Irish* War. — The Breach thus made was soon enlarged; for after the Restoration, King *Charles* the Second, acting still under the same Pretences of Necessity of State, they passed those Laws (which have since proved so fatal to the Trade of both Kingdoms) against the Exportation of *Irish* Wool and Woollen Manufactures abroad, as also against that of their Cattle into *England*, for which they found Arguments suited to the different Tempers of most Men on this Side, who were blinded to the Hardship of this Proceeding by various Gratifications of Pride or Envy, publick or private Interest. — From that Time forward all Opportunities were taken, to pass both publick and private Laws, some way or other relative to that Kingdom, from Precedents, tho' of a trivial Nature, and not immediately conclusive, to create a Prescription in favour of this new Authority, and having by their superior Influence with the Crown, artfully prevented the holding of any Parliaments for many Years in that Kingdom the same Reason of seeming Necessity con-

tinued to justify these Proceedings, and induced many of that Nation to concur in promoting the Ruin of their Country by personal Applications to the *English* Legislature.

THESE Measures insensibly produced the most fatal Effects which still operate dreadfully upon both Nations, totally unhinging the Constitution of that Kingdom and reducing its Inhabitants under the most confused, uncertain, and contradictory Form of Government that was ever known in the World. The People, and even the Magistrates, never able to determine their Obedience, and unavoidably obnoxious in many Cases to the Resentments of *the one* Legislature by a legal Submission to *the other*; inveterate Indignation on the one Part, continued Insult on the other; every *British* Subject, how mean soever, imperiously ascribing to himself, as a Member of a People governed by its Representatives, the same Superiority assumed by the General Council of his Country, disquieting with a licentious Boldness, the Greatest of the other State, by a galling Evidence of Contempt and Arrogance in *private* Discourses, and of manifest and outrageous Partiality in the Distribution of *publick* Preferments.

—— The *English* were thus brought at length, by the exercise of the *Power*, to be universally convinced, that they likewise enjoyed the *Right*, and the mutual Hatred, begot by the same Exercise of Power, inflamed their Passions too far to suffer them to reflect upon the Justice of their Claim. —— Which Passions still nationally subsist to that Degree of Extravagance, that they can be compared with no others which infest the Mind of Man, but such as are found in Bigots against those who contravert the Fundamentals of their Faith.

THE Time was now thought ripe for a direct Attack upon the House of Lords, and accordingly two Appeals were made in the Years 1670 and 1679, from the Chancery of *Ireland* to the *English* Lords, at a Juncture, when no possible Opposition could be made from thence, no Parliament sitting, either before or  
after

after for many Years in that Kingdom; and in 1699, the same Encouragement subsisting, for want of a Parliament there, the Lords in *England* proceeded upon an Appeal, between the Lord *Ward* (one of their own Body) and the Earl and Countess of *Meath*, to an Estate in *Ireland*, which they decided without much Ceremony in favour of the Lord *Ward*, without hearing the Merits of the Cause, pretending the former Decree of *Ireland* to have been passed *coram non Judice*, that is to say, before a Court who had no Title to take Cognizance of it.

A Measure so strong as this, and supported by no other Ground or Precedent than what we have shewn, astonished all Men in the other Kingdom, and made the worse Impression there, as the Matter had been determined in favour of the Lord *Ward*, a Member of the House of Lords in *England*; and as the Estate had been confirmed to him, without any Examination into the Merits of the Case, yet notwithstanding the Warmth of the Proceeding, which threaten'd very great Extremities, the Parliament of *Ireland* meeting in 1703, the Lords asserted their Jurisdiction with great Spirit, and maintained their former Decree dispossessing the Lord *Ward*, and restoring the Estate contested for to the Earl and Countess of *Meath*, who remained in the Enjoyment of it, while the House of Lords in *England*, conscious of the Novelty of their Claim, no longer persisted to support the unprecedented Judgment they had given. — Nor did they attempt any thing farther at that Time in vindication of their new assumed Authority, sufficiently satisfied to have thus begun to form a Precedent, which they were determined to improve upon the first Occasion that should offer in their Favour.

ACCORDINGLY several Years after, the House of *Hanover* being newly seated on the Throne, and a Change being made still more advantageous to the Liberty of *England* (according to the former Remark) the Sufferings of *Ireland* encreased. — The frequent Attempts upon the Liberties of that People had

wonderfully reduced them in Estimation. — It was grown to be thought of no Importance how they were treated; and there was no Apprehension of their most national Resentments. — The new King, ignorant of the different Pretensions of his Kingdoms, naturally thought it most adviseable to be directed in his Conduct by the Councils of the *English*, as being visibly the most important and powerful Nation; and they took care to represent all Matters, with relation to *Ireland*, in such a Light, that hardly common Decency was preserved, with regard to that People; nor was there at that Time one Person of that Country admitted into any near Station about his Majesty, so that there was no possibility for the Crown to be informed of the Pretensions of that Part of its Subjects; or to receive any Idea of the Hardships they endured, which were constantly misrepresented, slighted, or ridiculed, and gradually (as it was believed) the Prince himself was brought to imbibe somewhat of the same Contempt for them, which those about him constantly expressed.

To complet this dismal State, the ancient Practice of confiding the Government of *Ireland*, to the Great Men of that Country, who were by Knowledge of its Condition, and by Attachment qualified for the Direction of it, became in a manner wholly laid aside. — All Places of any Credit, Profit or Trust, were bestowed upon *English* Men who had no Interest in that Kingdom, and consequently no Mercy or Compassion for it, who had no Knowledge either of its Rights or Circumstances, and were consequently incapable to conduct it well, if they had possessed either natural Abilities or Inclination to do it, the *first* of which they *often*, the *latter* they almost *ever* wanted. The Revenue was granted away in exorbitant Pensions to the Tools of Power in *England*, to the Ministers of Vice and Servitude, and in general to Persons in themselves so scandalous, that their Names were covered under those of others, the only Instance of Decency or Modesty observed in the Administration of their Affairs. — During the Rage of these Abuses, they were

were daily threatened with new Taxes; and it was represented, that they paid in no Proportion to the Contributions of the rest of his Majesty's Subjects; all which was dogmatically pronounced by those, who neither knew the Extent of that Kingdom, the Number of its Inhabitants, the Balance of its Trade, the Quantum of its Species, the Amount of its Revenues, or any one Circumstance, by which an Estimate of such a Nature might be framed. — When in truth at the same Time a terrible Distress was brought upon that Country by the Drain of its Specie into *England*, and such a Debt upon the State as they were unable to discharge, enforcing the Necessity of new Taxes upon the Meeting of every Parliament, which were as constantly found to be exceeded by the next. — Neither could this distracted People find any Remedy to this Grievance, or set any Limits to this Profusion, every Clause of Appropriation, being either evaded, or eluded, or affirmed to be repugnant to the pretended patrimonial Right of the Crown to the Revenues there. — Among others, provided for in this outrageous manner, was an infamous Projector, who in concert with certain Court Favourites, had laid a Scheme to deprive the Nation of all its real Specie, by a base Copper Coin, which Scheme was urged to very great Extremity, before it was dropped, and the Projector then dedamaged by a great Pension for his Life, out of the Revenues of that very Country he had attempted to destroy, as tho' it were to mock the Miseries of the People. — Another Profligate, the Captain of a Band of desperate Robbers who with black Faces, and in Disguise, in a formidable manner infested *England*, was for his Treachery to his Gang (who were by his Impeachment of them broken and dispersed) admitted into Holy Orders, and rewarded with a great Preferment in the Church of *Ireland*. That Nation was likewise obliged to maintain a great Army, under pretence of defending the Protestants against the Papists there, whose Differences were at the same Time artfully fomented. — And whenever any real Danger

ger

ger threatened, these Troops were withdrawn from thence to protect some other more favourite Dependency, nor was it thought sufficient to deprive them of their Security, but they were even forced to pay for their Transportation, and to encrease their Pay abroad. The *Papists* were openly disarmed, as Enemies to the State, and the *Protestants* were in effect reduced to the same Condition, by suffering the Militia to grow useless, and the Laws relating to it to determine. Regardless of the Security of that State, and intent to weaken all Opposition to their Measures, they considered not the Wounds they might themselves receive thro' the unguarded Sides of the other Country. ——— Knowing well, that publick Contempt is publick Weakness, they debased the Peerage there by new Creations of many *English* Men of low Birth, mean Fortunes, and despicable Characters, they filled the Bench of Bishops with *English* Clergy, unworthy of any, and often incapable of *English* Preferment. ——— They delivered up the Places of the Law to *English* Lawyers, ignorant of Law, of arbitrary Tempers, corrupt Principles, who without Reverence to the Oaths of their Offices, would enforce any Decrees, or execute any Orders that they should receive from *England*.

SUCH were the Judges *Gilbert*, *Pocklington*, and others, who were placed in these Stations in the beginning of that Reign. Matters being thus prepared, the Time was come to accomplish the Measure so long projected ——— The Lords in *England* now revived their Pretensions to the Judicature of that Kingdom; several Appeals were made from the Lords in *Ireland* to those in *England*, among the rest, one in which *Maurice Annesley*, and *Esther Sberlock*, were the Parties, the Cause had been already determined in *Ireland*, in favour of *Esther Sberlock*, who was thereupon possessed of the Estate, but the Lords in *England* set aside that Judgment, and made a Decree in favour of *Annesley*. ——— The Difficulty only remained how to enforce the Execution of it. But the Earl of *Sunderland*, a Man of great Art and determined Temper, then

then first Minister, had secured the Judges, who in defiance of the Constitution of that Kingdom, and of the Resolutions of the House of Lords, and in express Violation of their Oaths, betrayed their great Trust, and issued Orders to the Sheriffs to put the *English* Decree in Execution. The Sheriffs not daring to comply with this illegal and unprecedented Warrant, refused to obey, and were in consequence by the same Judges exorbitantly fined; whereupon the Lords in *Ireland*, taking this extravagant Proceeding into Consideration, after having debated the Matter with the greatest Solemnity came to several strong Resolutions in defence of their Rights and in Justification of the Sheriffs pronouncing the Judges betrayers of the King's Prerogative, and the undoubted ancient Priviledge of their House; after which they ordered the Judges into Custody. ——— But the *English* Minister, who had foreseen the Event; was prepared for it, and knowing that what had passed could not be justified by Precedent or Law, prepared a Bill in *England*, to declare the judicial Power of the *Irish* House of Lords of no Validity in *Ireland*.

It appears at first sight an extravagant Imagination, that the *King* of *England*, could ever have been brought to pass a Law, to break the Privilege of a Peerage, the Creature of the Crown itself; but we have shewn how ignorant he was kept with respect to that Kingdom: What is more extraordinary is, that it could ever be supposed the *Commons* of *England* should concur in such a Measure, which so manifestly tended to aggrandize the *English* Peerage, of which they are always jealous. ——— But several Circumstances prevailed upon them, and in the first place, the general Ardour of the Nation to reduce *Ireland* in every Instance to a clear and confessed Dependance on the *English* Legislature. ——— In the next place the great Influence of the Court in the House of Commons was alone sufficient to secure a Majority in any Instance to the Views of the Minister; and lastly, it was artfully insinuated, that whatever Power the Lords  
in



in *England* should acquire by a Declaration of the Invalidity of the Jurisdiction of the *Irish* House of Lords, it would be but *Temporary* to them and *permanent* to themselves; the Judicature being a Right, which they had always claimed, and had never formally yielded or allowed to the other House alone.

IN Consequence of this Management, as we have already said, a Bill was prepared, which afterwards passed into a Law, reciting, that the *Irish* were disposed to shake off their Dependance on the Crown of *England*; an Assertion more remarkably void of all Foundation at that Time, than in any other Period from its first Acquisition to that Hour, and warranted by nothing else but this Conclusion, that no Nation, so treated, could be otherwise inclined. From these Premises, they came to this Determination, that the Judicature of the Peers of *Ireland* should be declared invalid.

UPON this Occasion the Lord *Perceval* exerted himself, both in writing and speaking in publick and private, to the utmost of his Power; and, in Concurrency with twenty-one Peers of *Ireland*, then in *England*, petitioned the King to refuse his Consent to this unparalleled Attack upon the ancient and undoubted Rights of that Nation; — “ they set forth the ancient Title of the Peers and Parliament of *Ireland* “ to this Privilege, the Attacks that had been made “ upon them in former Times, and the Confirmation “ of them from Age to Age; ——— the Ill-convenience and Danger to private Property, in being “ called from the other Country, where many Customs, “ which affect the Laws, are different, and consequently “ little understood in *England*; — the Hazard of the “ Loss of private Deeds and Settlements in long Journeys and Sea Voyages at all Seasons of the Year; “ ——— the Prejudices against *Ireland* both private and “ publick, which, raging so highly in the Nation, might, “ some time or other, infect the *English* Peerage also; — “ the Ministerial Influence which might hereafter arise “ in that House, and which, if it should arise, must “ operate

“ operate most fatally with respect to that Country, as  
“ they were a Body without Controul or Check of any  
“ kind from that People, whose Property they were  
“ thus admitted to determine ;— the vast Expence of  
“ the Suits, and the Inability of the poorer Sort, to  
“ contend against the Rich , the Source of Oppression  
“ and Injustice that would thence be opened ;— they  
“ shewed likewise the Injury of such an Alteration, not  
“ warranted by any Desire of that Nation, not sancti-  
“ fied by any Shew of Justice, any Pretence of Ill-  
“ convenience, either private or publick, arising from  
“ the ancient Constitution ;— they urged the Diminu-  
“ tion of the King’s Prerogative, already too far im-  
“ parted to the *English* Parliament with respect to  
“ them ;— they modestly insinuated the fatal Mischiefs  
“ that might ensue from the constant and repeated At-  
“ tempts of late Years made upon their Liberties, and  
“ now upon their Properties.— Lastly, they disco-  
“ vered the Vanity of the Law itself, to attain the  
“ Point at which the *English* aimed, which was to make  
“ their new assumed Authority legal ; for, unless it were  
“ so before, nothing could give it *that Title*, or in many  
“ Cases, *that Effect*, but the Consent of *Ireland*.

YET notwithstanding these Endeavours, the Point was carried against them, the *English* being supported by the Circumstances we have mentioned, and, indeed, in some degree, assisted by that wretched Nation itself ;— for, if ever they shewed most eminently those Qualities with which they are commonly reproached, they did it upon this Occasion.— Absurdly considering this Attack as no Violation of the Constitution of their Country in general, the Commons afforded no Assistance to the Lords in Defence of this Privilege.— Pleased with the Vanity of being brought, as they imagined, by this means to a nearer Level with the Nobility, their Pride and Envy induced them to overlook the general Contempt derived upon their whole Nation, by their tame Submission.— If they had resented this Measure, as a National Blow upon their Liberties, if they had

exerted themselves as all other Nations would have done upon such an Occasion, or even as they themselves once did in the Affair of the Brass Money, it may be well doubted whether they might not have prevented the Success of this Project, so fatal to their Interest.——But the *English* Ministers were thoroughly confirmed in their Design, by the abject and contemptible Behaviour of the Commons there, of whom too many, in private Companies, expressed the Pleasure they took in the Abasement of the Peers.——This Folly and Baseness, too often shewn on many other publick Occasions by that People, have many complicated Causes.——But the original Cause of all the rest is, what should rather give them Title to Pity and Compassion, than expose them to Reflection or Contempt; it is neither incident to their Soil or Climate, to the Disposition of their Minds, nor to the Temper of their Bodies; it is not the Growth of any particular Region, it is the eternal Product of unhappy Government.——Nations enslaved and oppressed, where-ever situated, will become odious in their private Characters, contemptible in their gross Conception of Things) vicious in their Habits, arrogant in *private*, abject in *public* Life.——In Governments thus conducted, the Educations of Men are neglected, their Pursuits are Idleness and sensual Pleasures, because they find no Encouragement or Advancement from eminent Virtues, acquired Talents, or the Culture of the Understanding.——Where-ever these are nationally neglected, not only Ignorance, but Vice will nationally prevail, the Contempt which such a Conduct, and their other Miseries, draw down upon such a People, creates an *Insolence of Behaviour* to those *beneath* them, and a *mean Submission* to those *above* them; *the first* arising from endeavouring to force, through Fear, what they cannot attain through Dignity;——*the other* from the continual Dread of Power, which bearing heavy on them, inspires a Conduct practised at first, and in part, through Prudence, but rivetted at length, and universally, by Habit;——

Lefs

Less capable, by the Unimprovement of their Minds and Manners, to follow any Example of Virtue, the rude Nature of a People, under such a Circumstance, is found better able to copy the Vice and Immorality, the Luxury and the Corruption of their superior State, which they generally do with a savage Imitation, making up, in *the Excess*, what they cannot attain in *the Politeness* of the Original. Thus the *Laity* become either void of all Religion, or devoured by Superstition (Extremes, the Twin-offspring of Ignorance;) while the *Clergy*, negligent of their spiritual Concerns, are still more infected with spiritual Pride, and the Lust of temporal Authority, than even in other Countries. This is the true Portrait of *Hungary*, under the Tyranny of the House of *Austria*; of *America*, under *Spain*; of *Corfica*, under the *Genoeze*; and of all other States under an arbitrary, subordinate, and dependant Rule. How far it may be found that all these Circumstances concur with respect to the Country of which we speak, may best be answered by those who ascribe all the Consequences to them, and who ought to know the most of a miserable Condition; which, if it does exist, exists wholly, and is derived only from their own Conduct.—But, in part, we cannot avoid unhappily to discover something of this malign Effect of their unequal Government in their Behaviour upon the present Question.—They had, indeed, some specious Pretences for this Behaviour.—Their House of Lords was villified, as we have before observed, by an Accession of Peers; some mean in Character; others no way eminent in Fortune in either Kingdom; and not a few who had none at all in that Country, where they had been advanced to Honour.—The Bishops, of whom that House is also in part composed, were likewise generally preferred from the neighbour Country, distinguished for nothing but Partiality to the Nation from whence they came, and Servility to its Administration; to which may be added, that, by the disagreeable State of that Country, the greatest and the ablest of the Peers living out of it, the same Bishops,

by their Numbers, nearly ballanced the Temporal Lords who remained upon the Spot.——The major Part of these were kept under a certain Influence, which took them from the Direction of themselves, and very near as many, to such a degree, infected by the ill Habits of the Publick, farther aggravated by a sort of Impunity from their Titles, that they studied rather how to shew their Pre-eminence in the State, as Ringleaders of a low Debauchery and dissolute Extravagance, than as Protectors of the Liberties and Properties of the Nation. A little Remnant there was of excellent Men, who did Honour even to their own Honours; but they were much too few to stemn the spiritual Power, or to reform the rest.

THESE Circumstances undoubtedly made it uneasy to that Country, that the Peerage there should enjoy the absolute Decision of judicial Matters. And these were the Pretences of the pusillanimous and pitiful Conduct of the Commons upon this Occasion; but these were not the real Motives of it.——In Truth, if their Condition was bad, because their own Peerage wanted Men of Knowledge to sit in Judgment, could it be supposed that a Foreign Judicature would be better acquainted with their Laws and Customs.——If they dreaded the Decrees of their own Legislature, because they were thought dependant on the Administration of another Country, did they do wisely to submit every thing to a Foreign Legislature, no less dependant, in the Opinion of that Time, on the same Authority, and naturally void of those Incentives to Remorse, which must, in some degree, be found in their domestic Courts. In fine, could any Man of Sense resign for ever the Advantages of an independant Constitution, in an Article of such Importance, when whatever might be urged in discredit of their own Judicature, as to its Ignorance, Corruption, or the Non-attendance of its Members, was but a temporary Evil, which Time might remedy, and no Measure more likely to do it than the Continuance of this Privilege, and when, at the same time, whatever might be argued in favour of the Foreign Judicature

to which they submitted, as to its Justice, Integrity, and Incorruption (were there nothing dubious, as to the present Existence of those Virtues, nothing suspicious as to their declining State) was at best but temporary too?—These therefore were fallacious Reasonings, to colour the real Principle.—Many of the Commons of that Kingdom were in reality new Men, the late Descendants of the Subalterns, or common Soldiers of *Cromwell's* Army, or the newer Offspring of Clerks in Offices, who, in the former distracted Times, and in the loose Government of the subsequent Age, had suddenly risen to considerable Fortunes; *the one* hereditarily, embittered to these Distinctions, as Appendages of Monarchy; the other (and both) corroded by the Envy of superior Families.—Thus Ignorance and Pusillanimity, Republicanism and Envy, operated upon the Majority of the Commons, whilst the Divisions *in Religion*, Popish, Presbyterian, Protestant, and another Sect, newly set up a kind of Apes, who mimicked the Free-thinkers of other Countries.—*In Parties*, Commonwealth, Tory, Whig, and anarchick *in Interests*; ancient *Irish*, modern *Irish*, and new *English*, confounded and kept under the rational Minority; inasmuch that, as it usually happens, an Extravagance of Disunion produced an Union in this Instance, which it has for long Time done, and will probably do for Ages yet to come; that is to say, a general Agreement to endure submissively the greatest Grievances that can be laid upon them, and from which that Nation cannot, for many future Generations, expect to be relieved, but by the Sagacity of the *English*, who may probably be induced, at one time or other, for their own Security and Advantage, to comprehend that People under one common, just and equal Constitution.—But here we shall stop in this Digression, which (though not wholly foreign to this Work, or to the Method which we have chosen to pursue in it, to relieve the natural Dryness to which all private Histories are subject) has been carried to a greater Length, as being a Matter little under-

understood, and never before impartially considered, and which may yet have greater Consequences than are commonly expected from it.

WE shall therefore only add our earnest Wishes, that Justice and good Policy may at length so far prevail, as, that if it be found convenient to the Interest of this Nation, to dissolve the ancient Government of that Kingdom; the View may no more be followed in a Way of Violence, Prejudice, and Passion; but that, by a strict and equal Treaty, that Nation may be brought to resign their Privileges by their own Act, and be admitted and incorporated with the Legislature of this Kingdom; till when, it is obvious to every thinking Man, that every Member of that People will consider himself no better than a Slave, nor the *English* better than a Race of Tyrants, whose Power, as it seems to them a cruel and a flagrant Usurpation, will be no longer obeyed than the Prosperity of *England* shall enable them to enforce it.—— Strange Infatuation in a People so generous, so wise and free! Strange Evidence, how the Lust of Power can pervert the Judgment, and prevent the Sense of the Dangers that have, and may again proceed from this imprudent Conduct! Strange Instance of the Weakness of human Nature, and of its Partiality to itself! Since we can so generally condemn the Folly of other Nations in the same Proceeding, and so much remark its Consequences in the Revolutions of many other States, without reflecting one Moment upon our own Measures! But let us consider how the *Dutch* became dismembered from the once most potent Monarchy of the World; and let us reflect, what Expectations have been built in the Politicks of these present Times, from the very same Conduct in *Spain* with respect to the *Crioles*, or *Spanish* Natives in *America*: To whom in Condition, Treatment, and Resentment, no People upon Earth, but this of whom we speak, can be compared.

In the same Year, the fatal Project of the *South-Sea* Scheme took Place, in which the Lord *Perceval* lost

a very great Sum of Money.—But his former Oeconomy, and the Favour of Providence, in a very critical and great Increase of his Fortune afterwards, by the Expiration of those long Leases, which the Extravagance of his Ancestors had obliged them let at half the Value of the whole Estate, preserved him from being long sensible of any Ill-convenience from this Calamity, and even greatly enlarged his Circumstances under a Loss sufficient to have ruined many other Houses.—By which Instance we may discover, in a remarkable manner, the Wisdom of the Supreme Power, in the Disposition even of our Misfortunes to our Advantage. The Profusion of this Family in former Times (after a Space of fifty Years) manifestly now appearing to be the Means of its Preservation in the present: For, had the Estate of this House stood at its Height during this Accident, there is no doubt but its Engagements had been in a high Proportion greater in that destructive Business, and its Losses consequently more severe, which would have happened at a Juncture when the Means of its Supply had not existed.

\* In *December*, 1722 (as we observed before) the King conferred the Dignity of a Viscount upon this Nobleman, by the Stile of Viscount *Perceval* of *Kanturk*, a Town of that Name belonging to this House, together with an annual Fee of twenty Marks, to be paid by the Treasurer, or Receiver General of *Ireland*, out of his Majesty's Exchequer there.

KING *GEORGE* the First dying in *July*, 1727, and a new Parliament being called, his Lordship was elected a Member of it for the Borough of *Harwich*, in *Essex*, without Opposition, upon the sixteenth of *August* following; and some time after †, upon the Death of the Earl of *Orford*, was appointed Recorder of the same Borough.

ABOUT the time of his Election, an epidemical Fever then raging, his Lordship and his Lady, and seventeen of his Domesticks, were seized together with it, and for many Years he laboured under frequent Attacks of the same Distemper.

DURING

\* Ex Autograph. penes Com. Egmont.

† June 1728.



DURING this Parliament, his Lordship attended the Duty of that Station with unwearied Diligence, but in a different manner from many, who, in these degenerated Times, have been employed in that great Trust: He resolved never to accept of any Employment of Profit;— he solicited no Preferment; he was indifferent to any Reputation, but what was the obstinate and irresistible Result of Virtue.—For this Reason, he attached himself to no Party, and frequently differed from all.—His Integrity was so well known, that when he quitted *the one*, he was not reproached with *Servility*; when he left *the other*, he was not accused of *Faction* or *Resentment*.—He was sincere in his Attachment to the Prince upon the Throne, and to his Family; he endeavoured to support the Constitution, and the Liberties of the People.—In Business of public Regulations, and in promoting beneficial Laws for the Relief of the Poor, and for the Peace of the Society (Matters too much neglected in an Age when private Ambition is wholly occupied to work its own Advantage, by a sole Attention to Points of Politicks, of more *eclat*, though not of greater Use) he was indefatigable.—This Application he followed often in an ill Condition of Health, and exposed himself to the greatest Danger of Infection, by a long and intricate Enquiry into the Abuses of the Prisons, and Thousands owe their present Existence to the pious Compassion of this Nobleman, and of a small Committee, his Companions in that Enquiry. Thus he consumed that Period of Time, which is by the present Laws allotted to the Duration of one Parliament.—But then he found that neither his Strength nor the Temper of the Times could permit him to act in another as he had done in this; he therefore determined to resign his Seat, which he destined for *his Son*, who was deprived of it by Ministerial Management and Artifice.

BEING thus retired into a more private Situation, he thought it still unworthy of him to remain wholly unactive, while he could be in any degree useful to Mankind.—— Observing, by the Decay of a beneficial

ficial Commerce; arising from the Burthen of Taxes, and from the wretched Police of this Country, (never likely to be reformed,) that Multitudes, incapable of finding Business at home, might yet be serviceable to their Mother Country abroad, in Conjunction with a few others of a disinterested Spirit; such as might do Honour to any State in the purest Times of Government, he applied to the Crown for the Government of a Tract of Country in *America*, to the Southward of *Carolina*, then uninhabited, (unless by *Indians*) and since called *Georgia*: — Which Country they proposed to People, with a Remnant of the Unhappy of this Nation, and the oppressed and persecuted Protestants in other Parts of *Europe*, by the Assistance of private Contributions and Parliamentary Aids.

BUT before his Lordship would engage in this Undertaking, he obtained a *Clause* in the *Charter* of this Establishment, *That no Person employed in this great Trust, should ever acquire to themselves, or to their Families, in any manner whatsoever, directly, or indirectly, any Lands or Revenues in that Province*, in order, if possible, to prevent the malicious Insinuations which might be thrown upon their Endeavours, and which might divert those Charities upon which they much depended in the Prosecution of this great Design.

THE Charter was granted upon the ninth of *June*, 1732, with the Clause before-mentioned, and others equally prudent; among which one was, *That no one Person should ever possess more than five hundred Acres of Land in that Country*, which entirely cut off all Prospect of Advantage from those, whose private Views might have tempted them to weaken the general Interest of the whole, by engrossing great Portions of the Province to themselves; a Mischief extremely injurious to all the other Colonies. — By this Charter his Lordship was appointed first President of that Government.

A PECULIAR Fatality seems to have attended the Prosecution of all *Agrarian* Laws; and the Reason is plain, that they are rarely attempted till the Disease,

## 434 *A Genealogical History*

proceeding from a want of them, is arisen to too great a Height to admit the Remedy.—— In ancient History, they are found often to have produced the Ruin of their Projectors; and in this of our own Time, though it has not brought down the same terrible Effects upon its Authors, yet the Reception it has met with, may sufficiently evince, that its Consequences would have been as *violent*, if the Regulation had been as *general*:—— Yet, though promulged in so small a District, and at such a Distance from the Seat of Government, it has afforded a melancholy Proof of the Corruption of this Nation.—— This excellent Ordinance, calculated to so good an End, designed as the only Means to prevent the Diffipation of the Inhabitants, projected with great Sagacity, to avoid the Redundancy of Negroes, a hazardous Race of Slaves, who thro' contrary Measures, already threaten by their vast Numbers the Subversion of many other of our Colonies, invented as the only certain Method to prevent the growth of Luxury, which never fails to devour those States in which Property is very unequally divided. —— This excellent Regulation raised a Clamour and Opposition to this noble Design, under which it has heavily laboured, and by which it has well nigh been overthrown, creating so much Malice to the Directors of it, that nothing but an unparalleled Resolution to support the real Interest of their Country, could have induced them to submit to so great an Odium.

THIS malicious Spirit arising from the Disappointment of mercenary Views was supported by many other Circumstances, and farther diffused. —— The Envy of Mankind fell heavy upon this select few, who at a great private Expence, without any Salaries, Means of Profit, or Possibility of Advantage, had given their constant Attendance, Time, and Labour, to the Publick. — This odious Principle would unwillingly admit Belief that so much Virtue could be found, and that no private Emolument was to be derived from it. — The general Depravity of the Times gave Strength to the  
 Insinuations

Insinuations of these Men, and forced some Way upon the Publick who talk too often upon Matters of this kind without due Information.— The same Depravity, where it could not raise Suspicion, promoted Mirth and Contempt at their Endeavours, as if disinterested Undertakings and Labours, unrewarded and unthankfully received, however useful to the Publick, were below the Care of Men of Sense, and not to be supported by Men of Spirit, confining Wisdom to Self-Interest and Spirit to false Honour and a vain Applause. — The very Members of the Legislature itself (such was the melancholy State of our Affairs) tho' incapable themselves to be deceived, having annually laid before them a critical Account of all the Disbursements of this Government; too many of them concurred in basely suffering the Belief of Imposition, and a Contempt of this Affair. — The two prevailing Parties into which they were divided, each endeavouring to drive the Gentlemen concerned in it to relinquish their Trust. — The *one* desiring the Management of it themselves to encrease their Influence by new Places and Employments in that Government, which annexed to large Salaries, they might bestow on their Adherents. The *other* suspecting that the Gentlemen in the Direction of it, were too far dependant upon the ministerial Power, tho' not from any private Interest from the necessary Support and Assistance of their Design. — All this was farther aggravated by the Representations of the neighbouring Colonies, jealous of their Advancement in a common Commerce, and some in particular piqued by certain Regulations in the Government of this which trenched as they thought upon the Jurisdiction of their own Provinces; — but above all this generous Design was most thwarted for several Years by the Representations of the *Spanish* Minister at this Court, who so strenuously insisted in his Master's Name against this Settlement from which he apprehended very dangerous Consequences to his *American* Dominions, that the Administration here possessed by a fatal Timidity, or actuated by other

K k k 2 .

Motives,

Motives, which future Time must open to us, threw many Difficulties in the way of the Conductors of this Colony, and were much suspected (whether justly or unjustly we shall not pretend to say) of retarding its Success that the Matter might appear of slight Importance, and consequently be with less Reproach to them, abandoned or given up to *Spain* in some future Treaty of Accommodation with that Court, if the ill State of their Affairs should at any time reduce them to the necessity of that Measure.

THE greater these Obstacles, and the more ungrateful this Undertaking proved, the more glorious it is in this Nobleman; and those few (for several had not sufficient Resolution) who persevered in it.—Though it lay not in their Charge, and belonged to the Province of the Commissioners of Trade, and, indeed, to the Ministers themselves, they took upon them what the others either neglected, had not Leisure, or were not able to perform, and knowingly refuted the fallacious Representations of the *Spanish* Court, nobly defending the Rights of their own Country. ——— By this unthankful Office, and by a wonderful Steadiness in their Duty, they enabled, (or, as some insinuate) they forced the Ministry to support these Rights, and made it appear, in spite of all the Endeavours used to deceive the Public, a Matter of so much national Concern, that it was no longer in their Power (if they had it in their View) to render this Colony a Sacrifice to pacific Measures; though their Enemies accuse them of having already proceeded so far in it, as by an unparalleled Stipulation\*, to have agreed with the Court we have mentioned, to erect no Fortifications for its Defence; which was, in other Words, to leave it exposed to their Attempts, whenever they should please to make themselves Masters of it. They despised the malicious and ignorant Misrepresentations of their Conduct, and of the Prudence of their Scheme, they left it to Time to *destroy* the *one*, and to *prove* the *other*.  
 ———Sup-

---

\* See the Treaty of Convention concluded with Spain.

of the House of YVERY, &c. 437

— Supported by the same uncommon Generosity which induced them first to take the arduous Work upon them, they bear the Burthen of it still, and, as it is said of *Fabius*, *Non ponebant Rumores ante Salutem*, disdaining to suffer vulgar Prejudices and Clamour to subdue their Resolution to effect a Barrier to the *English* Empire in *America*, upon which materially depends the Safety and Preservation of that Country, which at present by its Commerce, almost alone, and in so high a Degree, supports the Grandeur and the Power of *Great-Bri-tain*.

WE have the longer insisted upon this Particular, because nothing can better discover the Virtue of this Nobleman, than his Conduct in this Business; — for *Characters* are better learned from *Facts* than *Panegyric*. — And for a farther Reason that future Ages (if happily this Work should last so long) may be informed of what we have too much Reason to fear they will not from any other Accounts discover, that there lived a Man in these Times, in a Station so eminent, and of so large a Fortune, who underwent so great a Labour, and submitted to so much Reflection, for the public Good.

HIS Majesty having long experienced the Fidelity and Attachment of this Lord to his Person and Government, and being naturally pleased to confer Favours upon real Merit, an Object seldom found within the Reach of a Prince's Eye, thought proper in the following Year, *viz.* upon the fifth of *August*, 1733, to advance him farther in the Peerage, by the Title of Earl of *Egmont*, an ancient Seat of this Family, in the County of *Corke*, in *Ireland*; and the Preamble that follows expresses handsomely some of the Inducements to this Promotion :

“ OUR trusty and well-beloved Cousin and Coun-  
“ sellor, *John* Lord *Perceval*, Viscount *Perceval* of  
“ *Kanturk*, Baron *Perceval* of *Burton*, Baronet, and  
“ one of our most honourable Privy-Council, &c.  
“ having already added, in an earlier Time of Life,  
“ by

438 *A Genealogical History*

“ by his own personal Virtue and Merit, to the Lustre  
 “ and Dignity of his Noble Family, our late Royal  
 “ Father, of glorious Memory, in due Consideration  
 “ thereof, did then distinguish and reward him, by  
 “ conferring new Honours and Titles upon him.—  
 “ But as he has still continued to tread in the same  
 “ honourable Path, by consulting the Advantage of  
 “ the whole Race of Men, with the same Zeal and  
 “ Application which others exercise in the Pursuit of  
 “ their own private Interests; as he has never swerved  
 “ from his Duty by the Allurement of Profit, nor  
 “ ever been drawn aside by the Bait of Ambition; as  
 “ he has appeared rather to live for others than for  
 “ himself: avoiding all Distinction of Parties, solely  
 “ attached to the public Welfare, and wholly em-  
 “ ployed to promote true Piety, to relieve the Necessi-  
 “ ties of the most indigent, and to encourage the  
 “ Endeavours of the most industrious part of Man-  
 “ kind; for all which noble Qualities, numbers of  
 “ our unhappy Subjects, both in this and the new  
 “ World, have reaped abundant Benefit.— And  
 “ lastly, as he has so justly tempered his Love and  
 “ Affection for his Country, with an Attachment and  
 “ true Regard to his Prince. From all these Circum-  
 “ stances he may truly seem to deserve still farther  
 “ Honours, and therefore, that Titles may not be  
 “ wanting to such apparent Worth, we have called  
 “ the said *John* Lord Viscount *Perceval* among the  
 “ Earls of our Kingdom of *Ireland*, by the Name,  
 “ Stile and Title of Earl of *Egmont*.”

ABOUT the end of this Year 1733, the Marriage of the Princess-Royal with the Prince of *Orange* was concluded; and great Preparations being made for these Nuptials, it was discovered that the Peers of *Ireland* were intended to be left out of this Ceremonial, and to be denied the Place and Rank which they had ever held in all public Proceffions. — One Exception indeed there is, in the case of Coronations, at which they never attended, for this Reason; that

that before the Reign of *Henry* the Eighth, the Kings of *England* never bore the Title of Kings of *Ireland*, and were consequently never crowned in that Capacity; and immediately after that Title was conferred upon that Nation, the *Irish* themselves passed a Law, that whoever should be crowned as King of *England*, should be *ipso facto* deemed also King of *Ireland*: so that the Ceremony of the Coronation of our Kings formerly was not, nor is it now, the Act of that Kingdom.

\* THE King's Prerogative in creating, conferring and limiting all Honours, and in settling Precedency, from the Conquest was never doubted. — The Place of *Irish* Peers in *England* had been confirmed to them by a continued Series of Precedents, from the Reign of King *John* till the Time of which we speak, including a Space of full five hundred Years. — It was settled in this manner, that they should have Precedency in *England* next after the *English* Peers of their own Rank, and before all *English* Peers of inferior Quality. On the other hand, in *Ireland* the Rule was reverted, and the *English* Peers had the same Place in that Country, below the *Irish* in the same Degrees. — But about the beginning of the last Century, King *James* the First having greatly multiplied the Peerage in general, and having brought over with him a great number of *Scottish* Lords, whose Fortunes very ill supported the Splendor of their Titles, in this rich and expensive Nation, it began to appear a great Grievance to the old Nobility of *England*, thus to be out-numbered by a foreign Nobility, so circumstanced as we have shewn, and to whom, upon the Example of *Ireland*, the same Pre-eminence was allowed as to themselves. — Before this the *Irish* Peerage had given no Offence. — They were few, and of these but a small Portion appeared in *England*, being taken up in the Defence of their Estates on that Side, till the then quiet Condition of their  
their

---

\* See the Question of the Precedency of the Peers of Ireland in Ireland, fairly stated, in a Letter to an English Lord, by a Nobleman of the other Kingdom. Printed at Dublin, 1739.



their Country permitted them, without any Inconvenience, more generally to pass their Time about the Court, and the Person of the Prince.—— They were Men very eminent in Family, and equal in Fortune to the Nobility of any Country whatsoever, descended for the most part from the same individual Houses with the *English* Nobility themselves, whose younger Children had advanced their Fortunes in the other Kingdom in the *Irish* Wars. —— These Reasons, though gradually impaired by the Extinction of the great Families in *England*, with whom they claimed Relation, and weakened by the new Creations of Nobility in both Nations under *James* the First, were yet undoubtedly of Force enough to have preserved the Peerage of *Ireland* from any Murmurs of the *English*; if they had stood alone. —— But the Multitude of the *Scotch* Nobility who came in with that Prince, pretending, as we before observed, to the same Distinction, and being supported in it by the King their Countryman; the *Irish* thus blended with the *Scotch*, could be no longer separated or distinguished from them in the Discontent arising from this Latitudinarian Extension of Honour. —— Nay, it naturally followed by insensible Degrees, that the Odium fell at last more heavy even upon the *Irish* than upon the *Scotch*. —— The latter being better supported by that Prince and his Descendants, who exerted themselves remarkably, from a national Bias, to rescue their own Countrymen from Contempt, by vast Preferments, great Alliances, and *English* Titles, the first and highest of which they conferred upon them. —— Thus the Accession of *Scotland* laid the Foundation of the Ruin of the *Irish* Peerage, which the Union of *Scotland* has well nigh perfected. And in a Course of Years the *English*, supported by their Weight in the Legislature, the *Scotch* by the Favour of the Crown, and the *Irish* only by their Estates, the last inevitably fell the lowest in the Estimation of the Public; which Evil, in Proportion as it grew, was gradually ripened by the meaner Additions frequently made to that Body.

NOTWITHSTANDING this, and other political Causes of Odium, which partly sprung from the bloody Rebellions in *Ireland*, in which every Family almost in *England* have lost either a Brother, Son, or near Relation; and the Declension of Property into mean Hands in that Kingdom, by the many Forfeitures; the Kings of *England* steadily maintained the *Irish* and *Scotish* Nobility in this Community of Privilege here spoken of, though attacked by the House of Lords in *England* in 1621, the eighteenth of *James* the First; in 1638, the third of *Charles* the First; and in 1667, the nineteenth of *Charles* the Second.

THE Crown had ever expressed so much Repentment at this Invasion of the Prerogative, and the Possession had been so strongly confirmed, that no new Attempt was made upon either Nation, till upon Occasion of this Ceremony, at the Marriage of the Princess-Royal. — When the *Scotch* having settled this Point with respect to themselves, by the late Union, — The *Irish* Peerage stood, without any Ally, to bear the Brunt of this Attack alone.

AND now the Opportunity seemed fair to the *English* Peers to carry this Point; all things having concurred to reduce the *Irish* Peerage to the lowest State that it ever was, or can be in, and by a Policy, never enough to be admired, there was not so much as one Peer of that Kingdom admitted into the Council of *England*, though it assumes no small Power and Direction in the Affairs of that Kingdom, and is actually by an *Irish* Act, in some Measure admitted to be a Member of that Legislature\*. — Some *English* Peers, who had not well weighed the Justice, or Importance of the Matter, seized this convenient Juncture to settle the Ceremonial upon this Occasion,  
with

---

\* Poyning's Law, which requires their Consent to every Irish Act, in Concurrence with the King's.

with an Exclusion of the Peers of *Ireland*; neither advising with the Heralds, nor directing themselves by Precedents, presuming upon their Access to his Majesty, and the Impossibility he was under to receive a timely Information from another Quarter.

THIS Business was carried on with so much Secrecy, that every thing was determined and ordered, before the Peers of *Ireland* then in *England* had any Intimation that this Disgrace was intended to be offered to them.——But as soon as it was known, they assembled, and having, with as much Accuracy as the Shortness of the Time would admit, drawn up a short State of their Pretensions, they elected the Earl of *Egmont* to present a Petition to the King, with a Schedule of Precedents annexed, to entreat his Majesty's Protection, and to acquaint him with their Rights\*.

HIS Majesty received this Nobleman in that gracious Manner which he had ever been accustomed to do upon all Occasions, and was pleased to answer, that *He would consider of it, and do what he could do in it.*

BUT the Preparations for this Ceremony, which were very great, and the Order of it, were too far settled to admit of any Change at that Time, without much Inconvenience.——Though the Justice of his Majesty has since restored the Peerage of *Ireland* to their Rights, which they have enjoyed upon every subsequent Occasion.

AND accordingly, at the Funeral of her late Majesty Queen *Caroline*, on the twentieth of *November*, 1737,——his Lordship had his Rank as an Earl in that Procession, taking Place together with the *Irish* Earls of *Orrery* and *Arran*, (also Barons of *England*) immediately after the *English* Earls, and before the *English* Viscounts and Barons. The Lord *Coot* (likewise

---

\* See a Book printed A. D. 1730, entitled, *The Question of the Precedency of the Peers of Ireland in England.* — Where this Argument is fully handled, and the Right of the *Irish* Peers incontestably proved.

wife) eldest Son to the *Irish* Earl of *Bellomonte*, the Lord Viscount *Castlemaine*, eldest Son to the Earl of *Tilney*, and the Lord Viscount *Perceval*, eldest Son to the Earl of *Egmont*, having Place with the eldest Sons of the *English* Earls, before the *English* Barons.

AND again, upon the Marriage of the Princess *Mary* with the Prince of *Hesse*, *May*, 1740, he had the same Place upon that Occasion, together with the *Irish* Earls of *Tilney* and *Clanrickard*.

THERE is no doubt but that his Lordship's Endeavours in this Business were extremely instrumental to the Preservation of this Privilege; and that the whole Nobility of that Kingdom, both upon this and former Occasions, were greatly indebted to him, and the more because he always exerted himself on such Occasions, without the Leaven of private Vanity, which attends the Generality of Men. He thought that a Loss of this Privilege would create a Contempt for the whole Body of the Peerage, both in Matters of Preferment and Alliance, very injurious to them; and he thought it consequently his Duty, as a Member of that Body, to prevent it if he could. — He considered Titles with the same Moderation that he exercised in all other Circumstances of Life; he was very little solicitous about them on any Condition, but he despised them when acquired by unworthy Means. — Of both he gave sufficient Proof, two of those conferred upon him having been bestowed without his own Application, and the Offer of an *English* Peerage having been three times made him, and refused. — The first in the Reign of the late Queen, because the tacit Conditions of it were repugnant to his Principles and Conscience; the rest as the Price of Money, which he rejected with Disdain, and as an Insult to the Merit of the Person to whom they were offered on such a Footing.

THE same Obligation that whole Nation has to him, whose Interests he has steadily espoused from the beginning of his Life, though less induced to it by

private Considerations, than most who bear any Relation to that Kingdom.

MOST others of his Rank in that Country, having either their first Original, their Alliances, or their Interests wholly on that Side; might naturally exert themselves, to maintain the Dignity of that Country, with which their Fame and Fortunes must wholly fall together.—Whereas this Nobleman was firmly tied by the Splendor and Antiquity of his Extraction on this Side to the *English* Interest, and by the Alliances of his Family, which had been (excepting in one Instance) ever here; as also by his Habits, Education, and Acquaintance, and by no inconsiderable Estate in this Kingdom also, out of which himself and all his Progenitors, together added, had never passed in the other full five and twenty Years.

THE Publick, and his private Family, being both still happy in his Existence with them, we shall descend no farther into his Character.—The Description of those Virtues, which, as a Parent, as a Husband, and as a Master, endear him to all who depend upon him, may be better observed when a future Fate (which all who know him wish to be removed to the utmost Boundary of human Life) shall admit the Opportunity of collecting in one Sum the Worth of this excellent Man, and when Envy shall have no Interest to resist the Force of an Example of Virtue, hardly paralleled in this Age.

HIS Lordship married, as we have before observed, upon the twentieth of *June*, 1710, *Katherine*, eldest Daughter of Sir *Philip Parker a Morley* of *Erwarton*, in the County of *Suffolk*, Baronet, ——— of that Name.

\* CONCERNING the Original of this Noble Family, we cannot acquire any certain Information before the  
Reign

---

\* See the Account of this Family in the new Edition of the Books of the Baronetage, ——— where the Authorities are distinctly quoted.

Reign of King *Edward* the Fourth, Sir *William Parker*, who lived in that Reign, being the first of whom we have any positive Evidence.—But, without all doubt, it was eminent before ; for the same Sir *William Parker* being then twenty-one Years old, and consequently too young to have raised himself from a low Station by personal Merit to such a Pretension) was married in 1475 to *Alice Luwel*, Daughter of *William*, Sister, and at length Heir of *Henry Luwel*, Lord *Morley*, one of the greatest Families of that Age ; which *Henry* Lord *Morley*, her Brother (by Marriage with *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *John de la Pole*, Duke of *Suffolk*) was Nephew to King *Edward* the Fourth, and to King *Richard* the Third, and Cousin German to King *Henry* the Eighth ; which *Elizabeth* was so near the Crown, that her eldest Brother was declared Heir apparent to it by King *Richard* the Third.

THIS Sir *William Parker*, in the twenty-second of *Edward* the Fourth, 1482, attended *Richard* Duke of *Gloucester* to the Wars of *Scotland* ; and having entered *Edinburgh* with him, was, for his Valour and Conduct in that Expedition, there Knighted by that Prince upon St. *James's* Eve that Year.

THE said Duke of *Gloucester* having soon after attained the Crown, which he bore under the Title of *Richard* the Third,—this Sir *William Parker* was much in his Favour, and was made a Privy-Counsellor and Standard-Bearer to that Prince ;—but upon the Accession of King *Henry* the Seventh, he fell into Disgrace, and was imprisoned for his Engagements under the House of *York* ; in which Condition, in all Probability, he lay during the rest of his Life, of which he was deprived by violent Means in the second of *Henry* the Eighth, 1510, as his Epitaph in the Church of *Hallingbury-Morley* in *Essex*, declares in these Words :

## 446 *A Genealogical History*

IN the fifth of *Charles* the First §§, upon the fourth of *September*, 1630, he presented *William Wale* to the Church of *Weston-Gordein*.

EIGHT Years afterwards, viz. in the twelfth of the same Reign, 1638\*, he is returned into the Dutchy Court of *Lancaster*, to have held the Manor of *Weston-Gordein*, and *Weston-Capnor*, by the Service of half of one Knight's Fee, as Parcel of the King's Honour of *Hereford* and *Trowbridge*.

THIS *James Perceval* was cotemporary with Sir *Philip Perceval*, chief of that Branch of this Family settled in *Ireland*, and direct Ancestor to the present Earl of *Egmont*, who was then a Man of great Reputation, both on account of his Abilities and Fortune. The Relation which existed between them, though at a great Distance, was of great Service to him, for Sir *Philip* was a steady Friend †, and particularly attached to his Family; and the great Superiority both of his Understanding and Estate, gave him a sort of absolute Authority over this Branch of this House, though elder than his own, which he exercised greatly to the Advantage of it, though he was not able to prevent that Period, which Nature some time after put to it, by the Death of *Thomas Perceval*, the last Lord of *Weston-Gordein*, without male Issue.

THE noble Collection of Family Letters, and other curious Papers relating to this House, in the Possession of the Earl of *Egmont*, give continual Proofs of the Pains which that worthy Man Sir *Philip Perceval* submitted to for the Service of this Relation.—This *James Perceval* had involved himself into great Debts, which falling upon him when his Line began to feel the Effects of the Extravagance of several preceding Generations, were very heavy on him, and had proved absolutely fatal, without the generous Assistance of Sir *Philip*, who supplied

§§ Regist. Bathon. & Wellen, Curle, fol. 3.

\* In Officio Ducat. Lancast.

† Ex Chartis Familie.

supplied him with great Sums of Money, which were furnished at a time, when himself might have made a vast Advantage of them, by adding, at a very easy Rate, to the great Purchases he made in *Ireland*.

BUT his Credit was as beneficial to his Relation as his Purse; for this *James* having married his eldest Daughter *Catherine*, to Mr. *Trenchard* of *Cuttridge*, (as we have shewn before) and having encumbered his Affairs exceedingly, not only by his Extravagance, but by the Portions he had given with his other Daughters, found himself incapable to furnish readily the Fortune, which so good a Match for this Daughter had tempted him to offer, so that he entered into Articles\* to pay two thousand Pounds, as part of it, to Mr. *Trenchard*, by certain Payments, at different times, and at some Years distant.

THE Civil War breaking out soon after, in that Confusion no Money was to be had, but on Conditions very exorbitant; and Mr. *Trenchard* ungenerously making his Demand as soon as it became due, (though in that distracted Time) and pressing in a merciless manner for it, it appears † manifestly, by the Letters before-mentioned, that a total Ruin must have fallen upon that Line, if Sir *Philip Perceval* had not taken upon himself the Management of this Affair. In the course of which, there are very extraordinary Marks of his great Interest, in the Apprehensions of the Family of *Trenchard* to contend with him; and farther of his Generosity, in assisting his Relation with Money at such a Conjuncture, when, notwithstanding all his great Estate, he was reduced to a Condition, for a Time, not very far from great Ill-conveniency of the same kind himself. One of the Conditions upon which this Agreement was at length effected, was, (as we have heard) that Mr. *Trenchard* should accept the Patronage of the Church of *Exford* (so often mentioned in the preceding Papers) in part of Payment.

THESE

---

\* Ex Chartis Familiae.

† Ibid.



*Epitaphium Gulielmi Parkar præclari Equitis aurati  
Morlei Domino.*

*En qui secunda procedis Mente, parumper  
Hospes siste Gradum, verbaque pauca Lege  
Hic jaceo ut cernis Gulielmus, nomine Parkar  
Eques præclaris Nobilitatus Avis  
Dum vixi, vixi multis precharus amicis  
Vi tamen heu perii ! quantum inimicitie  
Conquerar an taceam, mecumque ut luserit olim  
Fortuna, instabili dum stetit illa Rota ?  
Nil querar O Hospes : pateant mihi limina Cæli  
Accedant Votis, fac tua Vota precor.*

*Vixit Ann. 56 ob. Anno 1510 Patri benemerenti gratissimus filius Henricus Parkar Morlei Dominus posuit.*

It appears by this Inscription that he bore the Title of Lord *Morley*, to which Barony his Wife succeeded, by the Death of her Brother *Henry*, who was killed at *Dixmuyd* in *Flanders*, the fourth of *Henry* the Seventh, 1489 : but by Reason of his Confinement, he had never Summons to Parliament.

*ALICE* Lady *Morley* surviving, was married again to Sir *Edward Howard*, Admiral of *England*, and second Son to the Duke of *Norfolk*, with whom she lived but a short Time, and had no Issue by him, for he was killed before *Brest* in *Brittany*, in the fourth of *Henry* the Eighth, 1513 ; and she herself dying in 1518, in the sixtieth Year of her Age, left her Body to be buried in the Parish Church of *Hengham* in *Norfolk*, but it was afterwards removed by her Son to *Halingbury-Morley*, in *Essex*, where the Inscription over her Monument still remains, which is recited at length, together with a farther Account of her, in the sixteenth Chapter of the fourth Book of this Work.

THIS Lady was one of the greatest and noblest Heiresses of that Age, for she brought with her not

only the Rights of Blood and Arms of her own great House of *Lovel*, and those of the Heireffes of that Family, viz. *Sydenham*, the Barons *Burnell*, the Barons *Holland* and *Zouche*; the Sovereign Counts of *Brittany*, *Roban*, *Beumes*; *Quincy* Earl of *Winchester*, *Belomont* Earl of *Mellent* and *Leicester*; the Barons *Grentmesnil*, *Allan* Lord of *Galloway*; the Barons *Moreville*, Constables of *Scotland*, *Engaine*, *David* Prince of *Scotland*, and Earl of *Huntingdon*; the Saxon Kings of *England*; *Waltheof* Earl of *Northumberland*, *Alfred* Earl of *Northumberland*, *Kevelioke* Earl of *Chester*, *Lupus* Earl of *Chester*, *Leofric* Earl of *Mercia*, *Longespe* Earl of *Salisbury*, *Rosmar* Earl of *Salisbury*, *Riddlesford* Baron of *Bray*; the Barons *Deincourt*, *Grey* of *Rötberfield*, *Oddingfells*, *Maxtoke*, *Limesf*, *Fitzalan* of *Bedal*, and *Haget*; the Barons *Morley*, *Marshall*, and *Rie de la Pole* Earl of *Suffolk* (of which illustrious Family this House is now the only Substitute;) but also the Baronies of *Morley*, and *Marshall* of *Hengham* and *Rie*, together with the hereditary Office of the Marshalship of *Ireland*, and a very great Estate beside.

BUT this Family being in Disgrace, as we have before observed, *Henry Parker*, Lord *Morley*, Son and Heir to the said Sir *William* and *Alice*, was not admitted to all his Pretensions; though at length, in the twenty-first of *Henry* the Eighth, he was restored to the Place of his Ancestors, as a Baron of the twenty-eighth of *Edward* the First.

IN the following Year, he was one of the Peers in Parliament who subscribed that Declaration to Pope *Clement* the Seventh, whereby Intimation was given to his Holiness, that unless he did comply with King *Henry*, in his Divorce from Queen *Katherine*, the farther Acknowledgment of his Supremacy would be in danger. And in the twenty-fifth of *Henry* the Eighth, upon a Dispute between him and the Lord *Dacres* of *Gillebard* for Precedency, Judgment was given in his Favour. He married *Alice*, Daughter of Sir *John St. John* of *Bletsbo*, Knight, whereby he became suc-

ther allied in Blood to King *Henry* the Eighth. This Lady being Great Grand-daughter to Sir *Oliver St. John*, Knight, by his Wife *Margaret*, Daughter and Heir of Sir *John Beauchamp* of *Bletsbo*, Knight; which Lady *Margaret* marrying afterwards to *John Beaufort*, Duke of *Somerset*, had by him an only Daughter, who was Mother to King *Henry* the Seventh.

BUT notwithstanding this Alliance, by reason of the Marriage of *Jane Parker*, his Grandfather to *George* Lord *Rochford*, Brother to Queen *Anne of Bullen*, after the Ruin of that unfortunate Queen, he lost the Favour of the King again; so that he could by no means obtain the Confirmation of his Office of the Marshalship of *Ireland*, to which he had an indisputable Title.

THIS *Henry Parker*, Lord *Morley*, died eighty Years old, in 1556, and was buried in the Church of *Hallingbury Morley* in *Essex*, where his Epitaph still remains in the following Words:

*Henricus, Auratus Eques, Morlei Dominus, veræ Nobilitatis Specimen qui semper in Deum optimum maximum, Parentes ac Sanguine convinctos præstanti Pietate fuit, Marmoreum hoc Monumentum commune Sepulchrum suis esse voluit, Avi namque atque Avix, et Parentis utriusq; Clarissimæq; Fæminæ Uxoris suæ Ossa, ut sub hac Mole conderentur effecit. Quo Heroe vivente vere affirmare licet multo illustriorem fuisse Essexiam, erat enim in Cætu Nobilium Gemma veluti preciosissima, bonarum Literarum Splendore omniq; Virtutum Genere refulgens. Cujus suavissimis Manibus optabis Hospes Quietem placidissimam.*

*Vixit Ann. 80. ob. An. Dom. 1556, Mense Novembris, benemerenti posuit Nepos & Heres, Henricus Parkar, Eques Auratus, Morlei Dominus.*

Epitaph of *Alice*, Wife of the said *Henry Lord Morley* :

*En Ego Alicia, Regio Sanguine prognata,  
Uxor fui quondam inelyti Henrici Parkar,  
Equitis Aurati, Morlei Domini, per Lustrorum  
fere Spacia duodecim et tandem hic re-  
quiesco.*

*Vix. Ann. 66. ob. A° Dom.  
1552, Mense Decembri, bene-  
merenti posuit Gratissimus Ma-  
ritus, Henricus Parkar, Eques  
Auratus, Morlei Dominus.*

HE had Issue Sir *Henry Parker*, his eldest Son, who was made a Knight of the *Bath* at the Coronation of Queen *Anne of Boleyn*, in the twenty-fifth of *Henry the Eighth*, but he died in his Father's Life-time ; so that the Barony descended to his eldest Son *Henry*, by his first Wife, Grand-daughter of ——— *Newport*, in the County of *Hertford*, with whose Descendants the Title continued, together with the Barony of *Mounteagle*, another Honour in Fee, which they acquired by Marriage with *Elizabeth*, sole Daughter and Heir of *William Stanley*, Lord *Mounteagle*, fifth Son of *Thomas Earl of Derby*) till the Reign of King *William the Third* ;—but now lies in Suspence. By which Lady he also had two Daughters, *Jane*, the Wife of *George Lord Rockford*, Son and Heir of *Thomas Bullen*, Earl of *Ormond* and *Wiltshire*, Brother to Queen *Ann Boleyn*, as we have before observed, and *Margaret*, the Wife of Sir *John Shelton*, Knight.

THE said Sir *Henry Parker*, by his second Wife *Elizabeth*, Daughter and sole Heir of Sir *Philip Calthrope*, of *Erwarton*, in *Suffolk*, Knight, by *Anne*, Daughter of Sir *William Boleyn*, Knight, and Aunt to Queen *Elizabeth*, had a Son, Sir *Philip Parker*, Knight, Ancestor to the now only remaining Branch of this House, who, from his Mother, acquired a very great Estate, together with the Rights of Blood and Arms of those eminent Families of *Calthrope*, *Waxren* of *Wirmgay*, *Stanbow*, *Bacon*, of *Erwarton*, *Davillers*, and *St. Omers*.

452 *A Genealogical History*

THIS Sir *Philip Parker*, first of that Name, by *Katherine*, Daughter of Sir *John Goodwin*, Knight, left a Daughter *Katherine*, married to Sir *William Cornwallis*, Ancestor to the present Lord of that Name, and a Son *Calthrope*.

WHICH Sir *Calthrope Parker*, Knt. served in the Parliament held in the Year 1640, as Knight of the Shire for the County of *Suffolk*. He married *Mercy*, Daughter of Sir *Stephen Soams*, Knight, by whom he left a Son, named *Philip*.

SIR *Philip Parker*, second of that Name, married *Dorothy*, Daughter and Heir of Sir *Robert Gawdy* of *Claxton*, in the County of *Norfolk*, Knight, by whom he acquired a considerable Estate, together with the Rights of Blood and Arms of *Gawdy*, *Knightly*, *Pantulf*, *D'Oily*, *Golover*, *Burgh*, *Ehauncy*, *Paw*, and *Bacon* of *Stewkey*.—He served in the Long Parliament for the Borough of *Harwich*, in *Essex*, and left a Son, also named *Philip*.

WHICH Sir *Philip Parker*, third of that Name, was, upon the Restoration, viz. in 1661, created a Baronet, who marrying *Rebecca*, Daughter of *Walter Long* of *Whadden*, in *Wiltshire*, Sister, and (at length Heir) of Sir *Walter Long*, of the same Place, Baronet. By this Alliance his Family acquired a very great Estate.

To him succeeded Sir *Philip Parker*, Baronet (fourth of that Name) his eldest Son, who married *Mary*, the Daughter of *Samuel Fortrey* of *Byall Fenn*, in the County of *Cambridge*, Esquire, and by her had Issue the late Sir *Philip Parker*, Baronet, (the last Male of this ancient and noble House (fifth of that Name) who died upon the twentieth of *January*, 1640-1, in the fifty-eighth Year of his Age, leaving two Daughters his Coheirs, *Martza* and *Elizabeth*, now living, unmarried) and two Daughters, of which *Katherine*, the eldest, is now Countess of *Egmont*.

CHILDREN

A D D E N D A to Page 452.

The said Sir *Philip Parker a Morley Long*, Brother to the said Countess of *Egmont*, was the last Male Heir of this noble Family, and dying *January* the 20th, 1740-1, left, by *Martha*, Daughter of *William East*, Esq; only two Daughters, *Martha* and *Elizabeth*, which *Elizabeth* married *James Plunket*, Esq; but died without Issue; and *Martha* married *John Thynne How*, Lord *Cbedworth*, whose Widow she now is, and without Issue.—In whom, and the present Earl of *Egmont*, center all the Rights of this Descent.

*John*, the late Earl of *Egmont*, worn out by a paralytic Decay, departed this Life on *May* the 1st, 1748, at *London*, and was buried at *Erwarton*, having had Issue by the said *Catherine Parker*, his Countess (who died *August* the 22d, 1749, aged sixty, and was buried with him under a Stone of black Marble, on the left Side of the great Altar or Communion-table there) three Sons and four Daughters; first, *John*, his Successor, now Earl of *Egmont*; second, *Philip Clarke Perceval*, born *June* the 21st, 1714, and died an Infant; third, *George*, born *January* the 28th, 1721, and died the *July*, 1726: First, Lady *Catherine*, born in *Dublin*, *January* the 11th, 1712, and married the 14th *April*, 1735, to *Thomas Hanmer* of the *Fenns*, in the County of *Flint*, Esq; Member of Parliament for *Castlerising* in *Norfolk* (who died the 1st of *April*, 1737) and she deceased at *London*, without Issue, on the 16th of *February*, 1747-8; second, *Mary*, born the 12th *May*, 1713, and died an Infant; as did *Mary*, the third Daughter, who was born the 28th *December*, 1726; fourth, *Helena*, born the 14th *February*, 1717, married the 3d *November*, 1741, to Sir *John Rawdon*, Bart. (now Earl of *Moir*) and died at *Bristol*, on the 11th *June*, 1763, by whom she left two Daughters, *Catherine* and *Helena*, now living, 1765.

*John*, the present Earl of *Egmont* (Lord of *Duballow*, *Burton*, *Liscarrol*, *Kanturk*, *Lobart*, &c. in *Ireland*; and of *Enmore*, *Anderfeld* and *Spaxton*, *Tuxwell* and *Radlet*, *Currypole* and *Charlinch*, *Asholt*, *Aley*, *Plainsfield*, *Overstowey* and *Triron*, *Quantock*, *Weekfitzpaine* and *Windiates*. The Borough and Honour of *Stokecurcy*, and the Hundreds of *Anderfeld*, *Williton*, and *Freemannors*, in the County of *Somerset*, in *England*;) was born at *Westminster*, on the 24th of *February*, 1711; and after a learned Education at home, and a further Improvement by visiting foreign Countries, was chosen in 1731 (though under Age) a Burgess for *Dingley*, and on the 31st *December*, 1741, unanimously elected Representative for the City of *Westminster*; as he was in 1747, for *Wesby* in *Herefordshire*. In *March*, 1747, he was appointed one of the Lords of the Bedchamber to *Frederick*, late Prince of *Wales*, in which Station he continued till the Death of that Prince. On the 17th of *April*, 1754, he was elected a Member at the Choice of the last Parliament, for the Borough of *Bridgwater*, in the County of *Somerset*; and on the 9th *January*, 1755, being sworn one of the Lords of his Majesty's most honourable Privy-Council (in *Great-Britain*) then took his Place at that Board accordingly. He was again elected to this present Parliament on the 1st of *April*, for the Borough of *Ilchester*, in the County of *Somerset*; and likewise the next Day rechosen for the said Borough of *Bridgwater*, for which Place he made his Election on the 27th of *April*, 1762. His Lordship was called up to the House of Peers in *Great-Britain*, by the Title of Lord *Lovel* and *Holland*, Baron *Lovel* and *Holland*, of *Enmore* in the County of *Somerset* (two of those Baronies, as before observed, which were forfeited by Attainder of *Francis Viscount Lovel*, in the First of King *Henry* the Seventh) in regard to his Relation

of the House of YVERY, &c. [455]

tion (as well by Consanguinity as Descent, both by the Male and Female Line, as above deduced, from that Branch of this noble Family) and took his Seat in the House of Lords accordingly, on the 10th of *May* then next ensuing. On the 27th of *November*, 1762, the King was pleased to appoint him one of the Post-Masters General, in the room of the Earl of *Besborough*; resigning which Employment on the 10th of *September*, 1763, his Lordship was, on the same Day, appointed first Commissioner for executing the Office of Lord High-Admiral of the Kingdoms of *Great-Britain* and *Ireland*, and of the Dominions, Islands and Territories thereto belonging, in which Office he now continues. On the 15th of *February*, 1736-7, he married the Lady *Catherine Cecil*, second Daughter to *James* late Earl of *Salisbury* (by the Lady *Ann Tufton*, second Daughter and Co-heir to *Thomas* Earl of *Thanet*, by the Lady *Catherine Cavendish*, Daughter and Co-heir to *Henry* Duke of *Newcastle*). Her Ladyship died at *Charlton* in *Kent*, on the 16th *August*, 1752, aged thirty-three Years and ten Days, and was buried there, having had Issue five sons and two Daughters, *viz.*

1. JOHN-JAMES, Lord Viscount *Perceval*, born in *Pall-mall*, *Westminster*, the 23d *January*, 1737-8. His Lordship in 1760 was appointed a Captain of Dragoons in Lord *Robert Sutton*'s Regiment of Royal Foresters; and in *April*, 1762, was promoted to be Lieutenant-Colonel in the first Regiment of Guards, and served at the Head of his Company, in the allied Army in *Germany*, under Prince *Ferdinand* of *Brunswick*, during that Campaign. On the 4th of *May*, 1762, his Lordship was chosen Member in this present Parliament for *Bridgwater*, in the room of the Earl of *Egmont*, his Father, when called up to the House of Peers in *England*. On *Tuesday* the 4th of *June*, 1765,



[456] *A Genealogical History*

1765, his Lordship was married, at his Father's House at the Admiralty, to the Hon. Miss *Isabella Powlet*, only Daughter and Heir to the Right Hon. the Lord *Nassau Powlet* (third Son of *Charles Duke of Bolton*, who died the 21st *January*, 1722) by his Wife, the Lady *Isabella Tufton*, one of the Daughters and Co-heirs of *Thomas Tufton*, Earl of *Tbanet*, Baron *Clifford*, *Westmoreland*, and *Vesey*, which Baronies being in Fee, fell into Obedience between the Co-heirs of the said Earl at his Decease. But that of *Clifford* being revived in *Margaret* (one of the Sisters to the said Lady *Isabella Powlet*) then Wife of *Thomas Coke*, late Earl of *Leicester*, is at present in the said Lady *Margaret*, Countess-Dowager of *Leicester*, who has no Issue.

2d, *CECIL-PARKER PERCEVAL*, born the 19th *October*, 1739, who died at *Eton-School* the 4th of *March*, 1753.

3d, *PHILIP-TUFTON PERCEVAL*, born the 10th *March*, 1741-2, who having entered early into the Sea-service, served during all the late War abroad, was at the Siege of *Quebec*, and at the taking of *Martinique*, was lately Captain of the *Ramillies*, a third Rate, and is now of the *Aquilon* Man of War.

4th, *EDWARD PERCEVAL*, born the 19th of *April*, 1744, being an Ensign in the first Regiment of Guards, served as Aid-de-Camp to General *Hodgson* at the taking of *Belleisle*; was employed again abroad in the same Station with the Earl of *Albemarle*, in his late Expedition to the *West-Indies*, at the Siege and Surrender of the *Havanna*: And is now Captain of a Troop in the Royal Regiment of Dragoon-Guards, commanded by General *Mostyn*.

of the House of YVERY, &c. [457]

5th, *FREDERICK-AUGUSTUS PERCEVAL*, born the 11th of *February*, 1749-50, who died the 21st *January*, 1757.

1st, Lady *CATHERINE PERCEVAL*, born the 20th of *February*, 1745-6, now living, 1765.

2d, Lady *MARGARET PERCEVAL*, born the 10th of *October*, 1748, who died the 23d of *January* 1749-50.

On the 26th of *February*, 1756, the said Earl was married at *Charlton* in *Kent*, to his second and present Lady, *Catherine Compton*, Daughter to *Charles Compton*, and Sister to *Charles* (the late) and *Spencer*, the present Earl of *Northampton*, by whom he has had the following Issue ;

1st, *CHARLES GEORGE PERCEVAL*, born at *Charlton* in *Kent*, the 1st of *October*, 1756, now living, 1765.

2d, Lady *MARY PERCEVAL*, born at *Charlton* in *Kent*, the 15th of *July*, 1758, now living, 1765.

3d, Lady *ANNE PERCEVAL*, born in *Pall-mall*, *London*, the 15th of *December*, 1759, now living, 1765.

4th, Lady *CHARLOTTE PERCEVAL*, born in *St. James's Square*, *London*, the 31st *January*, 1761, who died on the 19th of *February* following.

5th, *SPENCER PERCEVAL*, second Son, born in *Audley-square*, *London*, the 1st of *November*, 1762, now living, 1765.

6th,

6th, Lady *ELIZABETH PERCEVAL*, born in the *Admiralty-house, London*, the 12th of *December, 1763*, now living, 1765.

7th, *HENRY PERCEVAL*, third Son, born at his Father's House at *Turnbam-green*, in the Parish of *Chiswick, Middlesex*, on *Wednesday the 26th of June, 1765*, now living.

### T I T L E S.

*John Perceval*, Earl of *Egmont*, Viscount *Perceval* of *Kanturk*, Baron *Perceval* of *Burton*, Lord of *Duballow*, and Baronet; Lord Paramount of the Seignory, Cantred, and Barony of *Duballow*, and of the Territories of *Poble-o-Callaghan* and *Poble-o-Keefe*, all in the Kingdom of *Ireland*.

Lord *Lovel* and *Holland*, Baron *Lovel* and *Holland* of *Enmore*, in the Kingdom of *Great-Britain*: First Commissioner for executing the Office of Lord High-Admiral of the Kingdom of *Great-Britain* and *Ireland*, and of the Dominions, Islands and Territories thereto belonging, and one of his Majesty's Most Honourable Privy-Council for *Great-Britain*.

### C R E A T I O N S.

Lord of *Duballow, &c.* in the County of *Cork*, the 16th *June, 1615*, the 13th of *James* the First; Baronet, the 9th *September, 1661*, the 13th of *Charles* the Second; Baron *Perceval*, and Baron *Perceval* of *Burton*, the 21st of *April, 1715*, the 1st of *George* the First; Viscount *Perceval* of *Kanturk*, the 25th *February, 1722*, the 9th of *George* the First; and Earl of *Egmont* (all in the County of *Cork* in *Ireland*) the 6th of *November,*

*of the House of YVERY, &c.* [459]  
November, 1733, the 7th of George the Second.

Lord *Lovel* and *Holland*, Baron *Lovel* and *Holland* of *Enmore*, in the County of *Somerset*, in *Great-Britain*, the 7th May, 1762, the 2d of George the Third.

A R M S.

Quarterly, 1st, *Argent*, on a Chief indented, *Gules*, three *Crosses Pattee* of the Field, for *Perceval*; 2d, *Or*, three *Chevrons*, *Gules*, for *Yvery*; 3d, *Or*, a *Lion rampant*, between a *Semiee* of *Crosses Crofslets*, *Azure*, for *Lovel* of *Karry*; 4th, *Barrynebulee* of six, *Or* and *Gules*, for *Lovel* of *Tichmerfb.*

C R E S T,

On a *Wreath* of the Colours, a *Thistle*, *Proper*.

S U P P O R T E R S.

On the *Dexter* Side, an *Antelope*, *Argent*, attired, gorged with a *Ducal Coronet*, chained, tufted, and unguled, *Or*; on the *Sinister* Side, a *Stag*, *Sable*, furnished as the *Dexter*; each having in its Mouth a *Thistle*, *Proper*. Also two *Eagles* displayed, *Sable*, the ancient Supporters used by this Family from the Time of King *Edward* the First.

M O T T O.

*Sub Cruce Candida.*

C H I E F

C H I E F S E A T S :

In *England*; at *Enmore-Castle*, in the County of *Somerset*, four Miles from *Bridgwater*, six from *Taunton*, and 148 from *London*: And at *Turnham-green*, in the County of *Middlesex*, five Miles from *London*.

In *Ireland*; at *Burton-house* (burnt down in 1688, by a Party of King *James's* Forces, of which the Offices only now remain in Repair) 90 Miles from *Dublin*: *Lobort-Castle*, 95 Miles from *Dublin*: And *Kanturk-Castle*, (a noble Building, of which only the Walls are now standing) 100 Miles from *Dublin*, all in the County of *Cork*.

CHILDREN of JOHN Earl of Egmont (ninth of that Name) and of Katherine Parker a Morley, his Wife.

I. JOHN, now Lord Viscount PERCEVAL, of whom in the next Chapter.

II. The Lady KATHERINE PERCEVAL, born the eleventh of January, 1711-12, at Dublin, Sir Francis Clark, Baronet, Mrs. Helena Le Grand, Sister of Sir Robert Southwell, Knight, and Mrs. Mary Parker, Sister to the Countess of Egmont, were her Sureties at Baptism.—— Upon the fourteenth of April, 1733, she was married to Thomas Hammer of Fenns, in the County of Flint, Esquire, Heir apparent to Sir Thomas Hammer, Baronet, late Speaker of the House of Commons: This worthy Gentleman dying without Issue, upon the first of April, 1737, her Ladyship is now a Widow.

III. MARY, born the twelfth of May, 1713, Lieutenant General Steward, and Edward Southwell, junior, Esquire, Godfathers; the Lady Effingham Howard, and the Lady Blany, Godmothers.—— She died an Infant,

IV. PHILIP CLARKE PERCEVAL, born at London the twenty-first of June, 1714, Sir Francis Clark, Baronet, Daniel Dering, Esquire, and Mrs. Walker, his Sureties.——He died an Infant.

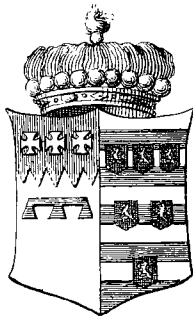
V. MARY, born at London the twenty-eighth of December, 1716, Sir Philip Parker a Morley, her Uncle, Mrs. Dering, Sister to her Mother, and the Dutchess of Grafton, Sureties.——She died an Infant.

VI. THE Lady *HELENA PERCEVAL*, born at *London* upon the fourteenth of *February*, 1717-18, *Daniel Dering*, Esquire, her Mother's Brother-in-Law, *Mrs. Temple*, and *Mrs. Elizabeth Southwell*, were her Sureties; Her Ladyship is now living, and married to Sir *John Rawdon*, Baronet, of *Rawdon-Hall*, in *Yorkshire*, and *Moi-ra* in *Ireland*, Grandson of Sir *John Rawdon*, by *Dorothy*, Daughter, and at length sole Heir (by the Death of *Edward* Earl of *Conway*, her Brother) to *Edward* Viscount *Conway*.——By virtue of which, he now claims the *English* Barony of *Conway*, created by Writ of Summons to Parliament, in the fourth of *Charles* the First, *A. D.* 1628, in the Person of his said Great-Grandfather the Viscount *Conway*,

VII. *GEORGE PERCEVAL*, born in *London* the twenty-eighth of *January*, 1721-22, the Prince of *Wales*, now King *George* the Second, the Duke of *Grafton*, and the Dutchess of *Montague*, his Sureties. He died in *July* 1726,

CHAP. XIV.

JOHN (*tenth of that Name*) Viscount Perceval of Kanturk, only Son and Heir apparent of John Earl of Egmont, Member of Parliament in Ireland for the Borough of Dingley, and Member of the English Parliament for the City and Liberties of Westminster.



THE earliest Fruit of the Marriage of John Earl of Egmont with Katherine, eldest Daughter of Sir Philip Parker a Morley, Baronet, fourth of that Name was John (*tenth of that Name*) now Lord Viscount Perceval, who was born in London upon the twenty-fourth of February, 1710-11. His Sureties at Baptism were Sir Philip Parker, Baronet, his Uncle, the Right Honourable Edward Southwell, Esquire, his Majesty's



456 *A Genealogical History*

Majesty's Secretary of State for *Ireland*, and Mrs. *Rebecca Parker*, his Great Aunt.

HAVING been perfected in School Learning under Dr. *Philip Bearcroft*, Fellow of *Merton College* in *Oxford*, Preacher of the *Charter-House*, and Chaplain to his Majesty.——In the Year 1726, he went over into *France, Flanders, Holland, &c.* where he remained one Year.——From whence returning, he passed two Years more in Application to other Branches of Literature, which crown the Acquisition of the dead Languages.——Having afterwards made the Tour of *England*, he went again abroad in 1729.——In 1730 he was, by the Earl of *Egmont*, sent into *Ireland* to visit his Estate in that Kingdom.——And a Vacancy in Parliament falling out there, during his Stay on that Side, he was elected a Burgess for *Dingley*, in the County of *Kerry*; and, though little more than twenty Years of Age, was, by favour of the House, admitted to his Seat, where he remained that Winter, after which he returned to *England*.

IN 1734, at the General Election for the second Parliament of King *George* the Second, the Earl of *Egmont*, tired with the Fatigue of that Station, resigned his Seat for the Borough of *Harwich*, which he destined for his Son; and in order that he might be elected without any Opposition, he made a Compromise with the Minister, upon these Terms, that he would (for the second Place) serve any Friend proposed by him, and that the Minister, in return, should support his Son.——This Conjunction of Interests secured every Vote in the whole Borough.——But the Compromise being broken, with Circumstances of Deceit and Treachery, too tedious and intricate to be related here, his Lordship was defeated in this View, in a very surprizing manner. after a fruitless and great Expence.

IN *July* 1736, he went over to *Ireland* again, where he stayed one Month.——As he did again in *April* 1739 for six Weeks.

THE necessary Writings and Settlements (to which were Parties *John* Earl of *Egmont*, *Catherine* Countess  
of

of the House of YVERY, &c. 457

of *Egmont*, *John* Lord Viscount *Perceval*, the Lady *Catherine Cecil*, the Right Honourable *Marmaduke Coghill*, Esquire, (Chancellor of the Exchequer in *Ireland*;) *Matthew Lamb* and *Thomas Barsbam*, Esquires, *James* Earl of *Salisbury*, (Brother to the Lady *Catherine Cecil*;) *Lewis* Earl of *Rockingham*, Sir *Francis Clerk*, Baronet, *Edward Le Grand*, Esquire, the Right Honourable *Edward Southwell*, Esquire, Secretary of State for *Ireland*, and Sir *Philip Parker Long*, Baronet) being signed and sealed on the 12th of *February*, 1736-7, upon the fifteenth of the same Month, his Lordship married the said Lady *Katherine*, second Daughter of *James Cecil*, late Earl of *Salisbury*, (by the Lady *Anne Tufton*, second Daughter and Coheir of *Thomas* Earl of *Thanet*, by his Wife, *Katherine*, Daughter and Coheir of *Henry Cavendish*, Duke of *Newcastle*;) a Woman in Birth inferior to none, in Fortune but to few, equal in every other Respect to the Best, and to the Fairest of her Sex.

ABOUT the latter End of the Year 1740, the second Parliament of King *George* the Second being near determined, and every Gentleman who desired a Seat in the next, preparing to make Application to the Electors of some Part of the United Kingdoms,—— the Lord *Perceval* first founded the Temper of the Borough of *Harwich*, but he found it a desperate View to attempt to be chosen there, during the uncontrolled Authority of the Minister, who had so basely before defeated him.—This Minister, odious to the whole Nation, still, in a wondrous manner, maintained his Power, by Arts and Management ruinous to Public Liberty, and destructive to the Freedom of Elections throughout the Kingdom; but in no Part more than in this Borough, where having gained an Ascendant, by the Means who we have hinted at before, he with great Diligence persevered to strengthen and maintain it, by Places and Gratifications which he conferred upon the Voters, and by supplying all the Vacancies in that Corporation, by the lowest and most venal of the Populace, who could be selected out of the whole Town.—— In this Situation of

458 *A Genealogical History*

Things, his Lordship thought it vain to struggle with the inveterate Hatred of the Man, in a Place where he was become so much the Master, and therefore accepted the Invitation of a large Majority of the Electors of the Borough of *Haslemere* in *Surrey*, who in a very handsome and respectful Letter, desired his Lordship's Presence there, previous to the future Election, assuring him of their Attachment and Service to that End.

HIS Lordship complied with their Request, went down thither, and was declared a Candidate upon the Country Interest, in Opposition to General *Ogletborpe*, and *Peter Burrel*, Esquire, Sub-Governor of the *South-Sea* Company, who were supported by the Minister.

As it may be curious in future Ages to know in what Condition this Nation stood at this Period, with respect to the Freedom of Election, and the Insolence of Power, ——— it may not be improper to mention here, that as soon as these two Gentlemen had come to this Determination, ——— a Man in great Office sent a Gentleman to the Earl of *Egmont*, to advise his Son to desist from his Pretensions in that Borough, for that the Minister desired him to understand, that all his Endeavours should avail him nothing, for that he would open the Exchequer against him; and that if by this Means he could not defeat his Election, he would bring the Cause to the Bar of the House of Commons, and would have him voted out, though he should be returned by a Majority of fifty-nine out of sixty, of which Number the Voters were then supposed to consist.

THIS Menace wrought no Effect upon this young Nobleman, who had been too long acquainted with the Malice of the Minister, not to have expected the worst Efforts of it, without this solemn and unnecessary Declaration; and too long accustomed to the Frowns of this Minister, to tremble at them. ——— He therefore persevered in his Intention, and continued an expensive and powerful Opposition for some Months. — But at length, perceiving that the Exchequer was a Force not to be contended with, in a Borough habi-  
tuated

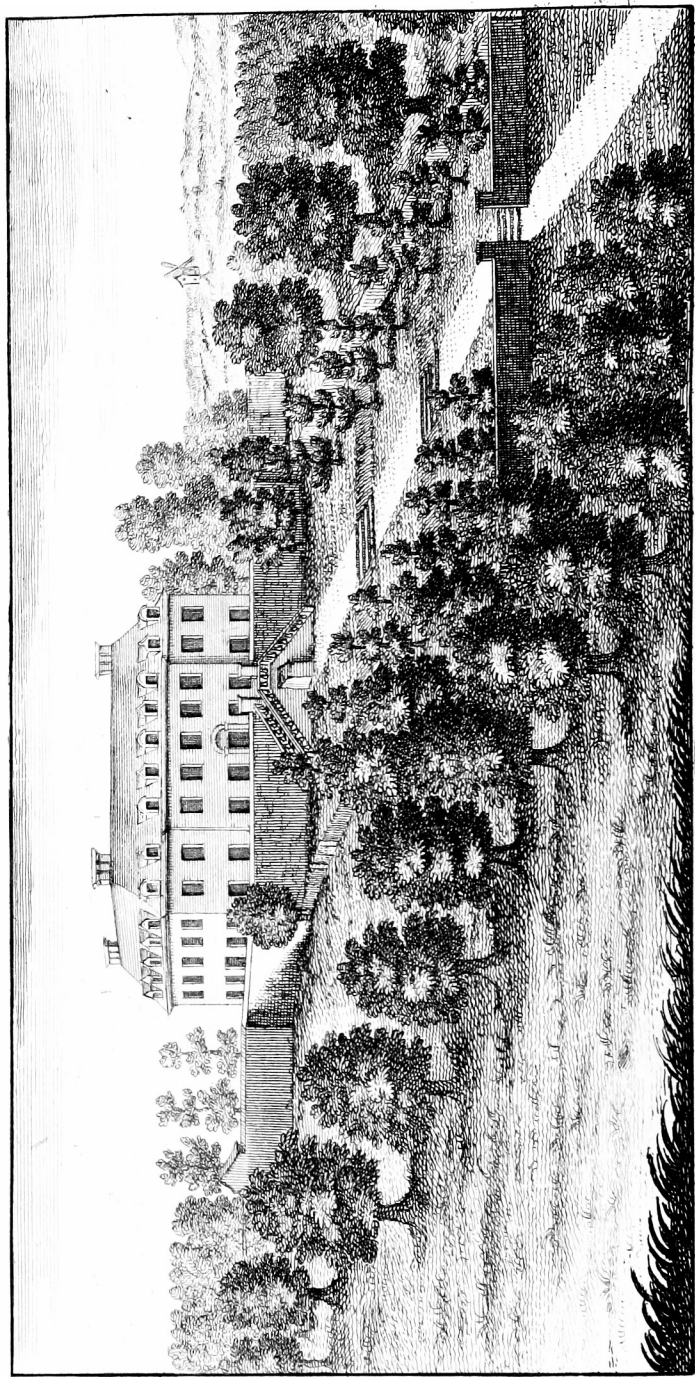
tuated to Corruption, many of his Voters deserting, others departing from their Stipulations, and insisting upon different Terms, from those to which they had at first agreed; ——— his Collegue unwilling to run any farther Risque of Expence, ——— a Returning Officer chosen in the opposite Interest, — his Lordship finding that the whole future Charge (which must have been extremely great) would lie upon him singly, and being taken dangerously ill a very few Days before the Election, and rendered incapable to conduct this critical Affair in Person, he thought it prudent to make the best Retreat he could.

ONE of the first Elections that is made upon the issuing of Writs for the Choice of a new Parliament, is always that of the City of *Westminster*. ——— This great City, which is a part of the Metropolis, (including the Palaces of *Whitehall* and *St. James's*) pays to the Land-Tax, at four Shillings in the Pound, 93,846 *l.* 7 *s.* 8 *d.* which is more than any County in the Kingdom, (excepting *Middlesex*, of which it is a Part) and not the Third less than *London*. ——— Of the other Taxes it bears a vast Proportion, which it can well answer, being the Seat of the Crown, the Legislature, the Courts of Justice, and the Residence of all the great Nobility and Gentry of the *British* Dominions. ——— It consists of the greatest Number of Votes in the whole Kingdom, excepting only the County of *York*; for it contains above Sixteen Thousand Houses, which are of such a Rent as to be charged to the Church and Poor, and consequently to entitle the Possessors to vote. It is true, that many of these being untenanted, inhabited by Women, or by Persons not qualified, or able, the Number is reduced to about Nine Thousand, who may be presumed to vote at any contested Election. ——— But even this Number must appear at the first View too great to be directed by any Influence whatever. ——— Yet in these later Times, such has been the Weight of Power, ——— that the Minister, by his Employments, by his Dependants, by the Assistance of the Church of *Westminster*,

(which is attached in most Times to the Court) by the infinite Numbers of Officers, Ecclesiastical, Judicial, Civil and Military, and by the servile Expectations of those who furnish Necessaries of all kinds to the King's Palace, had so strengthened his Interest in this City, that for twenty Years no Man was hardy enough to undertake an Opposition, and the Election always went, without Contest, in favour of some great Officer of the *Treasury*, *Admiralty*, or *Army*, whom the Court had pleased to nominate. — This had passed in such a manner, that it was commonly called the King's Borough, and it was even thought an Insolence to controvert this Position, so contrary to the Principles of the *British* Constitution. — But at this Time, some few of the most rational Inhabitants, observing the Ferment of the People, and the universal Odium raised against the Minister, by his insolent and destructive Conduct, undertook to make a Trial of the Independent Strength. — And without having thought of any second Candidate, put Admiral *Vernon* in Nomination against the Ministerial Faction. — This brave Man, who had done great Things during the Course of the present War, with very little Means, and to the apparent Dissatisfaction of the Minister, was at that Time, most deservedly, extremely popular: and Mr. *Edwin*, a Gentleman of *Wales*, of good Fortune, appearing accidentally at the Meeting held for the purpose of the Admiral's Nomination, was joined with him.

THIS sudden and uncommon Opposition was at first but little apprehended by the Minister. — But the Poll (which began on *Saturday* the second of *May*, 1741) proceeding, and with no great Disparity of Numbers, he began to fear, that in the End the Election might be lost. — Which his Dependents, willing to prevent, and presuming in his Power, which had hitherto protected all those, who had served him in the same fatal Manner, arbitrarily closed the Poll upon the *Thursday* following, while great Numbers were unpolled, many coming, and many actually then de-





*Mount Pleasant near Sunbridge Wells in KENT  
a Seat belonging to the R<sup>t</sup> Hon<sup>ble</sup> the Lord Viscount Perceval*

of the House of YVERY, &c. 461

demanding to be polled. — But being apprehensive of the Resentment of the People at this Day's Outrage, they added another, if possible yet more desperate, in its Consequences, to the Liberty of the People; for they sent for a Body of Regular Forces, consisting of fifty Men, headed by Officers, under whose Protection they declared the Lord *Sundon*, a Lord of the Treasury, and Sir *Charles Wager*, first Commissioner of the Admiralty, duly elected. — This Election, carried on in every other Circumstance likewise, with all the Circumstances of Partiality, Violence, and Injustice, and afterwards aggravated by the illegal and partial billeting of Soldiers upon the opposing Party, raised an uncommon Ferment in the Minds of the whole City, which diffusing itself through the whole Nation, greatly served to support the Country Interest, in many other Boroughs, where the Elections were not made so soon.

DURING the greater Part of the Poll the Lord *Perceval* lay very ill at his House in *Westminster*. — Before the Election came on, he had many Applications from private Persons in the City, to offer himself a Candidate with Admiral *Vernon*, before the other Candidate was named. — But his Health would not permit him to appear; and he was besides very dubious of the Success, and of the Expence of such an Opposition. — However, growing better, he ventured out to the Election, and there appeared, though with much Hazard to himself, for two Days successively, to countenance the Party of the Admiral and Mr. *Edwin*. — Which was very gratefully received by their Friends. — His Lordship being the only Person of Rank, who personally appeared for them. —

AFTER this, his Lordship went down to his Seat at *Mount-Pleasant*, near *Tunbridge-Wells*, where he remained till the Beginning of *June*, drinking the Waters of that Place, for the Recovery of his Health.

DURING his Stay there, the Independent Inhabitants, highly resenting the Treatment they had received, formed a Committee of Twenty-one, which

was



was afterwards enlarged to Thirty-one, of the principal Inhabitants, Lawyers and Gentlemen, to prosecute the Offenders, and to prepare all Matters for an Application to Parliament, against their next Meeting. — This Committee had no sooner formed itself, than a private Cabal began to lay a Plan, for bringing into Parliament a young Gentleman, whose Father had been of eminent Fame in Parliament, and but lately dead. Knowing that if the late flagrant Election should be declared void, a Vacancy must inevitably happen in *Westminster* for one Person, besides Mr. *Edwin*, the Admiral being then chosen for three other Places. — But this Cabal were outwitted by themselves; for being apprehensive of some other Candidate, they thought it prudent to inculcate this Position, that no Man should be suffered to make Interest, till the Parliament should have determined on the Right of the late Election. — This Principle seemed at first, in some Measure, to answer their Intention, many of the Committee agreeing to the Prudence of it, being kept in Ignorance of the intended Resolution, in favour of the Gentleman formerly mentioned. — While they without Suspicion, promoted privately the Interest of the Person with whom they were engaged, procuring Promises from several of the great Interests of the City. Which deceitful Management being at length discovered, justly incensed the People, and utterly destroyed this private and clandestine View. — In the mean Time, the Public began to cast their Eyes upon the Lord *Perceval*, as a proper Person; and their Opinion encreasing, the Cabal thought it high Time to stifle the Report. — But they took a very imprudent Method, by inserting in the public Papers some very disrespectful Paragraphs of News. — Upon which his Lordship immediately returned to Town, to discover the Authors of this Insolence, and to demand a proper Satisfaction. — The Committee, in general, at that time ignorant of the Authors of it, and sensible that his Lordship deserved no such Treatment from them, determined to make him all the

the Satisfaction in their Power; which they did, by electing him a Member of their Body: in which Station he attended with so much Diligence, and was so extremely serviceable, in promoting their Cause, and keeping up the Spirit of the People, — that in spite of all the Endeavours of the Cabal, the late Election being declared void, — His Lordship was unanimously nominated a Candidate for the City of *Westminster*, at the greatest Meeting of Independent Inhabitants ever known upon a like Occasion, at the *Crown* and *Anchor* Tavern in the *Strand*, upon the twenty-fourth Day of *December*, 1741. And so happy he was in the good Opinion of the Public, and supported by so incredible an Attachment, that the Minister could not procure any Man to venture his Person to stand in opposition to him, though he offered to bear the whole Expence, and to make that Expence the greatest that had been ever known in any Election in the Kingdom. — These Rumours of Opposition, and these Endeavours to raise one, however, continued to the last Day, — *viz.* *Thursday* the thirty-first of *December*, 1741, when his Lordship and Mr. *Edwin* were attended by no less than 6000 Voters, of all Denominations, from their own Houses to *Westminster-Hall*, where the Election was made, — without any Opposition. — At this Ceremony was present an amazing Number of People, to the amount, as it is said, of 200,000, all the Windows of the Houses being filled with Spectators, — *Westminster-Hall*, which alone contains ten thousand, — the *Court of Requests*, — the two *Palace Yards*, — *King-street*, — *Whitehall*, and all the Places adjacent, being crowded in a Degree never known before on any public Occasion. — Infomuch, that it is credibly reported, that when the Returning Officer demanded of the People in the Hall, whether they desired any other Candidate, — the Negative was given with one common Assent, which communicated without Interruption, from Man to Man, to *Charing-Cross*. — So that the Voice of the People never yet

con-

## 464 *A Genealogical History*

concurrent in so high a Degree, in the Election of any Representative, from the Time that Parliaments have been a Part of the Constitution of this Kingdom.

IN this eminent and glorious Situation of a Representative of the second City, and first Borough of this Kingdom, elected with such Circumstances of public Esteem and Confidence, we for the present leave this Nobleman, exerting himself, to maintain the Independency of his Country, of which no Man can, or ought to have a dearer Sense, since no Man ever received more Honour from it than he has done.

To adhere to that Plan which we have hitherto pursued in this Work, we shall close this Chapter with a short Account of the Descent of the Lady *Catherine Cecil*, Wife of the said Lord Viscount *Perceval*.

OF this Great Family the less is necessary to be said in this Place, as the Accounts of it are given with those of the present Nobility of *England*, among whom it has the Rank of the seventh Earl.

IT will be sufficient therefore to observe, that it is descended from Sir *Robert Cecil*, second Son to that great Statesman Sir *William Cecil*, Baron of *Burleigh*, Lord High Treasurer, and first Minister to Queen *Elizabeth*, during the greatest Part of her glorious Reign.—Which Sir *Robert Cecil*, being not inferior to his Father in Abilities, enjoyed the same Post under King *James* the First, by whom he was dignified with the Title of Earl of *Salisbury*, upon the fourth of *May*, 1605.—By his Wife *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *William Brook*, Lord *Cobham*, he left a Son *William*, who succeeded to his Honours; and by *Katherine*, Daughter of *Thomas Howard*, Earl of *Suffolk*, had a Son *Charles*, Viscount *Cranburn*, who, dying in the Life-time of his Father, left by *Joan* his Wife, Daughter and Coheir of *James Maxwell*, Earl of *Dirleton* in *Scotland*, a Son *James*, who was Earl of *Salisbury* after the Death of his Grandfather, who died the third of *December*, 1688.—This *James* married *Margaret*,  
Daugh-

Daughter of *John Manners*, Earl of Rutland, and, dying in 1683, was succeeded by his eldest Son, *James* Earl of *Salisbury*, (second of that Name,) who, dying in 1694, left by *Frances* his Wife, Daughter and Coheir of *Simon Bennet* of *Beechampton*, in the County of *Bucks*, Esquire, a Son *James*, Earl of *Salisbury*, (third of that Name,) who, on the twelfth of *February*, 1708-9, was married to the Lady *Anne Tufton*, second Daughter and Coheir of *Thomas* Earl of *Thanet*, before-mentioned, by whom (dying on the ninth of *October*, 1728) he left two Sons, the eldest also named *James*, (the fourth of that Name) now Earl of *Salisbury*, *William*, who died without Issue, in *May*, 1740; and three Daughters, the Lady *Anne*, the Wife of *William Strode*, Esquire; the Lady *Katherine*, the Wife of *John* Lord Viscount *Perceval*, of whom we here treat; and the Lady *Margaret*, as yet unmarried.

THIS Family has not only been dignified with the greatest Employments of the Realm, and allied with the noblest Families of *England*, but is descended also several times from different Branches of the Royal Family, as may be seen particularly in the seventh Chapter of the first Book of this Work.

CHILDREN of JOHN Lord Viscount *Perceval*, (tenth of that Name,) and of the Lady *Katherine Cecil*, his Wife.

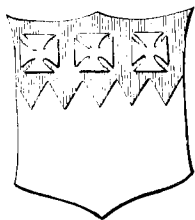
I. JOHN-JAMES PERCEVAL, eldest Son, born in *Pall-Mall, Westminster, January 29, 1737-8*; of whom in the next Chapter.

II. CECIL-PARKER PERCEVAL, was born upon *Friday* the nineteenth of *October, 1739*, at half an Hour after Nine in the Morning, in his Father's House in *Pall-Mall*. Upon the first of *November* following, he was christened by Dr. *Philip Bearcroft*, Chaplain to His Majesty, and Preacher to the *Charter House*. His Sureties were the Honourable *William Cecil*, Esquire, his Mother's Brother; Sir *Philip Parker a Morley Long*, Baronet, Brother to the Countess of *Egmont*, his Grandmother; who was the third Sponsor.

III. PHILIP-TUFTON PERCEVAL, was born upon *Wednesday* the tenth of *March, 1741-2*, at his Father's House in *Westminster*, between the Hours of five and six in the Morning; he was baptized on the *Friday* following; and is now living, *April 28, 1742*.—His Sureties at Baptism were *Thomas Tufton*, Earl of *Thanet*; Sir *John Rawdon*, Baronet, his Uncle; and *Margaret Tufton*, Baroness of *Clifford*, (Wife of the Lord *Lovel*;) his great Aunt.

C H A P. XV.

JOHN-JAMES PERCEVAL,  
(*the Eleventh of that Name*) eldest Son  
and Heir Apparent of John, Lord  
Viscount Perceval.



**T**HIS young Nobleman was born (somewhat more than eleven Months after his Father's Marriage) at his Father's House in *Pall-Mall* in *London*, upon *Sunday* the twenty-ninth of *January*, 1737-8. — Upon *Wednesday* the sixteenth of *February* following, he was christened by Doctor *Secker*, Bishop of *Oxford*, (*John* Earl of *Egmont*, his Grandfather, *James* Earl of *Salisbury*, his Uncle, and *Anne* Countess of *Salisbury*, his Grandmother, being his Sureties) receiving a double Name, from his two Godfathers before-mentioned.

HE is the twenty-second in a direct Male-Line from *Robert*, Lord of *Breberval* and *Yvery*, who was the  
Founder

## 468 *A Genealogical History*

Founder of this Family in *England*, coming over with the Conqueror in 1066; and the eleventh of the Name of *John*, who have been by Primogeniture entitled to the Inheritance of this Noble Family, since that Period. ——— Born with this Omen of singular Felicity, that he is the first of this House, for the Space of three hundred Years, who came into the World during the Life-time of his Grandfather.

AND now, having proceeded as far, with regard to this Line, as the Nature of the Thing may well for the present bear, we shall only add this farther Observation :

SIR *William Dugdale* has remarked, in his Preface to the first Volume of his *Baronage*, That out of two hundred and seventy noble Families of which he has treated in that Work, he could find but twenty-four which then existed, descended by any collateral Branch in the Male Line from any of the ancient Barons therein mentioned. ——— Since that Time, which is now near seventy Years ago, many even of that small Number are undoubtedly extinct. ——— This Circumstance may therefore serve as a final Conclusion to our Demonstration of the Eminence of this Noble Family, so clearly and indisputably proved to be descended from one of the greatest Houses of the ancient Peerage.

STOP therefore here, you who may be concerned by Blood in this Deduction. ——— Seriously, gratefully, and modestly reflect on this Advantage ——— Render Thanks to Providence, for a Favour permitted to you, and permitted to so very few. ——— Pray for the Continuance of this Distinction, ——— and that you may use it well. ——— Know, that it is a Blessing, which you can never hope to secure, but by a steady Perseverance in the Ways of Honour and unaffected Virtue. ——— Upon this Foundation build your Grandeur, which we may prophetically pronounce shall then know no Limits

mits, and shall endure for ever. — As for us, it has been our chief View in this laborious Undertaking, to raise and to invigorate such Sentiments as these, in you and your Posterity. If therefore, by a future Vanity in any of your Race, this Work should be perverted from its intended Benefit to the Public and to you, we have done our Duty, and we hold ourselves not bound to answer for the sad Abuse.

*Posteris an aliqua cura nostri nescio. — Nos certè meremur ut sit aliqua. Non dico ingenio ; id enim superbum : sed studio, sed labore, sed reverentiâ posterum.*

Plin. Epist.





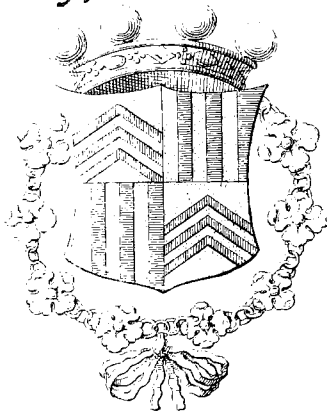




A  
Genealogical History  
OF THE  
HOUSE of *YVERY*;  
In its Different BRANCHES of  
YVERY, LUVEL, PERCEVAL,  
*and* GOURNAY.

B O O K VII.

CONTAINING  
The Descents of the Barons of *Har-*  
*petrè-Gournay*, also Barons of *Guienne*.



FUERUNT.





TABLE to Book VII. Containing the Genealogy of  
Branch of the House

ASCELINUS GOUELLUS DE PERCEVAL, Earl of *Ycery* in Normandy  
and Baron of *Kary* in England.

JOHN, surnamed *de Harpetre*, Lord of *Ferretre* and

WILLIAM, Son of *John de Harpetre*

JOHN DE HARPETRE

JOHN DE HARPETRE,  
*ob. f. p.*

WILLIAM, Son of *John de Harpetre*, and Brother of *John*  
*ob. 16 Hen. III.*

PAGANUS, Son of  
*William.*

1 THOMAS, Son of  
*William.*

EVA, Daughter and Heir of  
surnamed *de Gam.*

ROBERT, surnamed *de Gournay*, sup. 9 Hen. III. *ob. 53 Hen.*

JOHN DE GOURNAY, *ob. f. p.*

ANSELM DE GOURNAY, *ob. 14 Ed. I.*

OLIVA, Daughter of *Henry Luvel*,  
Baron of *Kary*.

JOHN DE GOURNAY,  
Baron, *ob. 19 Ed. I.*

THOMAS DE GOURNAY,  
and *Westbarpetre*, by

ELIZABETH DE GOURNAY, Daughter and  
Heir, Wife of *John ap Adam*.

THOMAS DE GOURNAY, Kn. beh  
on account of the Murder of *Edward*.

THOMAS AP  
ADAM, mar-  
ried *Joan*, D<sup>r</sup>  
of Sir *John*  
*Inge* and *Alice*  
*Basset*—both died, *f. p.*

1 THOMAS DE  
GOURNAY,  
*ob. inter 8 &*  
*13 Edw. III.*

2 JOHN DE GOUR-  
NAY, de *Knolle*,  
*ob. f. p.*

3 GEORGE DE  
GOURNAY,  
*ob. f. p.*

MATHEW  
*ob. f. p.*  
Wife—  
(*a. p. p.*)  
of *Bourne*

THOMAS DE GOURNAY, *stat.*  
*annor. 21.—13 Edw. III. ob. f. p.*

ELIZA, Daughter and Heir of *Richard*  
de *Counteville*, Lord of *Arwarton*.

THOMAS DE  
of *Downey*

GEORGE DE LA MORE, or *Birkmore*, Lord of *Nailjay*, in *Co. S.*

See this Descent continued through *de la More* to the Earl of *Eg.*

...y of the House of *Harpetre-Gournay*, a younger  
House of *Yvery*.

...in Normandy, = ISABELLA, natural Daughter of *William*,  
Earl of *Bretcuil*.

...enton and *Harpetre*, by Gift of his Father.

... John de *Harpetre*.

...ARPETRE.

...her of *John*, = MAUD, Daughter and Heir of ----- *Orescuilz*. She was  
Lady of *Cernecote*, in *Com. Wilts*.

... Heir of *Robert de Berkeley*, Sister and Heir of *Maurice de Berkeley*,  
of *Gant*. See Book VI. Chap. 3. for the Descent of *Gaunt*.

...3 Hen. III. a Baron. = HAWISA DE LONGCHAMP.

...d. I. a Baron. = SIBILLA, Daughter of *Hugh de Byvun*, or de *Vivoun*.

...GOURNAY, Lord of *Inglefcomb*  
... by Gift of his Father.

ROBERT DE GOURNAY, Lord of *Overwere*, sup. 25 Ed. I. = MARGA-  
RETTA.

...nt. beheaded = JOANNA.  
... Edw. II.

ANSELM DE GOURNAY, = CHRISTIANA.  
the Father.

4  
MATHÆUS DE GOURNAY, Baron of *Guienne*,  
ob. f. p. A. D. 1406, æt. 96, married two  
Wives.—(i.) *Alicia*, Sister of *Thomas*, Earl of  
*Warwick*, Relict of *John Beauchamp de Hache*.  
(2.) *Philippa*, Sister and Coheir of *John Talbot*,  
of *Ricards Castle*.

ANSELM DE = JOHANNA,  
GOURNAY  
LE FITZ.

THOMAS DE GOURNAY, Lord of *Overwere*, sup. 10 Ric. II. = ALIANORA, second Wife, re-  
married to *Richard Power*, f. p.

ROBERT DE  
GOURNAY.  
ob. f. p.

...in *Com. Somf.* = JOAN DE GOURNAY, Daughter and Heir.

... Earl of *Egmont*—Vol. II. among the Pedigrees of the third Chapter, Book VI.





---

---

A  
Genealogical History  
OF THE  
HOUSE of YVERY, &c.

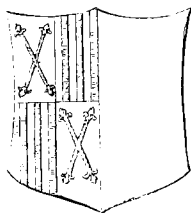
---

BOOK VII.

---

CHAP. I.

JOHN DE YVERY, *or* DE  
PERCEVAL, *Baron of Harpetrè,*  
*Lord of Farringdon, &c.*



**T**HE Accounts of this Great Family of *Gournay*, having hitherto been as erroneous as any of the whole Baronage, we shall deduce this Family with particular Care, verifying the Alterations necessary to be made in the De-

VOL. II. P P P scet.

scient thereof, with the strongest Authority of Record. ——— And to this the Inducement is the greater, as it is derived in the Male Line from a younger Branch of the House of *Yvery*, which is the principal Object of this Work. A Discovery which has escaped the Notice of all the Genealogists who have hitherto written concerning this Family.

BUT we are regularly, first, to enter somewhat into the Accounts of that Family of *Gournay*, which first assumed that Surname, and from which it was adopted into that Line of the House of *Yvery*; which is necessary, not only out of Respect to so great a Name, but to clear the Course of the Descent with the greater Perspicuity.

\* THE first of this eminent House that we have yet recovered, was that *Hugh de Gorniac*, or *Gornay*, with whom Sir *William Dugdale* begins. ——— Who in that notable Fight which happened between the Forces of *William Duke of Normandy* (afterwards King of *England*, by the Name of *William the Conqueror*) and those of *Henry* then King of *France*, in that Part called *Gallia Belgica*, lying between the Rivers *Rhene* and *Sene*, where the *French* were totally routed, Mention is made of the Valour of *Hugh de Gournay*; which *Hugh*, after the Duke was advanced to the Throne of this Realm, was a Witness to his Foundation of the Abbey of *St. Stephen* at *Caen*, and gave to the Monks of *Bec*, the Tythes of his Provostship, and Portion in *Estocke* in that Dukedom. Moreover, by the Consent of *Girard* and *Hugh*, his Sons, he founded the Abbey of *Goiffa-Fontane* near *Alnev*. ——— Furthermore, at the Time of the General Survey, he possessed those Lordships, lying in *Essex*, within this Realm, viz. *Listune*, *Earley*, and *Forbam*; and afterwards became a Monk of the Abbey of *Bee*.

† AT what Time he died we cannot exactly affirm, but certain it is, that by *Besil*, the Daughter of *Giraldus*

---

\* Dugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Gournay.

† Ibid.

us Flatellus, and Widow of Ralf de Wacey, he left Girald de Gournay, his Son and Heir.

\* WHICH Girald being a Person of great Power, in 1089 (the second of William Rufus) stoutly adhered to King William Rufus, against Robert Curthose, Duke of Normandy (his elder Brother) giving up his Castle of Gurnay, and other strong Holds, into his Hands, and endeavouring to reduce all the adjacent Places to his Obedience. Howbeit, after this, viz. in anno 1096, Duke Robert, for ten thousand Marks of Silver, delivering up Normandy unto Rufus, and thereupon travelling into the Holy Land; this Girald with Edith his Wife, Sister to William Earl Warren, and many other eminent Persons accompanied him; but in this Journey he died, his Wife surviving him, who afterwards married Dru de Monceaux.

† To whom succeeded Hugh his Son and Heir; which Hugh, notwithstanding the great Favours he received from King Henry the First, who took Care of his Education, as of his own Son, disciplining him in military Exercises, restoring him to his Father's Honour, which Dru de Monceaux (his Mother's Husband) had possessed, and advancing him among his chief Nobles. In Anno 1184, (the thirtieth of Henry the First) he joined with Stephen Earl of Albemarle, and divers others, against that King, and endeavouring to advance William, Son of Robert Curthose, Duke of Normandy, to the Throne of this Realm, manned his Castle of Gurnay, with other Places of Strength, against him: moreover, he surprized the Castle of Plessy, and committed it to the Custody of Hugh de Talebot, his Nephew; and in Anno 1137, (the second of King Stephen) when divers of the great Men in Normandy, instigated by the French and Flemings, deserted King Stephen, whereupon the King marched to Lisear, purposing to besiege Geffry of Anjou at Argentoile, or some other Place, there happening such a Mutiny in his Army, as

P p p 2 that

---

\* Dugdale's Baronage, sub tit. Gournay.

† Ibid

476 *A Genealogical History*

that divers forsook him, he followed some of them to *Pont-Audomare*, and there took this *Hugh de Gournay*, with several other stout young Men, whom partly by good Words, and partly by Threats, he endeavoured to reconcile; but failing therein, he concluded a Truce with the Enemy for two Years. Howbeit sometime afterwards, *viz.* in 1151, (the sixteenth of King *Stephen*) favouring the Party of King *Stephen*, against *Henry* Duke of *Normandy*, he admitted the Duke's Enemies into his Castle of *Gurnay*. Furthermore, in *Anno* 1173, (the nineteenth of *Henry* the Second) upon that Rebellion of young *Henry* against the King his Father, he, as also *Hugh* his Son, (with eighty of their Soldiers,) were taken Prisoners by young *Henry*, who burned that Castle in *Normandy*, which he then held.

———— \* Lastly, having married the Sister of *Ralf de Perrone*, Earl of *Vermandois*, he died in the thirty-first of *Henry* the Second, as it seems, for then did *Hugh de Gournay* his Son give a hundred Pounds for his Relief.

† WHICH last mentioned *Hugh*, in the third of *Richard* the First, was at the Siege of *Acon*, in the Holy Land; where, upon the taking thereof, an equal Partition being made on the Part of King *Richard* and the King of *France*, *Dru de Marlow*, with an hundred Soldiers, took Charge of that half Part which belonged to the King of *France*, — and this *Hugh de Gournay* of that other Half, appertaining to King *Richard*.

§ IN the fourth of King *John*, *Robert de Vipont* received Commands to deliver unto him all the Prisoners which were taken in the Wars of *France*, except those which *Martin Algies* took.

|| IN *Anno* 1203, (the fifth of King *John*) this *Hugh*, observing that King *John* devoted himself wholly to  
Lux-

\* See *Miscellanea B. 2.* in *Officio Armor.* Lond. by *Glover*, *Somerfet*; from whence are taken all the Corrections and Additions, by which this Account of the first Family of *Gournay* differs from *Dugdale*.

† *Dugdale's Baronage.*

§ *Ibid.* † *Ibid.*

of the House of YVERY, &c. 477

Luxury, whereby the King of *France* got much Advantage for Recovery of *Normandy*, he gave up the Castle of *Montford* to the *French*, whereupon many others forfook him, so that *Roan* was soon after lost.

\* IN the twelfth of the same Reign, this *Hugh* paid a Fine to the King, of seven hundred Marks for the Manor of *Wendover*, in the County of *Bucks*, and that he might not be disseised thereof, but by Judgment of the King's Courts. ——— And in the fifteenth of the same Reign, obtained the Honour of *Wberwelton*, in *Com. Ebor.* by the Gift of that King. Moreover, the same Year he attended the King into *Poitou*; and in the sixteenth of the same Reign, was made Sheriff of the Counties of *Buckingham* and *Bedford*: in which Year, discerning himself infirm, he procured the King to take the Homage of *Girard* his Son and Heir, but not to dispossess himself of his Lands during his own Life. ——— Shortly after which, he took part with the rebellious Barons, as it seems, for in the eighteenth of the same Reign, the King disposed of his Manor of *Wendover* to *William de Fednes* (*i. e. Fienes*;) and in the second of *Henry* the Third, *William de Cantilupe* obtained all his Lands in *Lincolnshire*, which were then in the Hands of *Hugh de Gurney*, his Son. But in the sixth of *Henry* the Third he died, for then did the King direct his Precept to restore unto *Hugh* his Son, whom he had by his Wife *Lucy*, the † Widow of *Robert de Berkeley*, (*Girard* being dead as it seems) all the Lands of his Inheritance then in his Custody. The like Command had the Sheriff of *Norfolk*, for all his Lands in that County.

‡ WHICH *Hugh*, the Son of *Hugh* and *Lucy* before-mentioned, highly incurring the King's Displeasure, for being in that Tournament at *Blyth* in the County of *Nottingham*, in the seventh of *Henry* the Third,

CON-

---

\* Dugdale's Baronage.

† This Marriage appears misplaced in Sir William Dugdale, and is corrected by Glover's MSS. and a Comparison of Dates.

‡ Dugdale's Baronage.

contrary to his Prohibition, the Sheriffs of *Warwick*, *Leicester*, and *Gloucester*, had Commands to seize all his Lands in those Counties.——Nor was this all, for in the same Year he boldly presumed to hunt with Hound and Horn for the Space of three Days, in the King's Chace at *Bristol*, without Leave, and contrary to the Command of the Forresters; whereupon the Constable of the Castle of *Bristol* was required to seize all his Lands, Goods and Chattles within his Liberty.——But after this, we have not seen any more of him, than that he married *Julian*, the Sister of *Reginald*, Count of *Bologne*, who deceased before him, by whom he had a Daughter *Julian*; and dying the twenty-second of *Henry* the Third, left *Maud*, his second Wife, surviving, then with Child: whereupon *William de Cantelupe* gave five hundred Marks Fine for the Wardship of *Julian*, his Daughter and Heir, and Custody of her Lands, and also of the Child unborn, wherewith his Widow *Maud* did then travail: which *Julian* became the Wife of *William Bardulf*.

\* BEFORE we continue the Story of this great House, it will not be improper to mention that Family of the same Name in *Norfolk*, and doubtless of the same Stock, of which was *Matthew de Gournay*, in the Time of *Henry* the First; which *Matthew* had two Sons, *Thomas*, and *William*; which *William* had a Son named *John de Gournay*, who in the third of King *Edward* the First had a Suit with the Prior of *Lewes*, for the Right of Presentation to the Church of *Harpeli*, in the same County of *Norfolk*; whereupon a Trial by Battle was appointed, and the said *John de Gournay* and the Prior came armed into the Field, where the Prior yielded full Seizin of the said Advowson, to the said *John de Gournay*, for himself and his Successors for ever.——But of this Line there is nothing farther known.

WE

---

\* Placit. de Banco, Norfolk, 3 Edw. I. de Ecclesia de Harpeli.

\* WE should next come to speak of *Robert de Gournay*, the Father of *Hathewisa de Gournay*, by whom the Manor of *Barewe, Gournay, and Clivevere*, came to the House of *Gournay*, of whom we shall come presently to speak.— And also on whose Account the Name of *Gournay* came to be taken up by that Family.— But it has been as yet impossible, with that Perspicuity we could wish to join those Links by which this Line was connected to the first Branch, of which we have already spoken, or to give an absolute Proof of the Descent from that Lady.

WE shall now enter upon our Discourse, with respect to that House of *Gournay* which, after the Failure of the former, were Barons of mighty Eminence, and vast Possessions, who from the Change that happened in their Surname, have hitherto been so far mistaken, that their Origine has been wholly confounded, and that even the best Genealogists have been guilty of no less an Error in the Descent, than in the Creation of two Families out of this one, and of two Baronies, out of that which in Truth was one; † Sir *William Dugdale* himself having been led to believe that the Barons of *Harpetré* and *Gournay* were distinct, which, by the Authorities we shall hereafter offer, are proved to be the same.— And even *Camden* himself has fallen into this Mistake.

THIS House seems indisputably descended from *John*, a younger Son of *Ascelin Gouel de Percheval*, Earl of *Yvery* in *Normandy*, the common Ancestor of *Yvery, Luvel, and Percheval*; for, so early as the Year 1138, the Son of that *John* was possessed of *Harpetré*, in the County of *Somerset*, (which was the Estate of the said † *Ascelin*, who was living in the Year 1119,) and having

---

\* See *Madox Formulæ Anglicæ*.

† Compare *Dugdale's Baronage*, sub tit. *Gournay & Harpetree*.

‡ *Orderic. Vital.* also *Doomsday-Book*, *Somf.*



480 *A Genealogical History*

\* having a Castle there, took part with *William Gouel de Perceval*, furnamed *Luwel*, who was Son to the said *Ascelin*, against King *Stephen*, as we shall shew in the next Chapter. ——— *Ferenton*, likewise another Part of the Estate of the said *Ascelin*, appears very soon afterwards to be the Inheritance of this Line; and *West-Harpetré* was likewise held by them, of the Barons *Luwel* of *Kary*; which is a farther Confirmation of this Descent, for it was the general Custom of the early Ages to grant the Appenages, or Provisions of the younger Children, by Charter, to hold of the Estate of the elder, who was constantly left, by that Tenure the capital Lord of the Fee.

THERE is no doubt, therefore, to be made, by those who are acquainted with the Customs of this Antiquity, and the Force of these Circumstances we have mentioned, that among the numerous Issue of *Ascelin Gouel de Percheval*, and *Isabella de Breteuil*, his Wife, this *John*, the Founder of the House of *Harpetré-Gournay*, was one; and that he received from his Father, during his Life, the Lordship of *Arpetree* and *Ferenton*, in the County of *Somerset*.

WHETHER it was himself, or his Son, we cannot say, that built the Castle there, but *Harpetree* became the Seat of this Line, and from thence they received the first Name by which they are known in History, though they did not keep it long, changing it for that of *Gournay*, as we shall shew hereafter.

ISSUE of *JOHN DE YVERY*, furnamed *de Harpetree*, or *Arpetree*, the first of that Name.

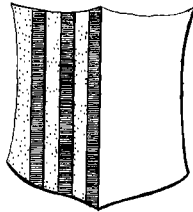
*WILLIAM DE HARPETREE*, Lord of *Harpetree*; of whom in the next Chapter.

---

\* *Gesta Regis Stephani*, fol. 942.

CHAP. II.

WILLIAM DE HARPETRE,  
*Baron of Harpetre.*



**T**HIS *William*, (the Son of *John*) and Grandson of *Ascelin de Perceval*, Earl of *Yvery*, had already succeeded to his Father's Estate in *A. D. 1138* \* ; for upon the Rebellion of the Barons against King *Stephen* in that Year, *William de Mobun*, Lord of *Dunster*, and *William Gouel de Perceval*, surnamed *Luvet*, together with *Ralf Luvet* †, his Son, surnamed *Simelt*, and others of the Nobility of that Age, having fortified and manned their Castles, as we have shewn in the third Chapter of the second Book of this Work, this *William* §, stiled by the Name of *William*, the Son of *John*, fortified

---

\* Orderic. Vital. Hist. Ecclesiast. Norman. fol. 917. A. D. 1138.

† Chron. Norman. inter Normann. Scriptores, fol. 977, A. D.

1139.

§ Gesta Regis Stephani inter Normann. Scriptores, per du Chesne, fol. 942.

fortified his Castle of *Harpetre*, and, in Conjunction with his Uncle, the said *William Gouel de Perceval*, (who had put his Castle of *Karith* or *Kari* in the same Condition of Defence) strenuously opposed that Prince, being firmly attached by the strongest Ties of Friendship, to the Count \**Henry Plantagenet*, Earl of *Anjou*, afterwards King of *England*, by the Name of *Henry* the Second, to whom they had plighted their Faith, and bound themselves by Oath, and entered into solema Engagements †, that whenever he should attempt the Royal Dignity, they would take up Arms in his Favour. — ‡ Nor were they false to their Promises, for upon the Commencement of that Quarrel, they engaged on that Side, and so ravaged the adjacent Country, the Plunder of which they carried away with them to the two adjacent Castles of *Kari* and *Harpetre*, that the King, who had undertaken the Siege of *Bristol*, found it difficult to maintain himself in those Quarters; and therefore, desisting from that Intention, he turned his Force first against the Castle of *Kary* §, which having battered with incredible Fury for a long time, and the Garrison being reduced to great Necessity for want of Provision ||, and finding also that neither the Earl of *Anjou* came from abroad to their Assistance, nor their Allies from *Bristol* could force their way to their Relief, the Place was at length surrendered upon honourable Terms of Peace and Alliance. ||| But the Castle of *Harpetre* fared worse, for the King having converted the Siege into a Blockade, as apprehending it a Work of too much Labour and Expence, and resolving to attack the Place in another Form, drew off the greatest Part of his Forces, committing that Service to the Troops then in Garrison at *Bath*, as lying at no great Distance from it. — Not long after which, with a vast Army marching near this Castle in his Way to *Bristol*, which he again pretended to besiege, the Garrison made a Sally to attack the Rear, but the King observing by their

---

\* *Gesta Regis Stephani*, ut supra.

† *Ibid.*

‡ *Ibid.*

§ *Ibid.*

|| *Ibid.*

||| *Ibid.*

their Numbers, that the Place was left with a very small Guard, advanced with the utmost Haste at the Head of his Cavalry, and arriving there before the Garrison could make their Retreat, he applied Fire to the Gates, and Scaling Ladders to the Walls; and thus, in a very short time, took the Place by Assault, and left a Body of his own Troops in it.

THE Name of *William* being common, both as to this *William*, and to another of the same Family, who lived not long after, we are not positively sure as to our Application of the Records in which they are mentioned; but it is a Circumstance which can create no material Difference in the Descent, and we have Reason from the early Date to believe, that it was this the first *William de Harpetree*, who, in the Twelfth of \* King *Henry* the Second, *A. D.* 1166, upon the Aid levied for marrying the King's Daughter, certified by the Name of *William*, the Son of *John de Harpetree*, that he held thirteen Knights Fees and one half, and the fourth Part of one Knight's Fee, in the following Words:

“ † I *William*, the Son of *John de Harpetree*, hold  
 “ of the Honour, which was of *Batteton*, in capite of  
 “ the King, thirteen Knights Fees and one half, and  
 “ the fourth Part of one Knight's Fee, that is to  
 “ say,  
 “ *Richard*, the Son of *Alice Flaming*, seven Knights  
 “ Fees;—*William*, the Son of *Hugb*, two Knights  
 “ Fees one half and a fourth Part;—*Robert de Mor-*  
 “ *sel*, two Knights Fees. ——— Two Parts of one  
 “ Knight's Fee, which I had in Demefne, I gave in  
 “ Marriage with my Daughter to *Roger Balun* [*Bacun*]  
 “ —and to *William*, the Son of *Stephen*, a third Part;  
 “ —and I am to do Service for one half of a Fee.

Q q q 2

“ I

---

\* Liber Rub. Scaccarii.

† Ibid.

484 *A Genealogical History*

“ I gave also to *Robert de Ferenton* half of one  
 “ Knight’s Fee ;—and I hold at *Harpetree* of the Fee  
 “ of *Mountacute*, of the late Earl *Moreton*, one  
 “ Knight’s Fee, by the same Service, which other  
 “ Barons pay who hold of the same Honour.

“ I hold *Reddon* also of the King, which is one  
 “ Knight’s Fee.—The Service of which is with-  
 “ held from me by *Richard de Reddon*, who says, that  
 “ he owes me no Service of the Fee of the Earl of  
 “ *Moreton*”.

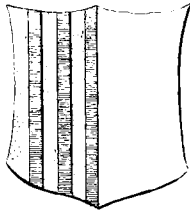
\*NEXT after this follows the Certificate of *William*,  
 the Son of *John*, which consisted of seven Fees of the  
 Honour of *Moreton*—which we mention here as a  
 Matter deserving farther Enquiry, being uncertain our-  
 selves who this *William*, the Son of *John*, might be,  
 hardly believing him to be the same Person with the  
 last, to whom, however, we presume that he was  
 nearly related.

ISSUE of *WILLIAM*, Son of *John de*  
*Harpetree*.

*JOHN DE HARPETREE*, Baron of  
*Harpetree* ; of whom in the next Chapter.

\* Liber Rub. Scaccarii.

CHAP. III.  
JOHN DE HARPETREE,  
*Baron of Harpetree.*



ALL that we have to say of this Person is, that he continued this Line, for his Son being called *William*\*, the Son of *John*, ascertains his Descent and Existence, and fixes his Place in this Family; but we have no other Authorities that relate to him.

CHILDREN of JOHN DE HARPETREE, Baron of *Harpetree*, second of that Name.

I. † *WILLIAM DE HARPETREE*, Baron of *Harpetree*, eldest Son and Heir; of whom in the next Chapter.

II. § *JOHN DE HARPETREE*, Brother of *William* the Grandfather of *Robert de Gournay*.

---

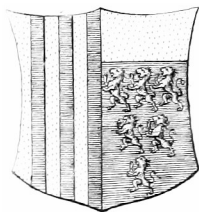
\* Rot. Fin. 16 Hen. III. m. 3.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

---

C H A P. IV.  
WILLIAM DE HARPETREE,  
*Baron of Harpetree.*



**T**HIS *William*\*, the Son of *John de Harpetree*, (and not *William*, the Son of *William*, as Sir *William Dugdale* recites) in the Twenty-second of *Henry* the Second †, paid a Fine of an hundred Pounds for trespassing in the King's Forests of *Dorsetshire*; and in the Sixth of *Richard* the First, gave an hundred Marks to make his Peace with that King, so that he might repossess his Lands lying in the Counties of *Dorset*, *Somerset*, *Gloucester*, and *Devon* ‡; and in the next ensuing Year he paid fifty Marks for the Lordship of *Barewe* [*Berwick*] which was of the Inheritance of his Son's Wife, being part of the Lands of *Robert Fitzbarding*, (that is to say, as appears from  
comparing

---

\* Rot. Fin. 16 Hen. III. ut supra.

† Vide Dugdale, sub tit. Harpetree.

‡ Ibid.

comparing the Records) the Manor of *Barewe*, which belonged to *Hawisa de Gournay*, which descended by Inheritance to *Eva*, (Sister of *Morris*, surnamed *De Gant*.) Grand-daughter and Heir of the said *Robert Fitzbarding*, and Wife of *Thomas de Harpetree*, Son of the said *William*; for farther Satisfaction in which, the Reader is desired to look back upon the Descent of *Gant*.

† In the Eighth of *Henry* the Third, this *William*, the Son of *John de Harpetree*, gave a Fine of two hundred and eighty Marks for the Wardship of the Heir of *William de Carrio*; and in the \* Year next ensuing, by a Fine levied in Hilary Term (*Thomas* his Son being then deceased, as it should seem) he the said *William*, the Son of *John* being Plaintiff, and *Robert* (then surnamed *De Gournay*) his Grandson Deforciant, acknowledged the Manor of *Ferrenton*, in the County of *Somerset*, and all the Lands and Tenements which he held as of his own Inheritance, or of that of *Maud* his Wife, to be the Right of the said *Robert*, as Son of *Thomas*, eldest Son of the said *William* and *Maud*, to which *Thomas*, and *Eva* his Wife (*Robert's* Mother) and to the Heirs of their joint Bodies, the said *William* had formerly granted the said Lands; and thereupon the said *Robert de Gournay* regrants to his said Grandfather *William*, all the Premisses for Term of his Life, and also Lands to the Value of fifteen Pounds *per Annum*, Parcel thereof to him and his Heirs in Fee, the Reversion of the rest of the Premisses to the said *Robert* and his Heirs in Fee.

§ By the same Fine also *Pagan*, the Son of the said *William (de Harpetree)* and Brother to *Thomas*, Father of the said *Robert de Gournay*, releases and quits Claim as to his Right to any of the Lands of the said *William* and *Maud* (his Grandfather and Grandmother) either in *England*, *Ireland*, or *Normandy*; and thereupon

---

† Dugdale, ut supra.

† Fin. divers. Comit. levat. 9 Hen. III. Hill. no. 36.

§ Ibid.



upon, in Consideration thereof, the said *William* and *Robert* grant Lands to the Value of twenty Pounds *per Annum*, Parcel of the Premises in *Edmondesham*, *Studdon*, and *Stures*, in the County of *Gloucester*, and in *Sandford*, in the County of *Somerset*; and the Homages and Services of *Michael de Baggenore*, and his Heirs in *Baggenore* and *Colemeſe*, and of *Hugh de Cumbe*, and his Heirs in *Cumbe*, and of *Walter de Loddresford*, and his Heirs in *Loddresford*, to be held by the said *Pagan* and his Heirs, after the Death of the said *William* his Father of the said *Robert* and his Heirs, by the Service of three Knights Fees.

OF this *William*, the Son of *John de Harpetree*, there is little farther necessary to be said, but that he married † *Maud Orescuilz*, a *Norman Lady*, who was a Coheireſs with *Alice Orescuilz*, her Sister, and made Partition of her Inheritance by Fine in the Tenth of *Richard* the Firſt; whereupon the said *William* obtained half a Knight's Fee, with its Appurtenances, in *Cernecote* in *England*, reſerving ſtill to *Maud* her Preſentions as the eldeſt Coheir.

THIS *William* died in the Sixteenth of the Reign of King *Henry* the Third, when *Robert*, ſurnamed *De Gournay*, his Grandſon, did his Homage\*, and paid his Relief for half of one Knight's Fee, which the said *William*, there called the Brother of the said *John de Harpetree*, held in capite of the Crown in *Harpetree*, in the County of *Somerset*.

## CHIL-

† Fine levied at Wincheſter, A<sup>o</sup> Ricardi I. 10<sup>m</sup>.

\* Note, That this Record of Homage being miſtaken by Sir *William Dugdale*, has been the Occaſion of his creating two Baronies of one.—See both under the Head of *Gournay* and *Harpetree* in his Baronage, how he has falſified this Record of Homage, of which we have examined the Original in the Tower of London.—Rot. Fin. 16 Hen. III. m. 3.

CHILDREN of *WILLIAM DE HARPETREE*, second of that Name, and of *Maud Orescuilz*, his Wife.

I. § *THOMAS*, the eldest Son of *William*, of whom in the next Chapter.

II. \* *Pagan*, upon whom was settled, by the Fine above-mentioned, of the ninth of *Henry* the Third, by Consent of his Father *William*, and Nephew *Robert de Gournay*, three Knights Fees in *Edmondesham*, *Studdon*, and *Stures*, in the County of *Gloucester*, and in *Sandford*, in the County of *Somerset*, with the Homages and Services of *Michael de Bagganore*, in *Bagganore* and *Colemere*, and of *Hugh de Cumbe*, in *Cumbe*, and of *Walter de Loddresford*, in *Loddresford*, to be held after the Death of *William* his Father, of his Nephew, *Robert de Gournay*, by the Service of three Knights Fees.

OF the Issue of this Man we can give no certain Account.

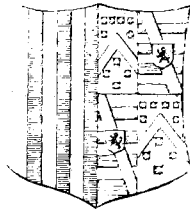
III. *WILLIAM*, a younger Son of *William de Harpetree*. It appears by Record, that in the Third of *John* he paid a Fine of five Marks to the King, for Leave to make Inquisition, whether *Walter*, the Son of *Thomas* (which *Walter* was Nephew to the said *William*) had ten Pounds of annual Rents in *West-Harpetree* and *Porteshead*, which he had given to him by his Deed, because that the Condition of the said Deed (confirmed in the King's Grant) was, that as on the one hand, if the Gift did not amount to so much, the said *William* was to make it good, so on the other hand, the said *Walter* was obliged to return the Overplus if such there should be found to be.

---

§ See Fine divers. Comit. 9 Hen. III. ut supra.

\* Ibid.

## C H A P. V.

T H O M A S, *the Son of William de Harpetré, Lord of Harpetré.*

**T**HE first Notice we find of *Thomas*, the eldest Son of *William de Harpetre*, and of *Maud Orescuilz*, his Wife, is in the Book of *Bermondsey*\*, in which he is said to have been a Witness, in Conjunction with *Eva*, called *de Gournay*, his Wife, Sister to *Maurice de Gaunt*, and with *Robert*, his Son and Heir, by his said Wife *Eva*, to the Grant which *Hawisa de Gournay* then made, in Conjunction with *Roger de Baalun* (her last Husband) and *Roger de Baalun*, the Son of the said *Hawisa* and *Roger*, of the Church of *Inglecombe*, to the Monks of that Place. —The Date of this Act (which he also confirmed) is seemingly ascertained to the Year 1112, by the *Monasticon Anglicanum*, but could not have been so ancient,

\* Ex Libro de Bermondsey, fol. 184.

cient, because *William*, the Father of this *Thomas*, was living above an hundred and thirteen Years after that pretended Date, viz. in the Ninth of *Henry the Third*, 1225; but others place it in the beginning of the Reign of King *John*, which appears to be the Truth.

\* NOT long after this, as it is presumed, the said *Thomas*, the Son of *William*, is charged by the Crown for sixty Marks due for his Lands in *Inglecombe* afore-said, which he had from *Hawisa de Gournay*.

† IN the same Record, by the Name of *Thomas*, the Son of *William de Harpetre*, he is charged an hundred Marks for a Licence of Accord with *Simon*, the Son of *John le Monk*, against the said *Thomas* and his Father *William*.

§ AND in the same Year, being then a Baron, he was also charged ten Marks for five Knights Fees which he held of the Honour of *Gloucester*.

WHEN he died is not certainly to be discovered, but it is evident enough that he was not alive in the Ninth of *Henry the Third*, when the Fine above-mentioned was levied between his Father *William* and his Son *Robert de Gournay*.

HIS Wife, as we have already shewn by the Records cited here, and in the Account of the Family of *Gant*, was *Eva*, Sister and Heir of *Maurice* (surnamed *de Gant*) and Daughter of *Robert*, Son of *Robert Fitzbarding*, by *Alice*, the Daughter and Heir of *Robert de Gant of Folkingham*, Brother, and at length Heir of *Gilbert de Gaunt*, Earl of *Lincoln*; which *Eva* was Heir of the Great Houses of *Fitzbarding* and *Gournay*, *Gant* and *Paganel*, which fully appears from the Deduction of those Families in the third Chapter of the sixth Book of this Work, where we have shewn how the Rights of all these Houses together, with those of the second House of *Gournay*, and that of *de la More*, centered at length in that of *Perceval*, now Earls of *Egmont*.

\* Rot. Pip. Dorf. Soms. nova Oblata, 3 Johan.

† Ibid. Ibid.

ISSUE of *THOMAS DE HARPE-  
TRE*, and of *Eva*, furnamed *de Gournay*, Sister  
and Heir of *Maurice*, furnamed *de Gant*, Daugh-  
ter of *Robert*, the Son of *Robert Fitzbarding*.

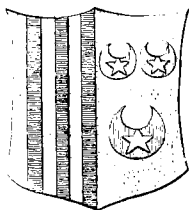
\* *ROBERT*, furnamed *de Gournay*, the eldest Son  
and Heir of *Thomas*, the Son of *William*, the  
Son of *John de Harpctre*, of whom in the next  
Chapter.

---

\* See Fine Hill. 9 Hen. III. divers. Comit. n<sup>o</sup>. 36. ut supra.

CHAP. VI.

ROBERT DE HARPETRE,  
*who first assumed the Name of Gour-  
nay, a Great Baron, Lord of Harpe-  
tré, Inglescombe, Overwere, &c.*



**T**HIS *Robert*, the Son of *Thomas*, the Son of *William*, the Son of *John de Harpetre*, was the first of this Line and Family who assumed the Name of *Gournay*, after which it continued with all his Descendants.

THE wanton Course of Surnames in the elder Ages, is remarkably discovered in this Family; for being originally sprung, (as it appears to us demonstrably) from the House of *Yvery*, they quitted that Appellation for another, derived from the principal Lordship of *Arpetree*, which became their Portion; and again,

494 *A Genealogical History*

a third time changed it for the Name of *Gournay*, as we have here observed. The same capricious Habit is discovered in the Female Side of this House; for *Eva*, the Mother of this *Robert de Gournay*, being a Daughter of *Robert*, the Son of *Robert*, the Son of *Harding*, Ancestor to the House of *Berkely*, ought, according to modern Custom, to have borne the Name of *Berkely*, which neither *she* nor her Brother *Maurice* did,—*he* being stiled (from his Mother) who was Daughter and Heir of *Robert de Gant*, Baron of *Folkingham*, by the Name of *Gant*, in respect to that Princely House; and *she*, (in regard to \**Hawisa de Gournay*, her Grandmother, (as we presume) the Wife of *Robert*, the Son of *Harding*, whose Heir she was, and from whom she derived the Lordship of *Barewe*, which is said by Record to have been part of the Lands of *Robert Fitzharding*) assuming the Name of *Gournay*, a Family of great Eminence, as appears from ancient History and Record, which is farther manifested by the Practice of the said *Hawisa* (the Grandmother of this *Eva*) who, though twice married into the Great Houses of *Berkely* and *Baalun*, disdained to quit her Maiden Name for either of them.

How it came that this *Robert de Harpetre*, of whom we here treat, resolving to quit his paternal Appellation, was determined in his Choice in the Name of *Gournay*, rather than of *Gant*, to which he was equally intitled, is a Matter of Curiosity not easily satisfied at so great a Distance of Time.—Though we presume the Reason to have been, that the said *Hawisa de Gournay* being deceased before his Uncle *Maurice de Gant*, he had first assumed her Surname, which he did not afterwards think fit to change again.—But it is certain, that he had already made his Election  
in

---

\* We have already observed, that we are not exactly informed by Record, how the Descent accrued from *Hawisa de Gournay*, to this Line here spoken of; but this Descent, from her to *Eva*, seems highly probable, by the passing of the Inheritance of the Lordship of *Barewe*.

in favour of that of *Gournay* before the Ninth of *Henry* the Third, as appears by a † Record which we have already quoted ; \* and that under that Name, after the Death of *Maurice de Berkely*, or *de Gant*, his Uncle, whose Heir the Record affirms he was, he had Livery of the Manor of *Paulet*, part of the Possessions of the said *Maurice*, which he had claimed by *Andrew Luttrell* not long before ; ‖ so likewise of all his Lands in the County of *Gloucester*, excepting the Manors of *Beverston*, *Weston*, *Radwick*, *Oure*, and *Albrington*, and made his solemn Protestation in the King's Presence, that he did not lay any Claim to the three Hundreds of *Berminster*, *Harecliff*, and *Portbury*, acknowledging, that the said *Maurice*, his Uncle, had no Title in them but for Term of Life ; so that after his Decease, they were to come to *Thomas de Berkely*, and his Heirs ; and in the Sixteenth of *Henry* the Third, had Liberty to pay the Remainder of the hundred Pounds due for his Relief, being seventy-five Pounds, by twenty-five Pounds each half Year ; in which Year also he performed his Homage for one Knight's Fee in the County of *Somerset* §, descended to him by the Death of *William*, his Grandfather, Son of *John*, and Brother of another *John de Harpetree*.

ABOUT which Time he had Licence to pay seventy-five, the Remainder of the one hundred Pounds, due for the Relief of his Barony, being twenty-five Pounds each half Year.

IN the same Reign, but the Time is uncertain, the said *Robert de Gournay* obtained a Fair and Market, and other Franchises †, in his Manor of *Were*, in the County of *Somerset* ; which Manors were granted first by *William the Conqueror* to *Walter de Doway*, and came afterwards to *William Painell*, and by his Daughter  
and

† Fin. divers. Comit. Hill 9 Hen. III. 1.º. 36.

\* Rot. Fin. 15 Hen. III. m. 8.

‖ Rot. Fin. 15 Hen. III. Memb. 9. & Cla. 15 Hen. III. m. 21.

§ Rot. Fin. 16. Hen. III. m. 3.

† Placit. coram Justic. Itinerant. 8 Ed. I. Rot. 65. Rex.



496 *A Genealogical History*

and Heir to *Robert de Gant*, and by his Daughter and Heir to *Robert*, the Son of *Robert Fitzharding*, by *Eva*, his Daughter (the Sister of *Maurice*, surnamed *de Gant*) to him the said *Robert de Gournay*, her Son and Heir.——This Manor, originally one, was afterwards divided into two Parts, under the Names of *Overwere* and *Netherwere*, which though they make together but one Town, *Overwere* lies in the Hundred of *Bempston*, and *Netherwere* in that of *Wynterstock*; of which, together with *Baggeworth*, it makes together one Tything.

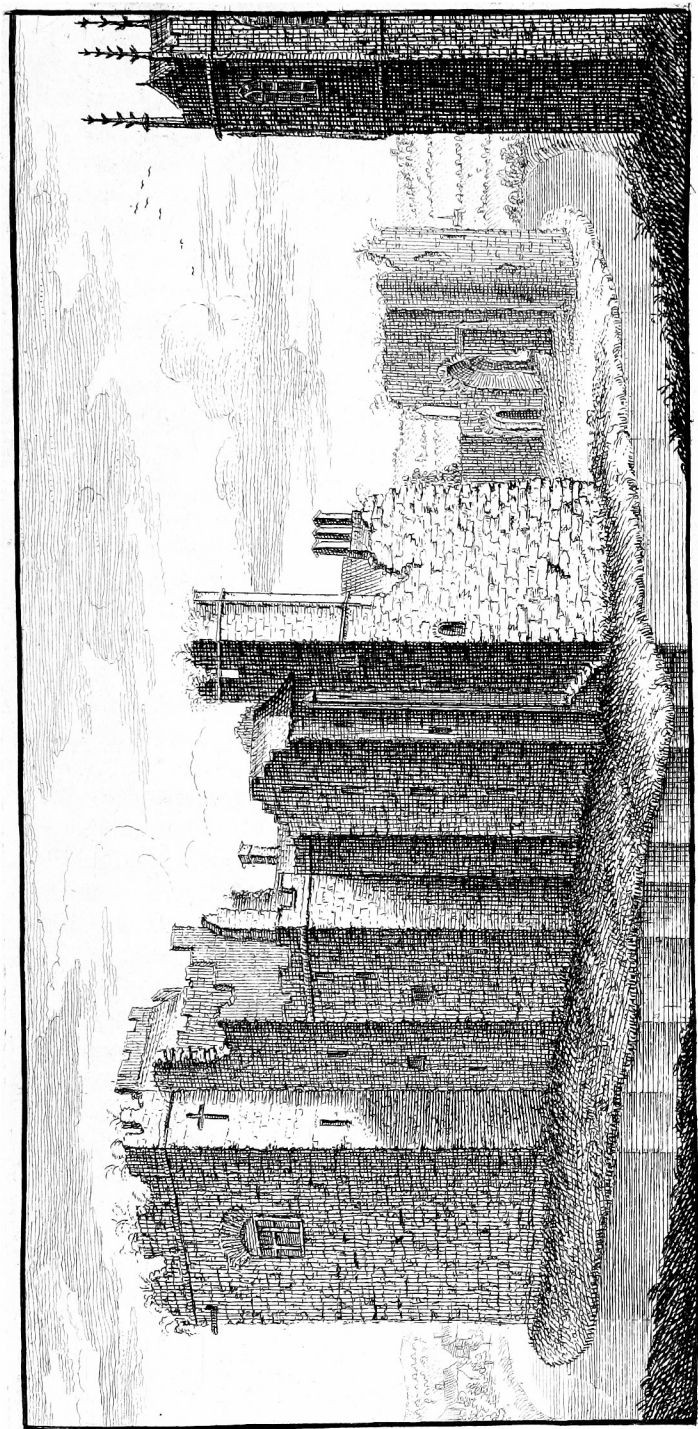
FURTHERMORE \*, in the twenty-sixth of *Henry* the Third, this *Robert* gave twenty Pounds to the King, to be excused from attending him at that Time into *Gascoigne*; and in the forty-first of the same Reign he had Summons to be at *Bristol* in the Octaves of *St. Peter ad Vincula*, well fitted with Horse and Arms, to march with him into *Wales*. Also in the forty-second of the same Reign to be at *Chester* upon the Feast-Day of the Nativity of *St. John Baptist* for the like Purpose; and in the forty-seventh of the same Reign to be at *Hereford* shortly after the Feast of the *Epiphany*, accordingly fitted with Horse and Arms, to restrain the Hostilities of the *Welsh*.

† AND having founded the Hospital of *Gant* (alias *Billefwicke*) near *Bristol*, for the Health of his own Soul, and for the Soul of *Maurice de Gant*, his Uncle, departed this Life in the fifty-third of *Henry* the Third, being then seized of the Manor of *Cernecote*, in the County of *Wilts*; as also of the Manors of *Harpetre*, *Barewe*, and *Inglecombe*, in the County of *Gloucester*, with divers Fees in the Counties of *Somerset*, *Dorset*, and *Wilts*, to the same Manors belonging, amounting in all to twenty-two Knights Fees and an half; and likewise of the Manors of *Beverstan*, *Weston*, *Halberton*, *Radwicke*, *Owre*, and *Pureton*, all in the County of *Gloucester*.

CHIL-

\* Dugdale's Baronage. sub tit. Gournay.

† Escaet post Mort. Roberti de Gournay, 53 Hen. III. n. 22.



Beverstan Castle in the County of Gloucester, the Ancient Seat of the Barons of Gournay.



CHILDREN of ROBERT DE GOURNAY, and of *Hawisa de Longchamp*, who was his Wife, as appears by the *Claus. Rot. 53 Hen. III. m. 5.*

I. \* ANSELM, of whom in the next Chapter,

II. † JOHN DE GOURNAY, who had the Lordship of *Were*, i. e. *Overwere* and *Neberwere*, for his Portion ; for it appears § that this *John de Gournay*, in the Fourth of *Edward* the First, being then Lord of *Were*, had Affize of Bread, together with the Benefit of Waifs and Estrays, and other Liberties therein, but he died soon after without Issue ; for in the Eighth of the same Reign, his Brother *Anselm* had Possession of that Inheritance.

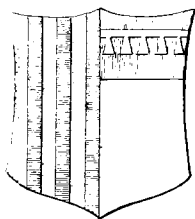
---

\* Esch. post mort. Roberti de Gournay, 53 Hen. III. n<sup>o</sup>. 23.

† Vide Inquisit. in Bagâ de Ragman, An. 4 Edw. I. Somf. rot. 12; dorso m. de Bloeden.

§ Ibid.

## C H A P. VII.

ANSELM DE GOURNAY, *Lord*  
of East-Harpetree, West-Harpetree,  
&c.

**A**NSELM, Son and Heir of *Robert de Gournay*, having done his \*Homage for his Father's Estate soon after his Decease, was returned by the Jury of † *Wynsterstock* Hundred (his younger Brother being then dead) to hold of the King *in Capite*, the Manor of *East-Harpetree*, by the Half of one Knight's Fee, on which depended the Manor of *West-Harpetree*, as will appear hereafter.

‡ At which Time also, the Hundred of *Herethorne* presented, that the Manor of *Crofton*, which then belonged to the said *Anselm*, was formerly forfeited to the King, by the Rebellion of *Henry de Sancto-Hillario*, a *Norman*; that the said Manor was worth 15 *l. per ann.*  
and

\* Fines 53 Hen. III. m. 7.

† Inquisit. in Bagà de Ragman, 4 Edw. I. Somf. rot. 12.

‡ Ibid. rot. 13.

and that the King gave it to *Hugh de Byvoun*, or *Vivoun*, and that *Hugh de Vivoun* gave it in Marriage to the said *Anselm*, with his Daughter, to be held of him and his Heirs.

BETWEEN which Year and the seventh of *Edward* the First, it appears, (though the Record is not now to be found) that he gave that Part of the Manor of *Were*, now called *Overwere*, to his \* younger Son *Robert de Gournay*, in whom, and in his Posterity, it is found ever after to have been. ——— For in the said seventh of *Edward* the First, being then in the *Scottish* Wars, he the said *Anselm de Gournay* obtained of that Prince a Grant, that himself, and all his Burghers of *Netherwere*, (by which it should seem that he was no longer possessed of the other Part of the said Manors) should be free from Payment of any Customs throughout the whole Realm of *England*; as also, that they should enjoy all Privileges granted to *Maurice de Gant*, his Ancestor.

† THE next Year after, viz. the eighth of *Edward* the First, a *Quo Warranto* was brought against the said *Anselm de Gournay*, for the Franchises used by him in his Manors of *Were*, *Crofton*, *Inglescombe*, *Ferenton*, and *Arpetree*, in which he pleads the Charter of *Henry* the Third to his Father, *Robert de Gournay*, before-mentioned.

‡ AND now, finding his Health decay, and himself drawing near to his End, he thought it time to provide for his youngest Son, as yet unprovided for; and accordingly, upon the *Sunday* after the Feast of the Translation of *St. Thomas* the Martyr, in the thirteenth of the same Reign, he granted by Deed the Manor of *Ferenton*, to him and the Heirs of his Body, to be held for ever, by the annual Service of a Rose, to be paid upon the Feast of the Nativity of Saint

S f f 2

John

---

\* Vide Miscell. B. 2 by Glover, Somerset. in Officio Armor. Londini.

† Placita coram Justic. Itinerant. 8 Edw. I. Rot. 6. Rex.

‡ Mich. post mort. Thomæ de Gournay, 13 Edw. III. n<sup>o</sup> 37.

500 *A Genealogical History*

*John* the Baptist. And again, in the Year following he granted the Manor of *Inglecombe* to the said *Thomas* his Son, under the Service of twelve Cross-Bow Shot.

\* IN which Year he died, being then seized of the Manor of *Beverstan*, *Awerton*, *Weston*, and *Oure*, in the County of *Gloucester*; leaving his Wife *Sibilla*, the Daughter of *Hugh Vivoun*, jointured in the Manor of *Ailburton*, *Oure*, and *Kirg's-Weston*, [*Weston*.]—— Of *Robert* and *John* we shall in their Places come to speak.

CHILDREN of *ANSELM DE GOURNAY*,  
and of *Sibilla de Vivoun*, his Wife.

I. *JOHN DE GOURNAY*, of whom in the next Chapter.

II. *ROBERT DE GOURNAY*, Lord of *Overwere*; of whom, and his Issue, in Chapter the fourteenth.

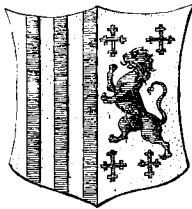
III. *THOMAS DE GOURNAY*, Lord of *Inglecombe*, &c. of whom, and his Descendants, in Chapter the tenth.

---

\* Dugdale, sub tit. Gournay.

CHAP. VIII.

JOHN DE GOURNAY, *Baron*  
of Harpetrè, *Lord of Farringdon, &c.*



**J**OHN DE GOURNAY\*, Son and Heir of the said *Anselm*, being twenty-six Years of Age at the Death of his Father, did his Fealty the ensuing Year, viz. the fifteenth of *Edward* the First, and had Livery of all the Lands of his Inheritance.

† BUT we find that long before his Father's Death, viz. six Years, in the ninth of *Edward* the First, having then wedded *Oliva*, the Daughter of *Henry Luvel*, Baron of *Kari*, he and his Lady impleaded *Hugh* Lord *Luvel*, Son and Heir of the said *Henry*, for the Sum of one hundred Marks, which the said *Henry* Lord *Luvel* had bound himself, upon the *Sunday* after the Feast of Saint *Philip* and *Jacob*, in the second Year of the said King, to pay, for the Marriage-Portion of the said

---

\* Dugdale, sub tit. Gournay. Rot. Fin. 15 Edw. I. m. 7.

† Placit de Banco, 9 Edw. I.



ſaid *Oliva*, within the Space of the two next enſuing Years, out of his Manor of *Kari*, which Sum being then unpaid, the ſaid *Hugh* Lord *Luvel* engaged to ſatisfy the Debt in one Year, by four equal Payments of twenty-five Marks each, the firſt Payment to begin upon the Feaſt of the Nativity of our bleſſed Lord, in the ninth of *Edward* the Firſt.

\* It appears farther, that in the fifteenth<sup>a</sup> of *Edward* the Firſt, the Year after he came to his Eſtate, this *John*, there by the Name of *John* the Son and Heir of *Anſelm de Gournay*, confirmed to the Abbot of *St. Peter's, Glouceſter*, and his Succeſſors, certain Lands and Rents in *Beverſtan*, to the Value of five Shillings a-year, and the Advowſon of the Church of *Beverſtan*, which had been given to the ſaid Church in Frank-Almoign by his Father *Anſelm*, which ſaid Premiſes being holden of the King *in Capite*, *Anſelm* had procured the King's Licence to alienate in Mortmain, which Licence is enrolled in *Placita coram Juſticiar. Itinerant. in Glouceſt.* the fifteenth of *Edward* the Firſt, *Rot. 29. dorſo Satiam.*

† It appears farther, that this *John de Gournay* ſome Time before his Death deviſed to *Robert de Gournay*, of *Overwere*, (his Brother) and to *Margaret* his Wife, for the Term of both their Lives, a Rent of ſeventy-two Shillings, and its Appurtenances, in *Netherwere*.

—|| But he did not very long ſurvive, for he died in the fifteenth of *Edward* the Firſt, in the thirty-ſirſt Year of his Age; leaving *Oliva*, Daughter of *Henry* Lord *Luvel* of *Kari*, before-mentioned, ſeiſed in Jointure of the Manors of *East-Harpetree* and *Barewe-Gournay*, and the Caſtle of *Arpetree*, in the County of *Somerſet*, two Parts of the Manor of *Radwiebe* and *Northwicke*, in the County of *Glouceſter*, and the Ma-

nor

\* *Placit. coram Juſt. Itinerant. 15 Edw. I. Rot. 29. dorſo. Saham.*

† *Miſcellan. B. 2. by Glover, Somerſet, in the Office of Arms at London.*

|| *Ibid.*

*of the House of YVERY, &c.* 503

nor of *East-Hamptonet*, in *Suffex*, in Jointure, which she held till her Déath \*, which happened five Years after that of her Husband, *viz.* in the twenty-fourth of the same Reign.

ISSUE of Sir *JOHN DE GOURNAY*,  
Baron of *Gournay*, and of *Oliva*, Daughter of  
*Henry* Lord *Luvel* of *Kari*, his Wife.

I. || *ELIZABETH DE GOURNAY*, sole  
Daughter and Heir ; of whom in the next Chap-  
ter.

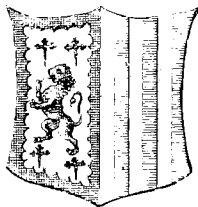
---

\* Esch. 24 Edw. I. n° 28.

|| Ibid.

## C H A P. IX.

ELIZABETH DE GOURNAY,  
*sole Heiress of John de Gournay, and  
 Wife of John Ap-Adam, a Baron.*



**E**LIZABETH DE GOURNAY||, the Daughter and sole Heir of *John de Gournay*, Baron of *Gournay*, and of *Oliva Luvel*, his Wife, though but sixteen Years old at her Father's Death, was then married to *John Ap-Adam*; who doing his Fealty, had Livery of all the Lands of her Inheritance.

\* WHICH *Elizabeth*, in the twenty-fourth of *Edward* the First, upon the Death of *Oliva* her Mother, became also Heir to those Lands which she held in Jointure, and is said in the Record to be then twenty-one Years old.

BUT

\* Esch. 25 Edw. I. n<sup>o</sup> 28, ut supra.

|| *Ibid.*

BUT her Issue at length wholly failed; and that great Inheritance was profusely squandered away, as may be seen in the Account of the Barons of *Ap-Adam*, in Sir *William Dugdale*, to which the Reader is referred.

**B**EFORE we carry our Enquiries farther into these Branches of this Family, which sprung from *Robert* and *Thomas de Gournay*, younger Sons of *Anselm*, and Brothers of *John de Gournay*, last mentioned, it is proper to take Notice of another House of this Name, which, without due Care, may be confounded with the Issue of the rest, though not, as we can find, connected to them by any fair Authority.

\* THE first of this Line that we have met with, was *Hugh de Gournay*, who has been placed by Conjecture (but without any reasonable Grounds) as second Son to *Thomas de Gournay*, the younger Son of *Anselm* before-mentioned, which Opinion we the rather reject, as it does not appear that he inherited any Portion of that Estate which belonged to that Line of *Inglefcombe*, of which the said *Thomas* was then the Chief. And though it is found, not long after, that the Issue of the said *Hugh de Gournay* became possessed of *Arpetree*, which was Part of the Estate of the eldest Branch of this House, yet as that could not have come to him by Descent, if he were the second Son of *Inglefcombe*, so does it plainly appear, that he obtained it by another Title, *viz.* that of Gift, or Purchase, from the Heirs of the elder Branch, as we shall presently come to shew.

† THAT this *Hugh de Gournay* was living in the twenty-fifth of *Edward* the First, and had then Lands in *East-Harpetree*, which he held, with others there, is plain from a Pleading in that Year, in answer to a Suit

---

\* Collections of the Family of Gournay from Record, by the late Mr. William Whiston, of the Tally Court,

† Ibid.

506 *A Genealogical History*

Suit commenced against the said *Hugh*, and his Partners, for having rescued certain Cattle impounded by Servants of *John de Ap-Adam*, (then Lord of the Fee, in Right of *Elizabeth* his Wife, Daughter and Heir of *John de Gournay*, (already treated of) which Cattle had done Damage at *East-Harpetree*, on the Lands of the said *Ap-Adam*.

\* WHICH *Hugh de Gournay* being dead, in the fourth of *Edward* the Third, his Wife *Joan* then surviving. ——— It appears that the Manor of *Alyncestre*, in the County of *Warwick*, and the Reversion of a Plowland, twenty-two Acres of Meadow, and six in *Radewyke*, in the County of *Gloucester*, after the Decease of the said *Joan*, and of *Hugh* the Son of the said *Joan*, were limited by Fine to *Reginald de Botreaux*, and *Isabel* his Wife (who were Plaintiffs, and Master *Walter de Botreaux*, Deforciant in the same) and to the Heirs Male of their Joint-Bodies. ——— Remainder to the Heirs of *Reginald* in Fee.

|| *THOMAS DE GOURNAY*, the eldest Son of *Hugh de Gournay* the elder, before-mentioned, succeeded his Father. ——— § To which *Thomas de Gournay*, and his Heirs for ever, in the same Year, viz. in the fourth of *Edward* the Third, *Thomas Ap-Adam*, Son of *Elizabeth*, the Heiress of the eldest Branch of this House of *Gournay*, (as we have observed before) making miserable Havock of his great Inheritance, sold the Manors of *East-Harpetree*, *Donebeved*, and *Netherwere*, in the County of *Somerjet*, and a Rent of Ten Pounds in *Welewe*, in the County of *Hants*.

By Means of which Sale, it appears not long after, that the House of *East-Harpetre* likewise held their Estates of the Descendants of this Family of *Gournay*, although either not related to them, or issued from some remote

---

\* Collections of the Family of *Gournay* from Record, by the late Mr. *William Whiston* of the Tally-Court.

|| *Ibid.*

§ *In divers. Comitatus* 4 *Edw. III. n° 53.*

remote or younger Branch.—*Anselm de Gournay*, their supposed Ancestor, having reserved a Dependence in those Estates, when he granted them to his younger Children, upon the Estate of his eldest Issue, according to the Mode of those Times; which Estates passing in this Manner by Sale from that Issue, brought about this Subordination in the Tenure upon the *Gournays*, of which we here speak, and has formerly caused great Error in the Account of this Family; because it has appeared to those uninformed of this Transaction, that the *Gournays* of this House must have been the Issue of the elder Line.

HAVING sufficiently cleared up the Cause of this Mistake, we shall proceed to the Death of this *Thomas de Gournay* of *East-Harpetree*, last mentioned, \* who died seized, in Conjunction with *Joan* his Wife, of the Manor and Castle of *East-Harpetree*, and the Borough of *Netherwere*, upon the Feast of St. *Magdalen*, in the seventeenth of *Edward* the Third, leaving *John de Gournay* his Son and Heir, then ten Years old, and upwards: which Age of the said *John* serves to clear the different Families of *East-Harpetree* from each other; which, from the Similitude of their Names, and their being cotemporary, would otherwise have been impossible to have been distinguished.

§ OF this *John de Gournay*, of *East-Harpetree*, we find nothing memorable till the thirty-third of *Edward* the Third, when he sold the Manor of *Netherwere*, with its Privileges and Appurtenances, to *John Devereux*.

‡ IT appears in some old Pedigrees, which were reckoned of good Authority, that this *John* died without Issue; and that *Joan de Gournay*, his Sister, was Heir, who afterwards became the Wife of *Walter Caldecot*, whose Daughter and Heir, *Alice*, married to *Philip*

T t t 2

Hamp-

---

\* Esch. in the Tower of London.

§ Fin. 33 Ed. III.

‡ Camden Russel Folio of Pedigrees, penes Comitem de Egmont.

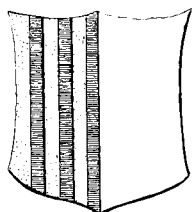
508 *A Genealogical History*

*Hampton*, from whose Great-Grand-daughter and Heir-  
 es, *Lucia*, who took to Husband *Thomas*, the second  
 Son of Sir *Richard*, Son of Sir *John Newton*, the  
 Manor of *Harpetree*, in the County of *Somerset*, came  
 into that Family: which we the rather believe, be-  
 cause both the *Hamptons* and the *Newtons* appear to  
 have been possessed thereof. — But not having seen  
 Authorities sufficient fully to deduce or verify that De-  
 scent, we shall pursue it no farther.

HAVING thus cleared up those Difficulties which  
 have hitherto occurred in the Account of this Great  
 Family, we now return to treat of the remaining  
 Branches of it.

CHAP. X.

THOMAS DE GOURNAY, *Lord of Inglescombe, Farrington, and West-Harpetree, the First of that Name, youngest Son of Anselm de Gournay, and Sibilla de Vivoun, his Wife.*  
*Look back to Chap. VII. of this Book.*



THE elder Branch of this Family of *Gournay* being entirely extinct, we come next to *Thomas de Gournay*, and *Robert*, younger Brothers of *John de Gournay*, last mentioned : but which of these was the eldest is not determined yet, by any positive Authority ; only that we have seen a Record, wherein *Anselm*, the Father of these three Sons, grants certain Lands to *Thomas*, by these Words, \* *Filio suo Juniori*, which

---

\* Esch. 13 Edw. III. n<sup>o</sup>. 37.



510 *A Genealogical History*

which is generally understood to imply, where there are more than two Children, the youngest of all.

BE that as it will, the Issue of the said *Thomas* failing, not many Descents after, for the Convenience of this Discourse, we shall treat in the first place of him.

OF this *Thomas*, the youngest Son of *Anselm de Gournay*, by *Sibilla de Vivoun* his Wife, we have already had Occasion to say, that not long before his Father's Death, he received from him the Manor of *Faranton*, alias *Ferenton*, or *Farrington*, in the thirteenth of King *Edward* the First, and those of *Inglecombe* and *West-Harpetre*, in the following Year.

As to the Tenures, of which Estates we have already spoken enough; all that we have to say farther of him is, that he was in the Wars of *Scotland* in the twenty-eighth of *Edward* the First.

ISSUE of *THOMAS DE GOURNAY*,  
Lord of *Inglecombe*.

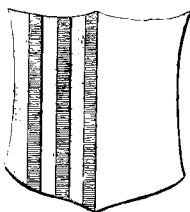
‡ *THOMAS DE GOURNAY*; of whom  
in the next Chapter.

---

‡ Esch. ut supra.

CHAP. XI.

THOMAS DE GOURNAY, (*the Second of that Name*) Lord of Inglescombe, Farringdon, and West-Harpetré.



**T**HIS Sir *Thomas de Gournay*\*, together with Sir *John Maltravers*, and *William de Ogle*, having Custody of the unhappy Prince King *Edward* the Second, after he had been deposed by the Contrivances of that wicked Woman *Isabella of France*, his Queen, and of *Roger Mortimer*, Earl of *March*, her Paramour, first carrying the said Prince from *Kenelworth* to *Corfa*, and afterwards to *Berkeley-Castle*, at the said Queen and *Mortimer's* Desire; and by their Command, signified to them by *Adam Orleton*, Bishop of *Hereford*, one of the wicked Ministers of that Time, did there

---

\* Esch. ut supra.

there (as it is said) barbarously put him to a cruel Death, covering his Face that he might not be heard, and then thrusting a Pipe of Horn up his Body, thro' which they run a red-hot Iron, and burnt his Bowels.

‡ THREE Years after this inhuman Act, the Government of Affairs continuing in the same Hands, *viz.* in those of Queen *Isabella*, and *Mortimer*, who acted all Things in the young King's Name, and the said *Thomas* being therefore for a Time unquestioned for it, the Manor of *Knolle*, near *Bristol*, except a Messuage and Ploughland, after the Death of *William Randolph*, were limited to *William Ouvyle*, to the said *Thomas*, the Son of *Thomas de Gournay*, and *Joan* his Wife, for Life; Remainder to *John*, Son of the said *Thomas*, and the Heirs of his Body; Remainder to *George*, Brother of the said *John*, and the Heirs of his Body; Remainder to *Matthew*, Brother to *John*; Remainder to the right Heirs of the said *Thomas*, in Fee.

\* BUT the Times not long after changing, and *Edward* the Third having freed himself from the Subjection of his wretched Mother, now set himself to punish the miserable Authors and Instruments of his Father's Murder.

† WHEREUPON this Sir *Thomas Gournay* fled into foreign Parts; notwithstanding which, at a Parliament holden the fourteenth of that Reign, he, though absent, was, together with divers other great Men, adjudged by the Lords and Peers, the King assenting, a Traytor, to be drawn and hanged, as instrumental to that great Crime, and large Promises of Reward were offered for the apprehending of him.

§ NOT long after which, being seized at *Burges* in *Spain*, and by Order of the King of *Castile* carried to *Bayonne*, he was commanded by King *Edward* the Third, to be brought over thence to *England*. —

But

‡ Fin. Som. Trin. n° 3. Edw. III. n° 28.

\* From the Histories of England.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid.

But by certain secret Practices, not yet cleared up, his Execution was privately performed at Sea. — His Head being stricken off on board the Ship before his Arrival here. — So that some thought that he suffered Punishment for a Crime, with which he was not so much concerned as others, who were permitted to escape.

\* AND whether it were through some Proof of this sort, which afterwards came out, or whether encouraged by the Illegality of a Sentence, pronounced and executed against a Man unheard in his own Defence, we cannot tell, but certain it is, that four Years after, *viz.* in the eighth of *Edward* the Third, *Joan*, the Widow of this unhappy Person, presented her Petition to the King and his Council in Parliament, praying to be endowed in his Manors of *Inglescombe*, *Farenton*, and *West-Harpetree*, which did belong to her late Husband, and were at that time in the King's Hands, (no doubt on account of the aforesaid Treasons) upon which it was ordered in Parliament, that the said Petition should be sent into the Court of King's-Bench, and that they should hear her Allegations, and do her Justice therein.

† IN pursuance whereof, the same Petition was accordingly sent by Writ, bearing *Teste* at *York*, the fifth of *March*, *Anno R. R. Edw. III. 8<sup>o</sup>*. and thereupon the said *Joan* came and pleaded, “ that *Anselm de Gournay*, Grandfather of the present *Thomas de Gournay*, (her late Husband) was lawfully seised in “ Demesne and in Fee, of the Manors aforesaid; and “ that being so seised, he had given the same to one “ *Thomas de Gournay*, his youngest Son, (*Filio suo juniori*) to be held by him the said *Thomas*, and by “ the Heirs of his Body, on Condition nevertheless, “ that if the said *Thomas* should die without any Heir “ of

---

\* From the Histories of England.

† Placit. coram Rege, Pasch. 8 Edw. III. Rot. 130.

“ of his Body, lawfully begotten; that the said Manor  
 “ should revert to the said *Anselm de Gournay*, and his  
 “ Heirs. ——— Which *Thomas*, Son of *Anselm*, died  
 “ seized thereof in Form aforesaid. ——— After whose  
 “ Death, *Thomas* before-mentioned, the late Husband  
 “ of the said *Joan*, entered upon the Premises, as Son  
 “ and Heir of *Thomas* the Son of *Anselm*; and that  
 “ under the Force of the said Grant, he held the same,  
 “ until the said Manors came into the Hands of the  
 “ King; and prays that Justice may be done, accord-  
 “ ing to the Prayer of her Petition.”

UPON which Plea, a *Certiorari* was awarded to the Treasurer and Chamberlains of the Court, to search if any Instrument or Record could be found, whereby the said *Thomas* and *Joan de Gournay* had relinquished their Right therein to the King, who thereupon, in *Michaelmas* Term following, made Return, that after having searched the Records in their Custody, they did not find that the said *Thomas* and his Wife *Joan* had ever at any Time, or in any Manner, to any Person, released, or quitted Claim to the said Manors; whereupon the Court demanded of *Thomas de Thorpe*, the said *Joan's* Attorney, whether he could offer any thing special as to the Form of the said Grant, who replied that he was not as then prepared in that Point, so that several Days were set over for her, or her Attorney, to produce the Original Grant, and no Judgment was then given in the Cause.

NOTWITHSTANDING which, it is evident enough, that not long after the Proof required was produced, for the said Lands remained in the Possession of this House for a long Time after.

CHILDREN of THOMAS DE GOURNAY,  
Lord of *Inglefcombe*, the second of that Name,  
and of *Joan* his Wife.

I. THOMAS DE GOURNAY, the third of  
that Name, Lord of *Inglefcombe*; of whom in  
the next Chapter.

II. \* JOHN DE GOURNAY, the second Son  
as appears from a Fine levied in *Trinity-Term*,  
in the third of *Edward* the Third, *Rot.* 28.  
whereby the Manor of *Knolle* was settled upon  
him, and his Issue, with Remainder to his Bro-  
thers *George* and *Matthew* successively.

§ THIS *John de Gournay*, in the twenty-sixth of *Ed-  
ward* the Third, being then a Knight, and by  
reason of that Manor of *Knolle*, near *Bristol*, in  
the County of *Somerset*, (which he enjoyed under  
that Fine of the third of *Edward* the Third, be-  
fore-mentioned) furnished of that Place, making  
Application to the King for Leave to grant a  
Piece of Land, eighteen Feet in length, and as  
many in breadth, in which there lay a certain  
Fountain, called *Raven's-Well*, together with the  
Appurtenances thereof, in *Knolle*, and in the Sub-  
urbs of *Bristol*, to the Prior and Brother, and  
Brother-Hermits of the Order of *St. Augustine*  
in that City, an Inquisition of the Nature of a

U u u 2

Writ

---

\* *Fin. Som. Trin.* 3 *Edw. III.* n<sup>o</sup> 28.

By comparing this Fine with the *Escheat An.* 17 *Edw. III.* n<sup>o</sup> 25. it is evident that the Fine relates to the *Inglefcombe* Branch, and the *Escheat* to that of *East-Harpetree*; for *John*, who is found in that *Escheat* Son and Heir of *Thomas de Gournay* of *East Harpetree*, and ten Years old, could not have been born till some Years after the Fine above-mentioned was levied. — This Observation is necessary, to prevent confounding the two Branches, which is very easy to be done, each Family having at that Time for their Head a *Thomas*, each *Thomas* a Wife named *Joan*, and each Family a Son named *John*.

§ *Inquisit. ad quod damnum*, *Esch.* 26 *Edw. III.* n<sup>o</sup> 25.

516 *A Genealogical History*

Writ *Ad quod Dampnum* was awarded thereupon, and the Jury returned, that the Premises were held of the Lord *Berkeley*, by the Service of the thirtieth Part of one Knight's Fee, and that they were worth ten Pence *per annum*.

BUT what came afterwards of this Man, or how the said Manor of *Knolle* departed from this Family, we cannot tell: but that he, and his second Brother *George*, were dead, and that their Rights devolved in some Years after upon their youngest Brother *Matthew*, is proved by Record.

III. \* *GEORGE DE GOURNAY*, mentioned in the Fine of the third of *Edward* the Third, above-mentioned. He died without Issue, as appears by the Course of the Succession which his younger Brother obtained.

IV. ‖ *MATTHEW DE GOURNAY*, who became a Knight of most consummate Skill and Reputation; and having dedicated himself early to the Use of Arms, was present in all the famous Engagements of the Age in which he lived, being recorded upon his Monument, at *Stoke under Hamdden*, in the County of *Somerset*, where he lies buried \*\*, to have served in the Battles and Engagements of *Benamazin*, *Sluice*, *Cressy*, *Ingenny*, *Poitiers*, of *Nazaron* in *Spain*, and in the Siege of *Algezira*, against the *Saracens*.

† In Consideration of some of these Services, no doubt, it was, that being taken again into the Favour of King *Edward*, his Father before observed, he obtained a Licence from the Crown, in the thirtieth of that Reign for Sir *Nickolas Poyntz*

\* Fin. Somf. 3 Edw. III. ut supra.

‖ Ibid.

\*\* Leland's Itinerary, and Camden.

† Pat. 30 Edw. III. p. 1. m. 7. & A. 32 Edw. III. p. 2. m. 12. Somers.

Poyntz to grant the Manor of *Cory-Malet*, to him and to his Heirs.

§ IN the fiftieth of the same Reign (upon the *Monday* next after the Feast of *St. George*) being unfortunately taken Prisoner in the Wars of *France*, with divers other Knights of great Renown, he joined in a Petition with Sir *Matthew Redman*, Sir *Thomas Fogg*, Sir *John Harpden*, Sir *Gregory Seas*, Sir *Geoffry Weskesley*, Sir *Robert Twyford*, Sir *John Bourchier*, and divers other Knights and Esquires, to the Parliament then sitting at *Westminster*, praying the King to ransom them, they being unable to answer the Conditions imposed upon them by the *French* on that Account.

‡ IN the seventh of *Richard* the Second, *Alice de Beauchamp*, his first Wife, (Relict of Sir *John Beauchamp de Hache*) and Sister of *Thomas Beauchamp*, Earl of *Warwick*, then dying without Issue, the said Earl of *Warwick* is found to be her next Heir.

IN the thirteenth of the same Reign, upon the twenty-seventh of *May*, he was one of those great Men who attended the King in the Great Chamber of the Parliament at *Westminster*, upon that famous Trial for Arms between *Scroop* and *Grosvenor*, which we have spoken of at large in the Preface to this Work.

\* HE married to his second Wife *Philippa*, Sister and Coheir of *John*, Lord *Talbot*, of *Richard's-Castle*, (who afterwards became the Wife of Sir *John Tiptoft*, Knight,) and being then far advanced in Years, and without Issue, (for what Reason does not appear) in the fifth of *Henry* the Fourth, 1404, in *Michaelmas* Term, he, in Conjunction with the said *Philippa*, levied a Fine, and conveyed to divers Persons, in Trust, his  
Manor

§ Parl. apud West. 50 Edw. III. die Lunæ post fest. S. Georgii.

‡ Miscellanea B. 2. in Officio Armor. by Glover, Somerset.

\* Fin. divers. Comit. 5 Hen. IV. Mich. n° 66.



Manor and Advowson of *Sheperton*, in the County of *Middlesex*, a Moiety of the Manor, and the whole Advowson of *Sifferson*, in the County of *Devon*, and the Manor of *Stoke under Hamden*, *Cory-Malett*, *Inglescombe*, *Weliveton*, *Telisford*, *Lanerton*, *Harpetree*, *West-Harpetree*, *Farenton*, *Stratton*, *Uppe*, *Fosse*, *Milton*, *Fauconberge*, *Ryme*, *Langlow*, and *Heymyns*, a Moiety of the Manor of *Shepton-Mallet*, in the County of *Somerset*, and the Advowson of *Cori-Mallet*, *Tesiford*, *Stratton*, *Uppe*, *Fosse*, and *Skipton-Mallet*, and of the Free-Chaple of *Stoke under Hampden*, and the Advowsons of *Ryme* and *Kingston-Magne*, in the County of *Dorset*, a Moiety of the Manor of *Sellings* in *Kent*, a Moiety of the Manor of *Magor*, in the Lordship of *Chepstow*, in *Wales*, of ——— in the County of *Gloucester*, and the Manor of *Maydencote*, in the County of *Bucks*.

§ THE Uses of which Fine was not long after fully declared to be to himself and his Wife, for their Lives, and to the King after their Decease. — For in the same Year, viz. the fifth of King *Henry* the Fourth, the said King granted the Reversion of all the Lands of the said *Matthew de Gournay*, which he then held for Life, under the Grants of the King, his Ancestors, or Predecessors, after the Decease of the said Sir *Matthew* to *Joan* his Queen in Jointure. — † And after his Decease, viz. in the eighth of the same Reign, the Manors of *Milton* and *Fawcombergue*, in the County of *Somerset*, together with *Inglescombe*, and several other Manors, afore-mentioned, were granted in Dower by the King to the said *Philippa*, the Widow of the said *Matthew*\*; whereupon, in that or the following Year, she married again to Sir *John Tiptoft*, Knight.

THIS

§ Pat. 5 Hen. IV. p. 2. m. 7.

† Clauf. An. 8 Hen. IV. m. 29.

\* Pat. An. 9 Hen. IV. p. 1. m. 3.

of the House of YVERY, &c. 519

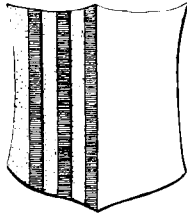
THIS *Matthew de Gournay* †, who is recorded to have been a Baron of *Guienne* in *France*, having thus defeated the remaining Branch of his Family, viz. the Issue of *Robert de Gournay* of *Overwere*, of this his great Inheritance, to whom, by Virtue of the Entail of old *Anselm*, it had otherwise reverted, died without Issue at the Age of Ninety-six, in the sixth Year of King *Henry* the Fourth, 1405, being the last of the *Gournays* of the Line of *Inglescombe*.

---

† Miscell. B. 2. in Offic. Armor. Lond.

C H A P. XI.

**THOMAS DE GOURNAY**,  
*the third of that Name, Lord of Inglefcombe, Farrington, and West-Harpetré.*



**THOMAS DE GOURNAY**<sup>\*</sup>, the eldest Son, and third of that Name, succeeded to those Manors of *Inglefcombe, Farenton, and West-Harpetree*, by Virtue of the Settlement before-mentioned; but long he did not enjoy the same §, for it is sufficiently clear, that he died between the same eighth and thirteenth Years of *Edward* the Third.

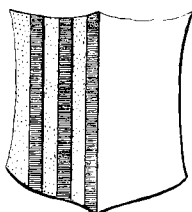
ISSUE of **THOMAS DE GOURNAY**,  
 the third of that Name, Lord of *Inglefcombe*.

**THOMAS DE GOURNAY**<sup>†</sup>, the fourth of that Name, Lord of *Inglefcombe*; of whom in the next Chapter.

<sup>\*</sup> Inquisit. capt. apud Welles, in Com. Somf. die Lunæ prox. ante festi S. Hillarii, An. 13 Edw. III.      § Ibid.      † Ibid.

CHAP. XII.

THOMAS DE GOURNAY,  
*the fourth of that Name, Lord of In-*  
*glescombe, Farringdon, and West-*  
*Harpetré.*



**I**N the thirteenth of *Edward* the Third \*, upon a Suit commenced, as it appears, by *Thomas de Gournay*, the third of this Line, in order to establish his Right to the said Lands, an Inquisition was taken before *Richard Luvel*, at *Wells* in the County of *Somerset*, upon the *Monday* next after the Feast of *Saint Hillary*, for the Lands of which *Thomas de Gournay*, the Father of this last *Thomas* had died seised.

† IN which Inquisition are at large set forth the respective Grants of *Anselm de Gournay* to *Thomas Gournay*,

---

\* Inquisit. ut supra.

† Ibid.

## 522 *A Genealogical History*

nay, his youngest Son, of those Manors of *Inglefcombe*, *Farenton*, and *West-Harpetree*, before-mentioned, of which having already spoken sufficiently before, we shall only add here, that the two first of the said Manors were then held of *Thomas de Gournay*, Lord of *East-Harpetree*, (of whose Branch we have formerly discoursed at large,) and that of *West-Harpetree* of *Richard Lord Luvel*, (of *Castle-Kari*, as we presume;) the said *Thomas de Gournay* the fourth being then almost twenty-one Years of Age, viz. on the Octave of the Purification of the Virgin *Mary* next ensuing.

§ How long the said *Thomas* afterwards survived, we cannot tell, but this we know, that he, or Issue from him, out-lived the twenty-sixth of that Reign, 1353. — His eldest Uncle, *John de Gournay*, upon whom the said Estate was entailed, as we have seen, not being then possessed of this Inheritance, but that he and all his Issue, if any he had, as also of his two Uncles *John* and *George*, did some Years after entirely fail, is fully proved from hence, that *Matthew de Gournay*, his third and youngest Uncle, became seized thereof.

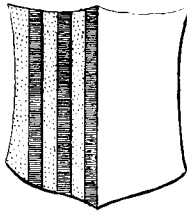
AND here ended the Line of the *Gournays* of the Branch of *Inglefcombe*.

---

§ See the Records before quoted, which fully verify this.

C H A P. XIV.

ROBERT DE GOURNAY,  
*Lord of Overwere, Son of Anselm de  
Gournay, and Sibilla de Vivoans, or  
Vivoun, his Wife.*



HAVING now finished our Account of all the former Branches of the House of *Gournay*, we come next to *Robert de Gournay*\*, Lord of *Overwere*, second Son of *Anselm de Gournay*, and *Sibilla*, the Daughter of *Hugh de Vivoun*, whose Issue were the last that survived of this great Family, and from whom alone, as we can find with Certainty, remain any Descendants at this Day.

§ WHICH *Robert de Gournay*, as we have formerly observed, received of his Father *Anselm* that great  
X x x 2 Manor

---

\* Miscellanea B. 2. in Officio Armor. by Glover, Somerset.  
§ Ibid.

Manor of *Overwere*, near *Axebridge*, in the County of *Somerset*.

\* WHICH *Robert* likewise, some time between the fourteenth and nineteenth of *Edward* the First, received from his elder Brother *John de Gournay*, a Rent of seventy-two Shillings out of the Manor of *Netherwere*, thereto adjoining, for the Lives of him the said *Robert*, and *Margaret* his Wife, and the Survivor of them.

† WHICH *John de Gournay* being then dead, *Oliva* his Widow, the next Year, viz. in the twentieth of the said Reign, contested the Right of the said *Robert* and *Margaret* thereto; who thereupon set forth their Title, which they derived under the Grant before observed, and vouched Sir *John Ap-Adam* and *Elizabeth de Gournay*, the Niece of the said *Robert*, to warrant the same, as Heirs to the said *John de Gournay* his Brother, the Grantor.

§ WHICH Suit being then set over to the following Term, was, as we presume, in Contest for some Years after, but the Records thereto relating, we have not seen. — Yet certain it is, that the said *Oliva* did recover the same, for in the twenty-fifth of that Reign a Precept was issued to the Sheriff of *Somersetshire*, from the Court of *King's-Bench* in the *Trinity* Term, to put *Elizabeth de Gournay* and *John Ap-Adam*, as Heirs to the said *Oliva*, then deceased, in Possession of the said Rent in *Netherwere*. — In which Precept it appears, that upon the Recovery of the said Right against *Robert de Gournay* and *Margaret* his Wife, the said *Robert* and *Margaret*, to elude the Force of that Judgment, had artfully passed the Premises to *William de Marcia*, then Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells*, in such sort, that when the Sheriff came to execute

---

\* Placit. coram Justiciar. de Banco, Somers. Mich. 20 & 21 Edw. I. rot. 178.

† Ibid.

§ Placit. coram Justic. de Banco, Somf. Hill. 22 Edw. I & Mich. Rot. 181. dorso. — Also, Placit. coram Justic. de Banco, Trin. 25 Edw. I. rot. 88. Somf.

ecute the former Order of the Court, to give Seisin to the Heirs of the said *Oliva*, he could not perform the same, the said Bishop then appearing to be seised thereof. — Whereupon the said Sheriff making that Return to the Court, he was ordered to appear upon the Premises in the Presence of good and lawful Witneses, there to cite the said *Robert* and *Margaret*, and the said Bishop; which he accordingly did. In consequence whereof, the said Bishop, and the said *John Ap-Adam*, and *Elizabeth* his Wife, did appear, but *Robert* and *Margaret* did not obey the Summons. And the Bishop having nothing to say, why Judgment should not be given as before, the Execution thereof was enjoined a-new.

\* THAT the like collusive Management was also practised with respect to the said Manor of *Overwere*, between the said *Robert de Gournay*, and the said *William de Marchia*, Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells*; is evident enough; for the said Bishop dying five Years after, in the thirty-first of *Edward* the First, it appears in the Inquisition taken at *Overwere*, in the County of *Somerset*, after his Death, that the said *Robert de Gournay* had made over to him, the Bishop, the Manor of *Overwere*, to be held (according to the first Grant) by the Service of half of one Knight's Fee, of the capital Lords of the Fee, viz. of *John Ap-Adam*, in Right of *Elizabeth* his Wife, the Daughter of *John de Gournay*, by the annual Payment of six barbed Arrows, in lieu of all other Service: and that thereupon the said Bishop before his Death, viz. upon the Saturday after *Ascension-Day* the same Year, the thirtieth of *Edward* the First, had by his Letters-Patent appointed *Richard de Bradenie* to receive the Seisin thereof, from *John de Hampton*, his Attorney, which *Richard de Bradenie*, by his Attorney, the Rector of *Brem*, did accordingly accept the same the same Day, and took an Oath of Fealty of some of the Tenants, and received a Penny from

---

\* Esch post mort. Willielmi de Marchia, Episc. Bathon. & Wellen. 30 Edw. I. n° 34.



## 526 *A Genealogical History*

frōm the Customary Tenants (or Copyholders) by way of their Acknowledgment, whereupon *John de Arderne*, as Bailiff of *John Ap-Adam*, came with the said Attorneys, and took Seisin of the said Manor in his Master's Name, (only as Capital Lord of the Fee) but did not disturb the said *Anthony Bradenie's* Attorney from taking the said Fealty and Acknowledgment, as afore-said, and departed, with *John de Hampton*, the Bishop's Attorney, from the Premisses. — That thus the said *Anthony Bradenie* continued in Seisin thereof till the *Monday* following, when the Men of *John Ap-Adam* came, and expelled the Attorney of the said *Anthony de Bradenie* from the Premisses, and the said Attorney levied *Hue* thereupon. That notwithstanding this, the said Lord *John Ap-Adam* continued in this Seisin till *Tuesday* following, when the Sub-Escheator came, and took the said Manor into the King's Hands.

YET whatever Pretensions might have been formed with respect to their Inheritance on the one hand, or what Art soever used to maintain it on the other, certain it is that it was maintained by this Family, and remained for Ages after to their Descendants, both of the Line of *Gournay*, *Delamore*, and *Perceval*.

How long after this the said *Robert de Gournay* lived, is not exactly known, but he left a Son, his Heir.

### ISSUE of *ROBERT DE GOURNAY*, Lord of *Overwere*, and of *Margaret* his Wife.

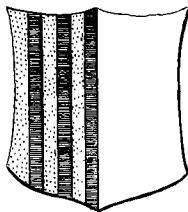
\* *ANSELM DE GOURNAY*, the second of that Name, Lord of *Overwere*; of whom in the next Chapter.

---

\* Fin. Mich. 8 Edw. II. Glouc.

C H A P. XV.

ANSELM DE GOURNAY *le Pere*,  
*the second of that Name, Lord of O-*  
*verwere.*



ANSELM DE GOURNAY\*, the second of that Name †, Son of *Robert de Gournay*, Lord of *Overwere*, and of *Margaret* his Wife, was, in the seventh of *Edward* the Second §, limited one Messuage, one Plough-land, and a Rent of two Shillings in *Kyng's-Weston*, to *William de Edybam* or *Odibam*, for Life, with Remainder to himself, and to his Heirs in Fee.

AND again, in the next Year the said *Anselm* the Son of *Robert de Gournay*, defended his Right to four Messuages and a Shop in the Suburbs of *Bristol*, without the *Newgate*, against *John de la Robe* and *Alice* his Wife ;

---

\* Fin. 8 Edw. II. Glouc. ut supra.

† From the Book of the Abbey of *Glastonbury*, in the Hands of the Viscount *Weymouth*, at *Longlete*.

§ Fin. Glouc. Pasch. Edw. II.

Wife ; which Premiffes are limited by the fame Finé to the faid *John* and *Alice*, and to the Heirs which *John* fhould beget upon the Body of *Alice*, with Remainder to the Heirs of *John* in Fee.

|| IN the eleventh of the fame Reign, in *Hillary* Term, this *Anfelm*, and *Chriftina* his Wife, then poffeffed of the Manor of *Overwere*, entered into certain Covenants with *John de Ricbe* of *Wedmore*, concerning the faid Manor.

§ IN the twenty-fifth of *Edward* the Third, this *Anfelm de Gournay*, by the Name of *Anfelm de Gournay le Pere*, was Witnefs to a Deed of *John de Beauchamp* of *Hacche*, confirming a former Deed of *Margaret* his Mother.

ISSUE of *ANSELM DE GOURNAY*,  
and *Chriftina* his Wife.

- I. \* *ANSELM DE GOURNAY*, Lord of *Overwere*, the third of that Name ; of whom in the next Chapter.

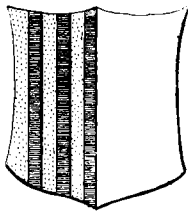
\* Placit. coram Justic. de Banco, Hill. 11 Edw. II. rot. 48. Somf.

§ From the Book of *Glaftonbury* before-mentioned.

|| Ibid.

CHAP. XVI.

ANSELM DE GOURNAY *le Fils*,  
*the third of that Name, Lord of O-*  
*verwere.*



ANSELM DE GOURNAY †, the third of that Name, succeeded *Anselm* the second, his Father, sometime after the twenty-fifth of *Edward* the Third.

\* WHICH *Anselm de Gournay*, Lord of *Overwere* in the twenty-second of *Edward* the Third, obtained a Release from *Richard de Hampton*, Lord of *Netherbaggeworth*, for him and his Heirs for ever, in the County of *Somerset*, of all that Right of Claim which he pretended to have in certain Lands within the said

---

† From the Book of Glastonbury before-mentioned.

\* From a Title-Deed in the Possession of John Strachey, of Sutton-Court, in the County of Somerset, Esquire, in Febr. 1738-9.

said Manor of *Overwere*, called *Somerford* and *Cottus*, which Deed was perfected and signed at *Netherwere*, upon *Tuesday* next before the Feast of the Apostles *St. Philip* and *Jacob*, in the Year above-mentioned.

\* THREE Years after, in the twenty-fifth of that Reign, the said *Anselm*, together with *Joan* his Wife, conveyed from themselves and their Heirs for ever, one Messuage, one Plough-land, and eighty Acres of Meadow, in *King's-Weston*, to *Henry Attemoke*, and *Elizabeth* his Wife, and to the Heirs of *Henry*, in Fee.

† AFTER this, the thirty-second of *Edward* the Third, *Isabel*, the Wife of *Thomas Attē-Hulle*, recovered in an Affize, a Messuage, and certain Lands and Meadows in *Overwere*, against this *Anselm*, and *Robert* his Son, which *Robert*, died without Issue not long after.

#### CHILDREN of *ANSELM DE GOURNAY*, the third of that Name.

I. § *THOMAS DE GOURNAY*; of whom in the next Chapter,

II. || *ROBERT*, who is mentioned above.

\* Fin. Somf. Trin. A<sup>o</sup> 25 Edw. III. Glouc.

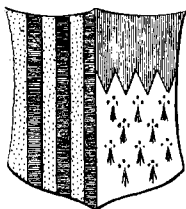
† Placit. coram Rege, Pasch. 32 Edw. III. rot. 55. dorso, Somf.

§ Miscellan. B. 2. in Officio Armor.

|| Placit. ut supra.

CHAP. XVII.

THOMAS DE GOURNAY,  
*Lord of Overwere, the last Male of  
the House of Gournay.*



**A**NSELM\*, the third of that Name, being dead in the forty-fifth of *Edward*, § *Thomas de Gournay* was then found to be his Son and Heir, and Lord of *Overwere*; at which Time he signed as a Witness to a Deed between *William Proute* and *Richard Chamberton*, concerning Lands in that Parish, upon the *Sunday* after the Feast of the Apostles *St. Peter* and *Paul*.

Y y y 2

WHICH

---

\* Ex Autograph. penes Johannem Strachey, de Sutton Court in Com. Somersf.

§ Miscellan. B. 2. in Officio Armor.

## 532 *A Genealogical History*

WHICH *Thomas de Gournay*, Lord of *Overwere*, upon the twelfth of *February*, in the sixth Year of King *Richard* the Second \*, obtained a Release of certain Debts due by him the said *Thomas* to *Thomas Daniel*, of *Bristol*.

Not long after, viz. in the tenth of *Richard* the Second, in Conjunction with *Alianore*, his second Wife, by his Deed dated at *Overwere*, upon the *Friday* after the Feast of *St. Michael* the Archangel †, by the Stile of *Thomas de Gournay*, Lord of *Overwere*, and in Prefence of *George Bythemore* (his Son-in-law) and others, confirmed to *William Proute*, and *Julian* his Wife, for their Lives, certain Lands in his Lordship of *Overwere*, adjoining to a Place called *Westkotreve*, and to the North of the Estate of the said *George Bythemore*,

§ BUT he did not long survive; for in the fourteenth of the same Reign he was then dead, and *Alianore* his Widow, who had the Manor of *Overwere*, alias *Upwere*, for her Jointure, was at that Time become the Wife of *Richard Power*; but by that Lady it does not appear that he had any Issue.

|| His first Wife was *Elizabeth*, the Daughter and sole Heir of *Richard de Counteville*, or *Caumbville*, a Branch of that Noble Family who were anciently Barons of great Eminence in this Kingdom. The Defcent of that Lady having been treated of at large in it the third Chapter of the Sixth Book of this Work, is here sufficient to say, that she brought with her, together with the Rights of her Family, the Manors of *Alwarton* and *Battilburgh*, and other great Estates, in the County of *Somerset*, which descended to her only Daughter, *Joan de Gournay*, who became thus sole Heiress both to her Mother and to her Father.

WHICH

\* Ex Autograph. penes Johannem Strachey, de Sutton-Court, in Com Somers.

† Penes eundem.

§ Pl. Somf. A<sup>o</sup> 14 Ric II.

|| Placit. coram Juriic. de Banco. Term. Mich. A<sup>o</sup> 3 Hen. VII. tit. 123.

\* WHICH *Joan de Gournay*, who was the last either Male or Female of this Family, carried a great Estate, as well as the sole Rights of that Most Ancient, Noble, and Opulent House, by her Marriage with *George De la More*, or *Bythemore*, into that Family, (of whose Descent we have already treated at large, in the third Chapter of the Sixth Book) from whence again, by the sole Heirefs of that House, that Estate of Honour and Blood was at length transferred to *David Perceval*, Ancestor to *John Lord Perceval*, Earl of *Egmont* now the sole Representative of the House of *Gournay*.

---

\* See the Descent of the House of Delamore, or Bythemore, Book VI. Chap. III.

---

---

*Prudens futuri temporis Exitum  
Caliginosâ Noctè premit Deus.*

HOR. Lib. 3. Ode 29.

---

---

*The END of the SEVENTH BOOK, and of  
the SECOND VOLUME.*

















